



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

HB WIDENER



HJ AFXX 8

Econ 6021.1.5

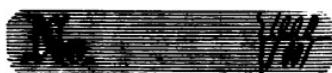
A CATALOGUE OF  
BOHN'S VARIOUS LIBRARIES.  
PUBLISHED BY  
BELL AND DALDY,  
6, YORK STREET, COVENT GARDEN,  
AND 186, FLEET STREET.

I.

Bohn's Standard Library.

*Q5*  
Lawrence Scientific School.

ENGINEERING DEPARTMENT.



Naples under Spanish Dominion. Translated from the German of Alfred de

Chapel. Edited by J. D. TYLDELL. In  
2 vols.

Critical Essays. Edited by

C  
C  
C  
C  
C  
C

TRANSFERRED  
TO  
HARVARD COLLEGE  
LIBRARY

Cha-  
Po-

Re-  
JOHN  
pers,  
early

In-  
Pre-  
arks.

VOL. 8. Homer's Odyssey. Plates. WITH MEMOIR. PORTRAIT.

2

## BOHN'S VARIOUS LIBRARIES.

- Goethe's Works**, translated into English. In 5 vols.  
Vols. 1. and 2. *Autobiography*, 13 Books; and Travels in Italy, France, and Switzerland. *Portrait*.  
Vol. 3. *Faust*, *Iphigenia*, *Torquato Tasso*, *Egmont*, &c., by Miss SWANWICK; and *Götz von Berlichingen*, by Sir WALTER SCOTT. *Frontispiece*.  
Vol. 4. Novels and Tales.  
Vol. 5. *Wilhelm Meister's Apprenticeship*.
- Gregory's (Dr.) Evidences, Doctrines, and Duties of the Christian Religion**.
- Guizot's Representative Government**. Translated by A. R. SCOBLE.  
— *History of the English Revolution of 1640*. Translated by WILLIAM HAZLITT. *Portrait*.  
— *History of Civilization*. Translated by WILLIAM HAZLITT. In 3 vols. *Portrait*.
- Hall's (Rev. Robert) Miscellaneous Works and Remains**, with Memoir by Dr. GREGORY, and an Essay on his Character by JOHN FOSTER. *Portrait*.
- Heine's Poems**, complete, from the German, by E. A. BOWRING. New edition, enlarged. 5s.
- Hungary: its History and Revolutions**; with a Memoir of Kossuth from new and authentic sources. *Portrait*.
- Hutchinson (Colonel), Memoirs of, and an Account of the Siege of Lathom House**. *Portrait*.
- James's (G. P. R.) Richard Coeur-de-Lion, King of England**. *Portraits*. In 2 vols.
- **Louis XIV.** *Portraits*. In 2 vols.
- Junius's Letters**, with Notes, Additions, and an Index. In 2 vols.
- Lamartine's History of the Girondists**. *Portraits*. In 3 vols.
- *Restoration of the Monarchy*, with Index. *Portraits*. In 4 vols.
- *French Revolution of 1848*, with fine *Frontispiece*.
- Lanzi's History of Painting**. Translated by ROSCOE. *Portraits*. In 3 vols.
- Locke's Philosophical Works**, containing an Essay on the Human Understanding, &c., with Notes and Index by J. A. ST. JOHN. *Portrait*. In 2 vols.
- *Life and Letters*, with Extracts from his Common-Place Books, by Lord KING.
- Luther's Table Talk**. Translated by WILLIAM HAZLITT. *Portrait*.
- Machiavelli's History of Florence, The Prince, and other Works**. *Portrait*.
- Menzel's History of Germany**. *Portraits*. In 3 vols.
- Michelet's Life of Luther**. Translated by WILLIAM HAZLITT.
- *Roman Republic*. Translated by WILLIAM HAZLITT.
- *French Revolution*, with Index. *Frontispiece*.
- Mignet's French Revolution from 1789 to 1814**. *Portrait*.
- Milton's Prose Works**, with Index. *Portraits*. In 5 vols.
- Mitford's (Miss) Our Village**. Improved Ed., complete. *Illustrated*. 2 vols.
- Neander's Church History**. Translated: with General Index. In 10 vols.
- *Life of Christ*. Translated.
- *First Planting of Christianity, and Antignostikus*. Translated. In 2 vols.
- *History of Christian Dogmas*. Translated. In 2 vols.
- *Christian Life in the Early and Middle Ages*, including his 'Light in Dark Places.' Translated.
- Ockley's History of the Saracens**. Revised and completed. *Portrait*.
- Pearson on the Creed**. New Edition. With Analysis and Notes. [Shortly.]
- Ranké's History of the Popes**. Translated by E. FOSTER. In 3 vols.
- *Servia and the Servian Revolution*.
- Reynolds' (Sir Joshua) Literary Works**. *Portrait*. In 2 vols.
- Roscoe's Life and Pontificate of Leo X.** with the Copyright Notes, and an Index. *Portraits*. In 2 vols.
- *Life of Lorenzo de Medici*, with the Copyright Notes, &c. *Portrait*.
- Russia, History of**, by WALTER K. KELLY. *Portraits*. In 3 vols.
- Schiller's Works**. Translated into English. In 4 vols.
- Vol. 1. *Thirty Years' War, and Revolt of the Netherlands*.
- Vol. 2. *Continuation of the Revolt of the Netherlands; Wallenstein's Camp; the Piccolomini; the Death of Wallenstein; and William Tell*.
- Vol. 3. *Don Carlos, Mary Stuart, Maid of Orleans, and Bride of Messina*.
- Vol. 4. *The Robbers, Fiesco, Love and Intrigue, and the Ghost-Seer*.

## A CATALOGUE OF

Schlegel's Philosophy of Life and of Language, translated by A. J. W. MORRISON.

— History of Literature, Ancient and Modern. Now first completely translated, with General Index.

— Philosophy of History. Translated by J. B. ROBERTSON. *Portrait.*

— Dramatic Literature. Translated. *Portrait.*

— Modern History.

— Ästhetic and Miscellaneous Works.

Sheridan's Dramatic Works and Life. *Portrait.*

Sismondi's Literature of the South of Europe. Translated by Roscoe. *Portraits.* In 2 vols.

Smith's (Adam) Theory of the Moral Sentiments; with his Essay on the First Formation of Languages.

Smyth's (Professor) Lectures on Modern History. In 2 vols.

— Lectures on the French Revolution. In 2 vols.

Sturm's Morning Communings with God, or Devotional Meditations for Every Day in the Year.

Taylor's (Bishop Jeremy) Holy Living and Dying. *Portrait.*

Thierry's Conquest of England by the Normans. Translated by WILLIAM HAZLITT. *Portrait.* In 2 vols.

Thierry's Tiers Etat, or Third Estate, in France. Translated by F. B. WELLS. 2 vols. in one. 5s.

Vasari's Lives of the Painters, Sculptors, and Architects. Translated by Mrs. Foerster. 5 vols.

Wealey's (John) Life. By ROBERT SOUTHHEY. New and Complete Edition. Double volume. 5s.

Wheatley on the Book of Common Prayer. *Frontispiece.*

## II.

### Uniform with Bohn's Standard Library.

Bailey's (P. J.) Festus. A Poem. Seventh Edition, revised and enlarged. 5s.

British Poets, from Milton to Kirke WHITE. Cabinet Edition. In 4 vols. 14s.

Cary's Translation of Dante's Heaven, Hell, and Purgatory. 7s. 6d.

Chillingworth's Religion of Protestants. 3s. 6d.

Classic Tales. Comprising in One volume the most esteemed works of the imagination. 3s. 6d.

Demosthenes and Äschines, the Orations of. Translated by LELAND. 3s.

Dickson and Mowbray on Poultry. Edited by Mrs. LOUDON. *Illustrations by Harvey.* 5s.

Henry's (Matthew) Commentary on the Psalms. Numerous Illustrations. 4s. 6d.

Hofland's British Angler's Manual. Improved and enlarged, by EDWARD JESSE, Esq. Illustrated with 60 Engravings. 7s. 6d.

Horace's Odes and Epodes. Translated by the Rev. W. SEWELL. 3s. 6d.

Irving's (Washington) Complete Works. In 10 vols. 3s. 6d. each.

Vol. 1. Salmagundi and Knickerbocker. *Portrait of the Author.*

Vol. 2. Sketch Book and Life of Goldsmith.

Vol. 3. Bracebridge Hall and Abbotsford and Newstead.

Vol. 4. Tales of a Traveller and the Alhambra.

Vol. 5. Conquest of Granada and Conquest of Spain.

Vols. 6 and 7. Life of Columbus and Companions of Columbus, with a new Index. *Fine Portrait.*

Vol. 8. Astoria and Tour in the Prairies.

Vol. 9. Mahomet and his Successors.

Vol. 10. Conquest of Florida and Adventures of Captain Bonneville.

— (Washington) Life of Washington. *Portrait.* In 4 vols. 3s. 6d. each.

— (Washington) Life and Letters. By his Nephew, PIERRE E. IRVING. In 2 vols. 3s. 6d. each.

For separate Works, see Cheap Series, p. 15.

Joyce's Introduction to the Arts and Sciences. With Examination Questions. 3s. 6d.

## BOHN'S VARIOUS LIBRARIES.

**Lawrence's Lectures on Comparative Anatomy, Physiology, Zoology, and the Natural History of Man.** Illustrated 5s.

**Lilly's Introduction to Astrology.** With numerous Emendations, by ZADKIEL. 5s.

**Miller's (Professor) History, Philosophically considered.** In 4 vols. 3s. 6d. each.

**Parkes's Elementary Chemistry.** 3s. 6d.

**Political (The) Cyclopaedia.** In 4 vols. 3s. 6d. each.

**Political (The) Cyclopaedia.** Also bound in 2 vols. with leather backs. 15s.

**Shakespeare's Works,** with Life, by CHALMERS. In diamond type. 3s. 6d. — or, with 40 Engravings. 5s.

**Uncle Tom's Cabin.** With Introductory Remarks, by the Rev. J. SHERMAN. Printed in a large clear type. Illustrations. 3s. 6d.

**Wide, Wide World.** By ELIZABETH WETHERALL. Illustrated with 10 highly-finished Steel Engravings. 3s. 6d.

### III.

## Bohn's Historical Library.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY, AT 5s. PER VOLUME.

**Evelyn's Diary and Correspondence.** Illustrated with numerous Portraits, &c. In 4 vols.

**Pepys' Diary and Correspondence.** Edited by Lord Braybrooke. With important Additions, including numerous Letters. Illustrated with many Portraits. In 4 vols.

**Jesse's Memoirs of the Reign of the Stuarts,** including the Protectorate. With General Index. Upwards of 40 Portraits. In 3 vols.

**Jesse's Memoirs of the Pretenders and their Adherents.** 6 Portraits.

**Nugent's (Lord) Memorials of Hampden, his Party, and Times.** 12 Portraits.

**Strickland's (Agnes) Lives of the Queens of England,** from the Norman Conquest. From official records and authentic documents, private and public. Revised Edition. In 6 vols.

[Now complete.

### IV.

## Bohn's Library of French Memoirs.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY, AT 3s. 6d. PER VOLUME.

**Memoirs of Philip de Commines,** containing the Histories of Louis XI. and Charles VIII., and of Charles the Bold, Duke of Burgundy. To which is added, The Scandalous Chronicle, or Secret

History of Louis XI. Portraits. In 2 vols.

**Memoirs of the Duke of Sully,** Prime Minister to Henry the Great. Portraits In 4 vols.

### V.

## Bohn's School and College Series.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY.

**Bass's Complete Greek and English Lexicon to the New Testament.** 2s. 6d.

**New Testament (The) in Greek.** Griesbach's Text, with the various readings of Mill and Scholi at foot of page, and

Parallel References in the margin; also a Critical Introduction and Chronological Tables. Two fac-similes of Great Manuscripts. (850 pages.) 3s. 6d.; or with the Lexicon. 5s.

## A CATALOGUE OF

### VI.

#### Bohn's Philological and Philosophical Library.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY, AT 5s. PER VOLUME  
(EXCEPTING THOSE MARKED OTHERWISE).

Hegel's Lectures on the Philosophy of History. Translated by J. SUBREE, M.A.

Herodotus, Turner's (Dawson W.) Notes to. With Map, &c.

— Wheeler's Analysis and Summary of.

Kant's Critique of Pure Reason. Translated by J. M. D. MEIKLEJOHN.

Logic; or, the Science of Inference. A Popular Manual. By J. DEVEY.

Lowndes' Bibliographer's Manual of English Literature. New Edition, enlarged, by H. G. BOHN. Parts I. to X. (A to Z). 3s. 6d. each. Part XI. (the Ap-

pendix Volume). 5s. Or the 11 parts in 4 vols., half morocco, 2l. 2s.

Smith's (Archdeacon) Complete Collection of Synonyms and Antonyms.

[In the Press.

Tennemann's Manual of the History of Philosophy. Continued by J. R. MORELL.

Thucydides, Wheeler's Analysis of.

Wheeler's (M.A.) W. A., Dictionary of Names of Fictitious Persons and Places.

[Just published.

Wright's (T.) Dictionary of Obsolete and Provincial English. In 2 vols. 5s. each.; or half-bound in 1 vol., 10s. 6d.

### VII.

#### Bohn's British Classics.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY, AT 3s. 6d. PER VOLUME.

Addison's Works. With the Notes of Bishop HURD, much additional matter, and upwards of 100 Unpublished Letters. Edited by H. G. BOHN. *Portrait and 8 Engravings on Steel.* In 6 vols.

Burke's Works. In 6 Volumes.

Vol. 1. Vindication of Natural Society, On the Sublime and Beautiful, and Political Miscellanies.

Vol. 2. French Revolution, &c.

Vol. 3. Appeal from the New to the Old Whigs; the Catholic Claims, &c.

Vol. 4. On the Affairs of India, and Charge against Warren Hastings.

Vol. 5. Conclusion of Charge against Hastings; on a Regicide Peace, &c.

Vol. 6. Miscellaneous Speeches, &c. With a General Index.

Burke's Speeches on Warren Hastings; and Letters. With Index. In 2 vols. (forming vols. 7 and 8 of the works).

— Life. By PRIOR. New and revised Edition. *Portrait.*

Defoe's Works. Edited by Sir WALTER SCOTT. In 7 vols.

Gibbon's Roman Empire. Complete and Unabridged, with Notes; including, in addition to the Author's own, those of Guizot, Wenck, Niebuhr, Hugo, Neander, and other foreign scholars; and an elaborate Index. Edited by an English Churchman. In 7 vols.

### VIII.

#### Bohn's Ecclesiastical Library.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY, AT 5s. PER VOLUME.

Eusebius' Ecclesiastical History. With Notes.

Philo Judaeus, Works of; the contemporary of Josephus. Translated by C. D. Yonge. In 4 vols.

Socrates' Ecclesiastical History, in continuation of Eusebius. With the Notes of Valesius.

Sozomen's Ecclesiastical History, from A.D. 324-440: and the Ecclesiastical History of Philostorgius.

Theodore and Evagrius. Ecclesiastical Histories, from A.D. 332 to A.D. 427; and from A.D. 431 to A.D. 544.

IX.

Bohn's Antiquarian Library.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY, AT 5s. PER VOLUME.

Bede's Ecclesiastical History, and Anglo-Saxon Chronicle.

Boethius's Consolation of Philosophy. In Anglo-Saxon, with the A. S. Metres, and an English Translation, by the Rev. S. FOX.

Brand's Popular Antiquities of England, Scotland, and Ireland. By Sir HENRY ELLIS. In 3 vols.

Browne's (Sir Thomas) Works. Edited by SIMON WILKIN. In 3 vols.

Vol. 1. The Vulgar Errors.

Vol. 2. Religio Medici, and Garden of Cyrus.

Vol. 3. Urn-Burial, Tracts, and Correspondence.

Chronicles of the Crusaders. Richard of Devizes, Geoffrey de Vinsauf, Lord de Joinville.

Chronicles of the Tombs. A Collection of Remarkable Epitaphs. By T. J. PETTIGREW, F.R.S., F.S.A.

Early Travels in Palestine. Willibald, Sawulf, Benjamin of Tudela, Mandeville, La Broquiere, and Maundrell; all unabridged. Edited by THOMAS WRIGHT.

Ellis's Early English Metrical Romances. Revised by J. O. HALLIWELL.

Florence of Worcester's Chronicle, with the Two Continuations: comprising Annals of English History to the Reign of Edward I.

Giraldus Cambrensis' Historical Works: Topography of Ireland; History of the Conquest of Ireland; Itinerary through Wales; and Description of Wales. With Index. Edited by THOS. WRIGHT.

Handbook of Proverbs. Comprising all Ray's English Proverbs, with additions; his Foreign Proverbs; and an Alphabetical Index.

Henry of Huntingdon's History of the English, from the Roman Invasion to Henry II.; with the Acts of King Stephen, &c.

Ingulph's Chronicle of the Abbey of Croyland, with the Continuations by Peter of Blois and other Writers. By H. T. RILEY.

Keightley's Fairy Mythology. Frontispiece by CRUICKSHANK.

Lamb's Dramatic Poets of the Time of Elizabeth: including his Selections from the Garrick Plays.

Lepsius's Letters from Egypt, Ethiopia, and the Peninsula of Sinai.

Mallet's Northern Antiquities. By Bishop MALLETT. With an Abstract of the Eyrbigga Saga, by Sir WALTER SCOTT. Edited by J. A. BLACKWELL.

Marco Polo's Travels. The Translation of Marsden. Edited by THOMAS WRIGHT.

Matthew Paris's Chronicle. In 5 vols.

FIRST SECTION: Roger of Wendover's Flowers of English History, from the Descent of the Saxons to A.D. 1235. Translated by Dr. GILES. In 2 vols.

SECOND SECTION: From 1235 to 1273. With Index to the entire Work. In 3 vols.

Matthew of Westminster's Flowers of History, especially such as relate to the affairs of Britain; to A.D. 1307. Translated by C. D. YONGE. In 2 vols.

Ordericus Vitalis' Ecclesiastical History of England and Normandy. Translated with Notes, by T. FORESTER, M.A. In 4 vols.

Pauli's (Dr. R.) Life of Alfred the Great. Translated from the German.

Polyglot of Foreign Proverbs. With English Translations, and a General Index, bringing the whole into parallels, by H. G. BOHN.

Roger De Hoveden's Annals of English History; from A.D. 732 to A.D. 1201. Edited by H. T. RILEY. In 2 vols.

Six Old English Chronicles, viz.:—Ascer's Life of Alfred, and the Chronicles of Ethelwerd, Gildas, Nennius, Geoffrey of Monmouth, and Richard of Cirencester.

William of Malmesbury's Chronicle of the Kings of England. Translated by SHARPE.

Yule-Tide Stories. A Collection of Scandinavian Tales and Traditions. Edited by B. THORPE.

Bohn's Illustrated Library.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY, AT 5s. PER VOLUME  
(EXCEPTING THOSE MARKED OTHERWISE).

**Allen's Battles of the British Navy.** Revised and enlarged. Numerous fine Portraits. In 2 vols.

**Andersen's Danish Legends and Fairy Tales.** With many Tales not in any other edition. Translated by CAROLINE PEACHEY. 120 Wood Engravings.

**Ariosto's Orlando Furioso.** In English Verse. By W. S. ROSE. Twelve fine Engravings. In 2 vols.

**Bechstein's Cage and Chamber Birds.** Including Sweet's Warblers. Enlarged edition. Numerous plates.

\*\* All other editions are abridged.  
With the plates coloured. 7s. 6d.

**Bonomi's Nineveh and its Palaces.** New Edition, revised and considerably enlarged, both in matter and Plates, including a Full Account of the Assyrian Sculptures recently added to the National Collection. Upwards of 300 Engravings.

**Butler's Hudibras.** With Variorum Notes, a Biography, and a General Index. Edited by HENRY G. BOHN. Thirty beautiful Illustrations.

— ; or, further illustrated with 62 Outline Portraits. In 2 vols. 10s.

**Cattermole's Evenings at Haddon Hall.** 24 exquisite Engravings on Steel, from designs by himself, the Letterpress by the BARONESS DE CARABELLA.

**China, Pictorial, Descriptive, and Historical,** with some Account of Ava and the Burmese, Siam, and Anam. Nearly 100 Illustrations.

**Craik's (G. L.) Pursuit of Knowledge under Difficulties,** illustrated by Anecdotes and Memoirs. Revised Edition. With numerous Portraits.

[Just Published.]

**Cruikshank's Three Courses and a Dessert.** A Series of Tales, with 50 humorous Illustrations by Cruikshank.

**Dante.** Translated by I. C. WRIGHT, M.A. New Edition, carefully revised. Portrait and 34 Illustrations on Steel, after Flaxman.

**Didron's History of Christian Art;** or, Christian Iconography. From the French. Upwards of 150 beautiful outline Engravings. Vol. I. (Mons. Didron has not yet written the second volume.)

8

**Flaxman's Lectures on Sculpture.** Numerous Illustrations. 6s. [Now ready.]

**Gil Blas, The Adventures of.** 24 Engravings on Steel, after Smirke, and 10 Etchings by George Cruikshank. (612 pages.) 6s.

**Grimm's Gammer Grethel; or, German Fairy Tales and Popular Stories** Translated by EDGAR TAYLOR. Numerous Woodcuts by Cruikshank. 3s. 6d.

**Holbein's Dance of Death, and Bible Cuts.** Upwards of 150 subjects, beautifully engraved in fac-simile, with Introduction and Descriptions by the late FRANCIS DOUCIE and Dr. T. F. DIBDIN. 2 vols. in 1. 7s. 6d.

**Howitt's (Mary) Pictorial Calendar of the Seasons.** Embodying the whole of Aiken's Calendar of Nature. Upwards of 100 Engravings.

— (Mary and William) Stories of English and Foreign Life. Twenty beautiful Engravings.

**Hunt's (Leigh) Book for a Corner.** Eighty extremely beautiful Engravings.

**India, Pictorial, Descriptive, and Historical,** from the Earliest Times to the Present. Upwards of 100 fine Engravings on Wood, and a Map.

**Jesse's Anecdotes of Dogs.** New Edition, with large additions. Numerous fine Woodcuts after Harvey, Bewick, and others.

— ; or, with the addition of 34 highly-finished Steel Engravings after Cooper, Landseer, &c. 1s. 6d.

**Kitto's Scripture Lands and Biblical Atlas.** 24 Maps, beautifully engraved on Steel, with a Consulting Index.

— ; or, with the maps coloured, 7s. 6d.

**Krummacher's Parables.** Translated from the German. Forty Illustrations by Clayton, engraved by Dalziel.

**Lindsay's (Lord) Letters on Egypt, Edom, and the Holy Land.** New Edition, enlarged. Thirty-six beautiful Engravings, and 2 Maps.

**Lodge's Portraits of Illustrious Personages of Great Britain, with Memoirs.** Two Hundred and Forty Portraits, beautifully engraved on Steel. 8 vols.

**KNOWLEDGE IS POWER.**



# KNOWLEDGE IS POWER.

BY CHARLES KNIGHT.

"The empire of man over material things has for its only foundation  
the sciences and the arts."—BACON.

*A NEW EDITION*

CORRECTED, ENLARGED, AND ADAPTED BY THE AUTHOR FOR  
ELEMENTARY INSTRUCTION.

LONDON :  
BELL AND DALDY, 186, FLEET STREET,  
AND 6, YORK STREET, COVENT GARDEN.  
1866.

Econ 6021.1.5  
✓



Transferred from  
Engineering library

G

LONDON : PRINTED BY WILLIAM CLOWES AND SONS, STAMFORD STREET  
AND CHARING CROSS.

TO

NIEL ARNOTT, ESQ., M.D.,

WITH SINCERE ADMIRATION OF THE DISINTERESTED SPIRIT IN  
WHICH HE HAS DEVOTED HIS SCIENTIFIC KNOWLEDGE TO THE  
PUBLIC GOOD; AND IN GRATEFUL ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF HIS  
NEVER-FAILING KINDNESS DURING A LONG FRIENDSHIP,

THIS VOLUME

IS AFFECTIONATELY INSCRIBED.



## PREFACE.

---

THERE is an extremely clever little book by a French writer, M. Bastiat, of which there is a translation by Dr. Hodgson, entitled, ‘What is Seen, and What is Not Seen ; or, Political Economy in One Lesson.’ The meaning of this title is, that the phenomena, the appearances, of social arrangements are seen, but the causes and consequences are not seen. In the last century it was said by another French writer who has scattered abroad sound and foolish opinions with a pretty equal hand, that “it requires a great deal of philosophy to *observe* what is *seen* every day.” (J. J. Rousseau.) To no branch of human knowledge can this remark be more fitly applied than to that which relates to the commonest things of the world—namely, the Wants of Man and the means of supplying them.

It is the almost unlimited extent of the wants of man in the social state, and the consequent multiplicity and complexity of his means—both his wants and means proceeding from the range of his mental faculties—which have rendered it so difficult to observe and explain the laws which govern the production, distribution, and consumption of those articles of utility essential to the subsistence and comfort of the human race, which we call Wealth. It is not more than a century ago that even those who had “a great deal of philosophy” first began to apply themselves to observe “what is seen every day” exercising, in the course of human industry, the greatest influence on the condition and character of individuals and nations. The properties of light were ascertained by Sir Isaac Newton long before men were agreed upon the circumstances which determined the production of a loaf of bread ; and the return of a comet after an interval of seventy-six years was pretty accurately foretold by Dr. Halley, when legislators were in

almost complete ignorance of the principle which regularly brought as many cabbages to Covent Garden as there were purchasers to demand them.

Many of the false and sometimes mischievous opinions which are entertained, not only by those we call working men, but by some of the more educated classes, might be first neutralized and then eradicated by the dedication of their minds to a few of the most elementary lessons of Political Economy. To those who decline to investigate the principles of this science, the mere phenomena of society are apparent—the things seen. The causes and results—the things not seen—are dark and doubtful. Yet the knowledge, so desirable to be acquired, is really not abstruse or difficult. It is to be attained by the young and the adult, through an exercise of the reasoning power which very quickly leads to a conviction that the learner is treading on firm ground. We would invite those who doubt this to follow us in spirit to a day-school, where five hundred children are taught useful things at a charge of sixpence a week each,—a school that prospers, because self-supporting,—where economical science is expounded from the lips of very young disciples, who are working out their knowledge of great truths by the simplest of inductive processes. In that school “political economy” is intelligently taught—not “brought down to the capacity of a child” by evasions or dilutions of the truths which the philosophical student receives as axioms; but by leading “the capacity of a child” to recognise, step by step, and to expound himself as he goes on, the whole “phenomena of industrial life,” and the “conditions of industrial success.” \*

In the South-Eastern District of the metropolis is the largest of many schools, known as the “Birkbeck” Schools. These Birkbeck Schools have, with the exception of that of the London Mechanics’ Institute, been established at the expense of Mr. William Ellis. Some six years ago the writer of ‘Knowledge is Power’ visited the Peckham School, and took notes of the mode of instruction pursued in the Political Economy Class. The lesson of about an

\* The admirable little book by Mr. William Ellis, edited by the Dean of Hereford, is entitled ‘Lessons on the Phenomena of Industrial Life and the Conditions of Industrial Success.’

hour, conducted by a most intelligent teacher, was gone through without any previous knowledge having been acquired by the scholars from books. We have reserved for a future chapter "On the Necessity for Elementary Instruction on Political Economy," the questions and answers which we took down on that occasion, giving each as literally as possible. One of the circumstances with which we were most forcibly impressed in our visit to the Birkbeck School was this:—The children, many under ten years of age, were as deeply interested in the subject of their lesson as if they had been questioned about the incidents and characters of one of the most romantic stories of history or fiction. It was the *reality* of the topics that came home to their understandings.

Matters affecting the interests of every human being, and involving a variety of facts having relation to the condition of mankind in every age and country, are not necessarily, as has been supposed, dry and difficult to understand, and consequently only to be approached by systematic students. In this belief it is proposed in this volume to exhibit the natural operation of the principles by which Industry, as well as every other exchangeable property, must be governed. The writer has to apply all the universal laws which regulate the exchanges of mankind to the direction of that exchange which the great bulk of the people are most interested in carrying forward rapidly, certainly, and uninterruptedly—the exchange of Labour for Capital. But he has also to regard those laws with especial reference to that mighty Power which has become so absorbing and controlling in our own day—the Power of Science applied to the Arts, or, in other words, Knowledge. It is not too much to assert that, henceforth, Labour must take its absolute direction from that Power. It is now the great instrument of Capital. In time it will be understood universally to be the best partner of Labour.

The present volume is founded upon two little works which the author wrote more than thirty years ago, and which were widely circulated. One of these books, 'The Results of Machinery,' was published, in connection with the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge, at a period of great national alarm, when a blind rage against a

power supposed to interfere with the claims of labour was generally prevalent, and led, in the southern agricultural districts especially, to many acts of daring violence. Happily, that spirit is passed away. The spirit of knowledge has arisen. In remodelling that portion of the present volume it is unnecessary so fully to deprecate the evils of hostility to machinery; but rather to look forward to its more complete union with skilled labour as the triumph of the productive forces of modern society. In the other little book upon which this volume is founded, ‘Capital and Labour,’ the general subject of the *Production* of wealth was popularly treated, and forms the subject of Part I. of this volume. The argument is here carried forward into many details of the various industrial arts, forming Part II. In the present work the general relations of Capital and Labour in the *Distribution* of wealth are briefly treated in Part III. As the mistakes about Production have yielded, in a great degree, to improved education, so may those which belong to Distribution also yield to the progress of Knowledge. These are not mistakes which are confined to one class, and that the most numerous.

The little books upon which this enlarged work was based were addressed to “Working Men.” In this revised edition of the more complete book, the writer has endeavoured to adapt it for the information of all ranks.

Without attempting to give this volume the formal shape of a treatise on Political Economy, it is the wish of the author to convey the broad parts of his subject in a somewhat desultory manner, but one which is not altogether devoid of logical arrangement. He desires especially to be understood by *the young*; for upon their right appreciation of the principles which govern society will depend much of the security and happiness of our own and the coming time.

To each chapter of this edition is appended a sort of summary in the form of questions. If this book should be used in Public Elementary Education these interrogatories may be put by the teacher. If used at home they may not be without their value to the student.

## CONTENTS.

---

### PART I.

#### CAPITAL AND LABOUR NECESSARY FOR PRODUCTION.

---

##### CHAPTER I.

Feeble resources of civilized man in a desert—Ross Cox, Peter the Wild Boy, and the Savage of Aveyron—A Moskito Indian on Juan Fernandez—Conditions necessary for the production of utility . . . .	PAGE 1
---	-----------

##### CHAPTER II.

Society a system of exchanges — Security of individual property the principle of exchange—Alexander Selkirk and Robinson Crusoe—Imperfect appropriation and unprofitable labour . . . . .	10
---	----

##### CHAPTER III.

Adventures of John Tanner—Habits of the American Indians—Their sufferings from famine, and from the absence among them of the principle of division of labour—Evils of irregular labour—Respect to property—Their present improved condition — Hudson's Bay Indians . . . . .	19
---	----

##### CHAPTER IV.

The Prodigal—Advantages of the poorest man in civilized life over the richest savage—Savings banks, deposits, and interest — Progress of accumulation—Insecurity of capital, its causes and results—Property, its constituents—Accumulation of capital . . . . .	34
--	----

*CHAPTER V.*

	PAGE
Common Interests of Capital and Labour—Labour directed by Accumulation—Capital enhanced by Labour—Balance of rights and duties—Relation of demand and supply—Money exchanges—Intrinsic and representative value of money. . . . .	45

*CHAPTER VI.*

Importance of capital to the profitable employment of labour—Contrast between the prodigal and the prudent man: the Dukes of Buckingham and Bridgewater—Making good for trade—Unprofitable consumption—War against capital in the middle ages—Evils of corporate privileges—Condition of the people under Henry VIII. . . . .	57
---	----

*CHAPTER VII.*

Rights of labour—Effects of slavery on production—Condition of the Anglo-Saxons—Progress of freedom in England—Laws regulating labour—Wages and prices—Poor-law—Law of settlement . . . . .	67
---	----

*CHAPTER VIII.*

Possessions of the different classes in England — Condition of Colchester in 1301—Tools, stock-in-trade, furniture, &c.—Supply of food—Comparative duration of human life—Want of facilities for commerce—Plenty and civilization not productive of effeminacy—Colchester in the present day . . . . .	78
--	----

*CHAPTER IX.*

Certainty the stimulus to industry—Effects of insecurity—Instances of unprofitable labour—Former notions of commerce—National and class prejudices, and their remedy . . . . .	93
--	----

## PART II.

CAPITAL, LABOUR, AND SKILL WORKING TOGETHER FOR  
PRODUCTION.

## CHAPTER X.

	PAGE
Employment of machinery in manufactures and agriculture—Erroneous notions formerly prevalent on this subject—Its advantages to the labourer—Spade husbandry—The <i>principle</i> of machinery—Machines and tools—Change in the condition of England consequent on the introduction of machinery—Modern New Zealanders and ancient Greeks—Hand-mills and water-mills . . . . .	103

## CHAPTER XI.

Present and former condition of the country—Progress of Cultivation —Evil influence of feudalism—State of agriculture in the sixteenth century—Modern improvements—Prices of wheat—Increased breadth of land under cultivation—Average consumption of wheat— Implements of agriculture now in use . . . . .	122
---	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

Production of a knife—Manufacture of Iron—Raising coal—The hot-blast—Iron bridges—Rolling bar-iron—Making steel—Sheffield manufactures—Mining in Great Britain—Numbers engaged in mines and metal manufactures . . . . .	137
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

Conveyance and extended use of coal—Consumption at various periods —Condition of the roads in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries—Advantages of good roads—Want of roads in Australia—Turnpike roads—Canals—Railway of 1680—Railway statistics . . . . .	154
---	-----

*CHAPTER XIV.*

	PAGE
Houses—the Pyramids—Mechanical power—Carpenter's tools— American machinery for building—Bricks—Slate—Household fittings and furniture—Paper hangings—Carpets—Glass—Pottery—Improvements effected through the reduction or repeal of duties on domestic requirements . . . . .	169

*CHAPTER XV.*

Dwellings of the people—Oberlin—The Highlander's candlesticks— Supply of water—London water-works—Street-lights—Sewers— Sanitary improvements . . . . .	190
---	-----

*CHAPTER XVI.*

Early intercourse with foreign nations—Progress of the cotton manufacture—Hand-spinning—Arkwright—Crompton—Power-loom—Cartwright—Especial benefits of machinery in this manufacture—Cotton manufacture . . . . .	205
--	-----

*CHAPTER XVII.*

The woollen manufacture—Divisions of employment—Early history— Prohibitory laws—Alpaca wool-shoddy—Middle-age legislation— Sumptuary laws—The silk manufacture—Ribbon-weaving—The linen manufacture—Cloth-printing—Bleaching . . . . .	223
---	-----

*CHAPTER XVIII.*

Hosiery manufacture—The stocking-frame—The circular hosiery machine—Hats—Gloves—Boots and shoes—Sewing-machine—Straw-plait—Artificial Flowers—Fans—Lace—Bobbin-net machine—Pins— Needles—Buttons—Toys—Lucifer-matches—Envelopes . . . . .	242
--	-----

*CHAPTER XIX.*

Labour-saving contrivances—The nick in types—Tags of laces—Casting shot—Candle-dipping—Tiring a wheel—Globe-making—Domestic aids to labour—Aids to mental labour—Effects of severe bodily labour on health and duration of life . . . . .	260
---	-----

*CHAPTER XX.*

	PAGE
Influences of knowledge in the direction of labour and capital—Astronomy —Chronometer—Mariner's compass—Scientific travellers—New materials of manufactures—India-rubber—Gutta percha—Palm-oil— Geology—Inventions that diminish risk—Science raising up new employments — Electricity—Galvanism — Photography—Mental labourers—Enlightened public sentiment . . . . .	277

*CHAPTER XXI.*

Invention of printing—Effects of that art—A daily newspaper—News-writing of former periods—Changes in the character of newspapers —Steam conveyance—Electric telegraph—Organization of a London newspaper office—The printing machine—Newspapers in Great Britain —The paper machine—Bookbinding—Paper duty . . . . .	301
APPENDIX TO PART II.:—Occupations of the people . . . . .	314

---

**PART III.****CAPITALISTS AND LABOURERS: CO-OPERATION.***CHAPTER XXII.*

Power of skill—Cheap production—Population and production—Partial and temporary evils—Intelligent Labour—Division of labour—General Knowledge—Union of forces . . . . .	327
---	-----

*CHAPTER XXIII.*

Accumulation — Productive and unproductive consumption—Use of capital—Credit—Security of property—Production applied to the satisfaction of common wants—Increase of comforts—Relations of capitalist and labourer . . . . .	344
--	-----

*CHAPTER XXIV.*

Natural law of wages—State-laws regulating wages—Enactments regulating consumption—The labour-fund and the want-fund—Ratio of capital to population—State of industry at the end of the seventeenth century—Rise of manufactures—Wages and prices—Turning over capital . . . . .	PAGE 365
--	-------------

*CHAPTER XXV.*

Necessity for elementary instruction in Political Economy—Skilled labour and trusted labour—Combinations, of every kind, that are opposed to the great principles of political economy are combinations of producers against consumers . . . . .	383
--	-----

*CHAPTER XXVI.*

Competition of unskilled labour—Competition of uncapitalled labour—Itinerant traders—The contrast of organized industry—Factory-labour and garret-labour . . . . .	399
--	-----

*CHAPTER XXVII.*

Law of Partnership—Limited liability—Co-operative principle—The Rochdale pioneers—Moral benefits of co-operative societies—Material benefits of co-operation—Duties of the employed—Duties of employers . . . . .	417
---	-----

# KNOWLEDGE IS POWER.

---

## PART I.

### CAPITAL AND LABOUR NECESSARY FOR PRODUCTION.

---

#### CHAPTER I.

Feeble resources of civilized man in a desert—Ross Cox, Peter the Wild Boy, and the Savage of Aveyron—A Moskito Indian on Juan Fernandez—Conditions necessary for the production of utility.

LET us suppose a man brought up in civilized life, cast upon a desert land—without food, without clothes, without fire, without tools. We see the human being in the very lowest state of helplessness. Most of the knowledge he had acquired would be worse than useless; for it would not be applicable in any way to his new position. Let the land upon which he is thrown produce spontaneous fruits—let it be free from ferocious animals—let the climate be most genial—still the man would be exceedingly powerless and wretched. The first condition of his lot, to enable him to maintain existence at all, would be that he should labour. He must labour to gather the berries from the trees—he must labour to obtain water from the rivulets—he must labour to form a garment of leaves, or of some equally accessible material, to shield his body from the sun—he must labour to render some cave or hollow tree a

secure place of shelter from the dews of night. There would be no intermission of the labour necessary to provide a supply of food from hand to mouth, even in the season when wild fruits were abundant. If this labour, in the most favourable season, were interrupted for a single day, or at most for two or three days, by sickness, he would in all probability perish. But, when the autumn was past, and the wild fruits were gone, he must prolong existence as some savage tribes are reported to do—by raw fish and undressed roots. The labour of procuring these would be infinitely greater than that of climbing trees for fruit. To catch fish without nets, and scratch up roots with naked hands, is indeed painful toil. The helplessness of this man's condition would principally be the effect of one circumstance: he would possess no accumulation of former labour by which his present labour might be profitably directed. *The power of labour would in his case be in its least productive state.* He would partly justify the assertion that man has the feeblest natural means of any animal; because he would be utterly unpossessed of those means which the reason of man has accumulated around every individual in the social state.

We asked the reader to *suppose* a civilized man in the very lowest state in which the power of labour may be exercised, because there is no record of any civilized man being for any length of time in such a state.

Ross Cox, a Hudson's Bay trader, whose adventures were given to the world some twenty years ago, was in this state for a fortnight, and his sufferings may furnish some idea of the greater miseries of a continuance in such a powerless condition. Having fallen asleep in the woods of the northwest of America, which he had been traversing with a large party, he missed the traces of his companions. The weather being very hot he had left nearly all his clothes with his horse when he rambled from his friends. He had nothing to defend himself against the wolves and serpents but a stick; he had nothing of which to make

a bed but long grass and rushes; he had nothing to eat but hips and wild cherries. The man would doubtless have perished unless he had met with some Indians, who knew better how to avail themselves of the spontaneous productions around them. But this is not an instance of the continuance of labour in the lowest state of its power.

The few individuals, also, who have been found exposed in forests, such as Peter the Wild Boy, and the Savage of Aveyron—who were discovered, the one about a century ago, in Germany, the other about forty years since, in France—differed from the civilized man cast naked upon a desert shore in this particular—their wants were of the lowest nature. They were not raised above the desires of the most brutish animals. They supplied those desires after the fashion of brutes. Peter was enticed from the woods by the sight of two apples, which the man who found him displayed. He did not like bread, but he eagerly peeled green sticks and chewed the rind. He had, doubtless, subsisted in this way in the woods. He would not at first wear shoes, and delighted to throw the hat which was given him into the river. He was brought to England, and lived many years with a farmer in Hertfordshire. During the Scotch Rebellion in 1745, he wandered into Norfolk, and having been apprehended as a suspicious character was sent to prison. The gaol was on fire, and Peter was found in a corner enjoying the warmth of the flames without any fear. The Savage of Aveyron, in the same manner, had the lowest desires and the feeblest powers. He could use his hands, for instance, for no other purpose than to seize upon an object; and his sense of touch was so defective, that he could not distinguish a raised surface, such as a carving, from a painting. This circumstance of the low physical and intellectual powers of these unfortunate persons prevents us exhibiting them as examples of the state which we asked the reader to suppose.

Let us advance another step in our view of the power of

Labour. Let us take a man in one respect in the same condition that we supposed—left upon a desert land, without any direct social aid, but with some help to his labour by a small accumulation of former industry. We have instances on record of this next state.

In the year 1681, a Moskito Indian was left by accident on the island of Juan Fernandez, in the Pacific Ocean; the English ship in which he was a sailor having been chased off the coast by some hostile Spanish vessels. Captain Dampier describes this man's condition in the following words:—

“ This Indian lived here alone above three years; and although he was several times sought after by the Spaniards, who knew he was left on the island, yet they could never find him. He was in the woods hunting for goats when Captain Watlin drew off his men, and the ship was under sail before he came back to shore. He had with him his gun, and a knife, with a small horn of powder, and a few shot; which being spent, he contrived a way, by notching his knife, to saw the barrel of his gun into small pieces, wherewith he made harpoons, lances, hooks, and a long knife; heating the pieces first in the fire, which he struck with his gun-flint, and a piece of the barrel of his gun, which he hardened, having learnt to do that among the English. The hot pieces of iron he would hammer out and bend as he pleased with stones, and saw them with his jagged knife, or grind them to an edge by long labour, and harden them to a good temper as there was occasion.\* With such instruments as he made in this manner, he got such provisions as the island afforded, either goats or fish. He told us that at first he was forced to eat seal, which is very ordinary meat, before he had made hooks; but after-

\* It is difficult to understand how the Indian could convert the iron gun-barrel into steel, which it appears from Dampier's account that he did. Steel is produced by a scientific admixture of carbon with iron. But we assume that the statement is correct, and that a conversion, partial doubtless, of iron into steel did take place.

wards he never killed any seals but to make lines, cutting their skins into thongs. He had a little house, or hut, half a mile from the sea, which was lined with goat's skin; his couch, or barbecue of sticks, lying along about two feet distance from the ground, was spread with the same, and was all his bedding. He had no clothes left, having worn out those he brought from Watlin's ship, but only a skin about his waist. He saw our ship the day before we came to an anchor, and did believe we were English; and therefore killed three goats in the morning, before we came to an anchor, and dressed them with cabbage, to treat us when we came ashore."

Here, indeed, is a material alteration in the wealth of a man left on an uninhabited island. He had a regular supply of goats and fish: he had the means of cooking this food; he had a house lined with goats' skins, and bedding of the same; his body was clothed with skins; he had provisions in abundance to offer, properly cooked, when his old companions came to him after three years' absence. What gave him this power to labour profitably? to maintain existence in tolerable comfort? Simply, the gun, the knife, and the flint, which he accidentally had with him when the ship sailed away. The flint and the bit of steel which he hardened out of the gun-barrel gave him the means of procuring fire; the gun became the material for making harpoons, lances, and hooks, with which he could obtain fish and flesh. Till he had these tools he was compelled to eat seal's flesh. The instant he possessed the tools, he could make a selection of what was most agreeable to his taste. It is almost impossible to imagine a human being with less accumulation about him. His small stock of powder and shot was soon spent, and he had only an iron gun-barrel and a knife left, with the means of changing the form of the gun-barrel by fire. Yet this single accumulation enabled him to direct his labour, as all labour is directed even in its highest employment, to the change of form and change of place of the natural supplies by which

he was surrounded. He created nothing; he only gave his natural supplies a value by his labour. Until he laboured the things about him had no value, as far as he was concerned; when he did obtain them by labour, they instantly acquired a value. He brought the wild goat from the mountain to his hut in the valley—he changed its place; he converted its flesh into cooked food, and its skin into a lining for his bed—he changed its form. Change of form and change of place are the beginning and end of all human labour; and the Moskito Indian only employed the same principle for the supply of his wants which directs the labour of all the producers of civilized life into the channels of manufactures or commerce.

But the Moskito Indian, far removed as his situation was above the condition of the man without any accumulation of former labour—that is, of the man without any capital about him—was only *in the second stage in which the power of labour can be exercised*, and in which it is comparatively still weak and powerless. He laboured—he laboured with accumulation—but he laboured without that other power which gives the last and highest direction to profitable labour.

Let us state all the conditions\* necessary for the production of Utility, or of what is essential to the support, comfort, and pleasure of human life:—

### 1. *There shall be Labour.*

The man thrown upon a desert island without accumulation,—the half-idiot boy who wandered into the German forests at so early an age that he forgot all the usages of mankind,—were each compelled to labour, and to labour unceasingly, to maintain existence. Even with an unbounded command of the spontaneous productions of nature, this condition is absolute. It applies to the inferior animals as well as to man. The bee wanders from flower to flower, but it is to labour for the honey. The sloth hangs upon the branches of a tree, but he labours till he has devoured all the leaves, and then climbs another tree. The condition of

the support of animation is labour; and if the labour of all animals were miraculously suspended for a season, very short as compared with the duration of individual life, the reign of animated nature upon this globe would be at an end.

The second condition in the production of utility is—

*2. That there shall be accumulation of former labour, or Capital.*

Without accumulation, as we have seen, the condition of man is the lowest in the scale of animal existence. The reason is obvious. Man requires some accumulation to aid his natural powers of labouring; for he is not provided with instruments of labour to anything like the perfection in which they exist amongst the inferior animals. He wants the gnawing teeth, the tearing claws, the sharp bills, the solid mandibles that enable quadrupeds, and birds, and insects to secure their food, and to provide shelter in so many ingenious ways, each leading us to admire and reverence the directing Providence which presides over such manifold contrivances. He must, therefore, to work profitably, accumulate instruments of work. But he must do more, even in the unsocial state, where he is at perfect liberty to direct his industry as he pleases, uncontrolled by the rights of other men. He must accumulate stores of covering and of shelter. He must have a hut and a bed of skins, which are all accumulations, or capital. He must, further, have a stock of food, which stock, being the most essential for human wants, is called *provisions*, or things provided. He would require this provision against the accidents which may occur to his own health, and the obstacles of weather, which may prevent him from fishing or hunting. The lowest savages have some stores. Many of the inferior animals display an equal care to provide for the exigencies of the future. But still, all such labour is extremely limited. When a man is occupied only in providing immediately for his own wants—doing everything

for himself, consuming nothing but what he produces himself,—his labour must have a very narrow range. The supply of the lowest necessities of our nature can only be attended to, and these must be very ill supplied. The Moskito Indian had fish, and goat's flesh, and a rude hut, and a girdle of skins; and his power of obtaining this wealth was insured to him by the absence of other individuals who would have been his competitors for what the island spontaneously produced. Had other Indians landed in numbers on the island, and had each set about procuring everything for himself, as the active Moskito did, they would have soon approached the point of starvation; and then each would have begun to plunder from the other, unless they had found out the principle that would have given them all plenty. There wanted, then, another power to give the labour of the Indian a profitable direction, besides that of accumulation. It is a power which can only exist where man is social, as it is his nature to be;—and where the principles of civilization are in a certain degree developed. It is, indeed, the beginning and the end of all civilization. It is itself civilization, partial or complete. It is the last and most important condition in the production of useful commodities—

### *3. That there shall be exchanges.*

There can be no exchanges without accumulation—there can be no accumulation without labour. Exchange is that step beyond the constant labour and the partial accumulation of the lower animals, which makes man the lord of the world.

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER I.

1. If a man, brought up in civilized life, were to be cast upon a desert land what would his state be?
2. Why would it be helpless and wretched?
3. What would be the first condition of his lot?
4. Mention some instances of anything approaching to such a state.

5. How did Peter the Wild Boy and the Savage of Aveyron differ from a civilized man cast upon a desert land?
6. Mention an instance of a man left upon a desert land in a less helpless condition than the former instance.
7. In what did his advantages consist?
8. What gave him the power to labour profitably?
9. What are the beginning and end of all human labour?
10. What is meant by utility?
11. What is the first condition necessary for the production of utility?
12. Why is this a necessary condition?
13. Which of the instances given fulfilled this first condition?
14. What is the second condition in the production of utility?
15. Why is this a necessary condition?
16. Which of the instances given fulfilled this second condition?
17. What is labour under these two conditions only?
18. Why is it limited?
19. If other Indians had joined the Moskito Indian in his island and had each procured everything for himself, what would have happened?
20. What other power was wanted to give the labour of the Indian a profitable direction?
21. What is the beginning and the end of all civilization?

**CHAPTER II.**

Society a system of exchanges—Security of individual property the principle of exchange—Alexander Selkirk and Robinson Crusoe—Imperfect appropriation and unprofitable labour.

SOCIETY, both in its rudest form and in its most refined and complicated relations, is nothing but a system of Exchanges. An exchange is a transaction in which both the parties who make the exchange are benefited;—and, consequently, society is a state presenting an uninterrupted succession of advantages for all its members. Every time that we make a free exchange we have a greater desire for the thing which we receive than for the thing which we give;—and the person with whom we make the exchange has a greater desire for that which we offer him than for that which he offers us. When one gives his labour for wages, it is because he has a higher estimation of the wages than of the profitless ease and freedom of remaining unemployed;—and, on the contrary, the employer who purchases his labour feels that he shall be more benefited by the results of that labour than by retaining the capital which he exchanges for it. In a simple state of society, when one man exchanges a measure of wheat for the measure of wine which another man possesses, it is evident that the one has got a greater store of wheat than he desires to consume himself, and that the other, in the same way, has got a greater store of wine;—the one exchanges something to eat for something to drink, and the other something to drink for something to eat. In a refined state of society, when money represents the value of the exchanges, the exchange between the abundance beyond the wants of the possessor of one commodity and of another is just as

real as the barter of wheat for wine. The only difference is, that the exchange is not so direct, although it is incomparably more rapid. But, however the system of exchange be carried on,—whether the value of the things exchanged be determined by barter or by a price in money,—all the exchangers are benefited, because all obtain what they want, through the store which they possess of what they do not want.

It has been well said that “ Man might be defined to be an animal that makes exchanges.”\* There are other animals, indeed, such as bees and ants amongst insects, and beavers amongst quadrupeds, which to a certain extent are social; that is, they concur together in the execution of a common work for a common good: but as to their individual possessions, each labours to obtain what it desires from sources accessible to all, or plunders the stores of others. Not one insect or quadruped, however wonderful may be its approaches to rationality, has the least idea of making a formal exchange with another. The modes by which the inferior animals communicate their thoughts are probably not sufficiently determinate to allow of any such agreement. The very foundation of that agreement is a complicated principle, which man alone can understand. It is the Security of individual Property. Immediately that this principle is established, labour begins to work profitably, for it works with exchange. If the principle of appropriation were not acted upon at all, there could be no exchange, and consequently no production. The scanty bounty of nature might be scrambled for by a few miserable individuals—and the strongest would obtain the best share; but this insecurity would necessarily destroy all accumulation. Each would of course live from hand to mouth, when the means of living were constantly exposed to the violence of the more powerful. This is the state of the lowest savages, and as it is an extreme state it is a rare one,—no security, no exchange, no capital, no labour, no

\* Dr. Whately's Lectures on Political Economy.

production. Let us apply the principle to an individual case.

The poet who has attempted to describe the feelings of a man suddenly cut off from human society, in "Verses supposed to be written by Alexander Selkirk during his solitary abode in the island of Juan Fernandez," represents him as saying, "I am monarch of all I survey."<sup>\*</sup> Alexander Selkirk was left upon the same island as the Moskito Indian; and his adventures there have formed the groundwork of the beautiful romance of "Robinson Crusoe." The meaning of the poet is, that the unsocial man had the same right over all the natural productive powers of the country in which he had taken up his abode, as we each have over light and air. He was alone; and therefore he exercised an absolute although a barren sovereignty, over the wild animals by which he was surrounded—over the land and over the water. He was, in truth, the one proprietor—the one capitalist, and the one labourer—of the whole island. His absolute property in the soil, and his perfect freedom of action, were both dependent upon one condition—that he should remain alone. If the Moskito Indian, for instance, had remained in the island, Selkirk's entire sovereignty must have been instantly at an end. Some more definite principle of appropriation must have been established, which would have given to Selkirk, as well as to the Moskito Indian, the right to appropriate distinct parts of the island each to his particular use. Selkirk, for example, might have agreed to remain on the eastern coast, while the Indian might have established himself on the western; and then the fruits, the goats, and the fish of the eastern part would have been appropriated to Selkirk, as distinctly as the clothes, the musket, the iron pot, the can, the hatchet, the knife, the mathematical instruments, and the Bible which he brought on shore.<sup>†</sup> If the Indian's territory had produced some-

\* Cowper's *Miscellaneous Poems*.

† These circumstances are recorded in Captain Woodes Rogers' *Cruising Voyage round the World*, 1712.

thing which Selkirk had not, and if Selkirk's land had also something which the Indian's had not, they might have become exchangers. They would have passed into that condition naturally enough ;—imperfectly perhaps, but still as easily as any barbarous people who do not cultivate the earth, but exchange her spontaneous products.

The poet goes on to make the solitary man say, " My right there is none to dispute." The condition of Alexander Selkirk was unquestionably one of absolute liberty. His rights were not measured by his duties. He had all rights and no duties. Many writers on the origin of society have held that man, upon entering into union with his fellow-men, and submitting, as a necessary consequence of this union, to the restraints of law and government, sacrifices a portion of his liberty, or natural power, for the security of that power which remains to him. No such agreement amongst mankind could ever have possibly taken place ; for man is by his nature, and without any agreement, a social being. He is a being whose rights are balanced by the uncontrollable force of their relation to the rights of others. The succour which the infant man requires from its parents, to an extent, and for a duration, so much exceeding that required for the nurture of other creatures, is the natural beginning of the social state, established insensibly and by degrees. The liberty which the social man is thus compelled by the force of circumstances to renounce, amounts only to a restraint upon his brute power of doing injury to his fellow-men : and for this sacrifice, in itself the cause of the highest individual and therefore general good, he obtains that dominion over every other being, and that control over the productive forces of nature, which alone can render him the monarch of all he surveys. The poor sailor, who for four years was cut off from human aid, and left alone to struggle for the means of supporting existence, was an exception, and a very rare one, to the condition of our species all over the world. His absolute rights placed him in the condition of uncontrolled feebleness ; if he had

become social, he would have put on the regulated strength of rights balanced by duties.

Alexander Selkirk was originally left upon the uninhabited island of Juan Fernandez at his own urgent desire. He was unhappy on board his ship, in consequence of disputes with his captain ; and he resolved to rush into a state which might probably have separated him for ever from the rest of mankind. In the belief that he should be so separated he devoted all his labour and all his ingenuity to the satisfaction of his own wants alone. By continual exercise he was enabled to run down the wild goat upon the mountains ; and by persevering search, he knew where to find the native roots that would render his goat's flesh palatable. He never thought, however, of providing any store beyond the supply of his own personal necessities. He had no motive for that thought ; because there was no human being within his reach with whom he might exchange that store for other stores. The very instant, however, that the English ships, which finally gave him back to society, touched upon his shores,—before he communicated by speech with any of his fellow-men, or was discovered by them,—he became social. He saw that he must be an exchanger. Before the boat's crew landed he had killed several goats, and prepared a meal for his expected guests. He knew that he possessed a commodity which they did not possess. He had fresh meat, whilst they had only salt. Of course what he had to offer was acceptable to the sailors ; and he received in exchange protection, and a place amongst them. He renounced his sovereignty, and became once more a subject. It was better for him, he thought, to be surrounded with the regulated power of civilization, than to wield at his own will the uncertain strength of solitary uncivilization. But, had he chosen to remain upon his island, as in after-years he regretted he had not done, although a solitary man, he would not have been altogether cut off from the hopes and the duties of the social state. If he had chosen to remain after that visit from his fellow-men, he would have said to them, before they had

left him once more alone, “ I have hunted for you my goats, I have dug for you my roots, I have shown you the fountains which issue out of my rocks ;—these are the resources of my dominion : give me in exchange for them a fresh supply of gunpowder and shot, some of your clothes, some of the means of repairing these clothes, some of your tools and implements of cookery, and more of your books to divert my solitary hours.” Having enjoyed the benefits which he had bestowed, they would, as just men, have paid the debt which they had incurred, and the exchange would have been completed. Immediately that they had quitted his shores, Selkirk would have looked at his resources with a new eye. His hut was rudely fashioned and wretchedly furnished. He had fashioned and furnished it as well as he could by his own labour, working upon his own materials. The visit which he had received from his fellow-men, after he had abandoned every hope of again looking upon their faces, would have led him to think that other ships would come, with whose crews he might make other exchanges,—new clothes, new tools, new materials, received as the price of his own accumulations. To make the best of his circumstances when that day should arrive, he must redouble his efforts to increase his stock of commodities,—some for himself, and some to exchange for other commodities, if the opportunity for exchange should ever come. He must therefore transplant his vegetables, so as to be within instant reach when they should be wanted. He must render his goats domestic, instead of chasing them upon the hills. He must go forward from the hunting state, into the pastoral and agricultural.

In Defoe’s story, Robinson Crusoe is represented as going into this pastoral and agricultural state. But he had more resources than Selkirk ; and he at last obtained one resource which carried him back, however incompletely, into the social condition. He acquired a fellow-labourer. He made a boat by his own unassisted labour; but he could not launch it. When Friday came, and was henceforth his faithful

friend and willing servant, he could launch his boat. Crusoe ultimately left his island; for the boat had given him a greater command over his circumstances. But had he continued there in companionship with Friday, there must have been such a compact as would have prevented either struggling for the property which had been created. The course of improvement that we have imagined for Selkirk supposes that he should continue in his state of exclusive proprietor—that there should be none to dispute his right. If other ships had come to his shores—if they had trafficked with him from time to time—exchanged clothes and household conveniences, and implements of cultivation, for his goat's flesh and roots—it is probable that other sailors would in time have desired to partake his plenty;—that a colony would have been founded—that the island would have become populous. It is perfectly clear that, whether for exchange amongst themselves, or for exchange with others, the members of this colony could not have stirred a step in the cultivation of the land without appropriating its produce;—and they could not have appropriated its produce without appropriating the land itself. Cultivation of the land for a common stock would have gone to the establishment precisely of the same principle;—they would still have been exchangers amongst themselves, and the partnership would not have lasted a day, unless each man's share of what the partnership produced had been rendered perfectly secure to him. Without security they could not have accumulated—without accumulations they could not have exchanged—without exchanges they could not have carried forward their labours with any compensating productiveness.

Imperfect appropriation—that is, an appropriation which respects personal wealth, such as the tools and conveniences of an individual, and even secures to him the fruits of the earth when he has gathered them, but which has not reached the last step of a division of land—imperfect appropriation such as this raises up the same invincible obstacles to the production of utility; because, with this

original defect, there must necessarily be unprofitable labour, small accumulation, limited exchange. Let us exemplify this by another individual case.

We have seen, in the instances of the Mosquito Indian and of Selkirk, how little a solitary man can do for himself, although he may have the most unbounded command of natural supplies—although not an atom of those natural supplies, whether produced by the earth or the water, is appropriated by others—when, in fact, he is monarch of all he surveys. Let us trace the course of another man, advanced in the ability to subdue all things to his use by association with his fellow-men; but carrying on that association in the rude and unproductive relations of savage life;—not desiring to “replenish the earth” by cultivation, but seeking only to appropriate the means of existence which it has spontaneously produced;—labouring, indeed, and exchanging, but not labouring and exchanging in a way that will permit the accumulation of wealth, and therefore remaining poor and miserable. We are not about to draw any fanciful picture, but merely to select some facts from a real narrative.

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER II.

1. What kind of transaction is an exchange?
2. What induces the exchange of labour for wages?
3. What induces the employer to purchase labour?
4. What induces exchanges in a simple state of society?
5. What represents the value of the exchanges in a refined state of society?
6. What is the difference between the exchanges in a simple state and in a refined state of society?
7. Which is the only animal that makes exchanges?
8. What is the foundation of the principle of exchange?
9. What would be the consequence if the principle of appropriation were not acted upon at all?
10. Mention an instance of such a state.
11. What was the condition of Alexander Selkirk's entire sovereignty of the island of Juan Fernandez?
12. What is man by nature?

13. By what are the rights of man in a social state balanced ?
14. When did Alexander Selkirk become social ?
15. What was the result ?
16. If Alexander Selkirk had remained on the island after being visited by English ships what change would there have been in his state ?
17. What must be the first step in the establishment of a colony ?
18. What is necessary for the production of utility ?
19. What is necessary to free exchange ?
20. What is necessary to accumulation ?

### *CHAPTER III.*

Adventures of John Tanner—Habits of the American Indians—Their sufferings from famine, and from the absence among them of the principle of division of labour—Evils of irregular labour—Respect to property—Their present improved condition—Hudson's Bay Indians.

IN the year 1828 there came to New York a white man named John Tanner, who had been thirty years a captive amongst the Indians in the interior of North America. He was carried off by a band of these people when he was a little boy, from a settlement on the Ohio river, which was occupied by his father, who was a clergyman. The boy was brought up in all the rude habits of the Indians, and became inured to the abiding miseries and uncertain pleasures of their wandering life. He grew in time to be a most skilful huntsman, and carried on large dealings with the agents of the Hudson's Bay Company, in the skins of beavers and other animals which he and his associates had shot or entrapped. The history of this man was altogether so curious that he was induced to furnish the materials for a complete narrative of his adventures ; and, accordingly, a book, fully descriptive of them, was prepared for the press by Dr. Edwin James, and printed at New York in 1830. It is of course not within the intent of our little work to furnish any regular abridgment of John Tanner's story ; but it is our wish to direct attention to some few particulars, which appeared to us strikingly to illustrate some of the positions which we desire to enforce, by thus exhibiting their practical operation.

The country in which this man lived so many years is that immense territory belonging to the United States,

which at that period was covered by boundless forests which the progress of civilization had not then cleared away. In this region a number of scattered Indian tribes maintained a precarious existence by hunting the moose-deer and the buffalo for their supply of food, and by entrapping the foxes and martens of the woods and the beavers of the lakes, whose skins they generally exchanged with the white traders of Europe for articles of urgent necessity, such as ammunition and guns, traps, axes, and woollen blankets; but too often for ardent spirits, equally the curse of savage and of civilized life. The contact of savage man with the outskirts of civilization perhaps afflicts him with the vices of both states. But the principle of exchange, imperfectly and irregularly as it operated amongst the Indians, furnished some incitement to their ingenuity and their industry. Habits of providence were thus to a certain degree created ; it became necessary to accumulate some capital of the commodities which could be rendered valuable by their own labour, to exchange for commodities which their own labour, without exchange, was utterly unable to procure. The principle of exchange, too, being recognised amongst them in their dealings with foreigners, the security of property—without which, as we have shown, that principle cannot exist at all—was one of the great rules of life amongst themselves. But still these poor Indians, from the mode which they proposed to themselves for the attainment of property, which consisted only in securing what nature had produced, without directing the course of her productions, were very far removed from the regular attainment of those blessings which civilized society alone offers. We shall exemplify these statements by a few details.

The country over which these people ranged occupies a surface that may be roughly described as five or six times as large as all England. They had the unbounded command of all the natural resources of that country ; and yet their entire numbers did not equal the population of a moderately sized English county. It may be fairly said that each

Indian required a thousand acres for his maintenance. The supplies of food were so scanty—a scantiness which would at once have ceased to exist had there been any cultivation—that if a large number of these Indians assembled together to co-operate in their hunting expeditions, they were very soon dispersed by the urgent desire of satisfying hunger. Tanner says, “ We all went to hunt beavers in concert. In hunts of this kind the proceeds are sometimes equally divided ; but in this instance every man retained what he had killed. In three days I collected as many skins as I could carry. But in these distant and hasty hunts little meat could be brought in ; and the whole band was soon suffering with hunger. Many of the hunters, and I among others, for want of food became extremely weak, and unable to hunt far from home.” What an approach is this to the case of the lower animals ; and how forcibly it reminds us of the passage in Job (o. iv., v. 11), “ The fierce lion perisheth for lack of prey.”\* In another place he says, “ I began to be dissatisfied at remaining with large bands of Indians, as it was usual for them, after having remained a short time in a place, to suffer from hunger.” These sufferings were not, in many cases, of short duration, or of trifling intensity. Tanner describes one instance of famine in the following words :—“ The Indians gathered around, one after another, until we became a considerable band, and then we began to suffer from hunger. The weather was very severe, and our suffering increased. A young woman was the first to die of hunger. Soon after this, a young man, her brother, was taken with that kind of delirium or madness which precedes death in such as die of starvation. In this condition he had left the lodge of his debilitated and desponding parents ; and when, at a late hour in the evening, I returned from my hunt, they could not tell what had become of him. I left the camp about the middle of the night, and, following his track, I found him at some distance, lying dead in the snow.”

\* The authorized version has *old* ; the more correct translation is *fierce*.

This worst species of suffering equally existed at particular periods, whether food was sought for by large or by small parties, by bands or by individuals. Tanner was travelling with the family of the woman who had adopted him. He says, "We had now a short season of plenty; but soon became hungry again. It often happened that for two or three days we had nothing to eat; then a rabbit or two, or a bird, would afford us a prospect of protracting the sufferings of hunger a few days longer." Again he says, "Having subsisted for some time almost entirely on the inner bark of trees, and particularly of a climbing vine found there, our strength was much reduced."

The misery which is thus so strikingly described proceeded from the circumstance that the labour of the Indians did not take a profitable direction; and that this waste of labour (for unprofitable applications of labour are the greatest of all wastes) arose from the one fact, that in certain particulars these Indians laboured without appropriation. They depended upon the chance productions of nature, without compelling her to produce; and they did not compel her to produce, because there was no appropriation of the soil, the most efficient natural instrument of production. If the Indians had directed the productive powers of the earth to the growth of corn, instead of to the growth of foxes' skins, they would have become rich. But they could not have reached this point without appropriation of the soil. They had learnt the necessity of appropriating the products of the soil, when they had bestowed labour upon obtaining them; but the last step towards productiveness was not taken. The Indians therefore were poor; the European settlers who had taken this last step were rich.

The imperfect appropriation which existed amongst the Indians, preventing, as it did, the accumulation of capital, prevented the application of that skill and knowledge which is preserved and accumulated by the Division of employment. Tanner describes a poor fellow who was wounded in the arm by the accidental discharge of a gun. As there

was little surgical skill amongst the community, because no one could devote himself to the business of surgery, the Indian, as the only chance of saving his life, resolved to cut off his own arm ; "and taking two knives, the edge of one of which he had hacked into a sort of saw, he with his right hand and arm cut off his left, and threw it from him as far as he could." The labour which an individual must go through when the state of society is so rude that there is scarcely any division of employment, and consequently scarcely any exchanges, is exhibited in many passages of Tanner's narrative. We select one. "I had no pukkavi, or mats for a lodge, and therefore had to build one of poles and long grass. I dressed more skins, made my own moccasins and leggings, and those for my children ; cut wood and cooked for myself and family, made my snow-shoes, &c. &c. All the attention and labour I had to bestow about home sometimes kept me from hunting, and I was occasionally distressed for want of provisions. I busied myself about my lodge in the night-time. When it was sufficiently light I would bring wood, and attend to other things without ; at other times I was repairing my snow-shoes, or my own or my children's clothes. For nearly all the winter I slept but a very small part of the night."

Tanner was thus obliged to do everything for himself, and consequently to work at very great disadvantage, because the principle of exchange was so imperfectly acted upon by the people amongst whom he lived. This principle of exchange was imperfectly acted upon, because the principle of appropriation was imperfectly acted upon. The occupation of all, and of each, was to hunt game, to prepare skins, to sell them to the traders, to make sugar from the juice of maple trees, to build huts, and to sew the skins which they dressed and the blankets which they bought into rude coverings for their bodies. Every one of them did all of these things for himself, and of course he did them very imperfectly. The people were not divided into hunters, and furriers, and dealers, and sugar-makers, and builders,

and tailors. Every man was his own hunter, furrier, dealer, sugar-maker, builder, and tailor; and consequently, every man, like Tanner, was so occupied by many things, that want of food and want of rest were ordinary sufferings. He describes a man who was so borne down and oppressed by these manifold wants, that, in utter despair of being able to surmount them, he would lie still till he was at the point of starvation, replying to those who tried to rouse him to kill game, that he was too poor and sick to set about it. By describing himself as poor, he meant to say that he was destitute of all the necessaries and comforts whose possession would encourage him to add to the store. He had little capital. The skill which he possessed of hunting game gave him a certain command over the spontaneous productions of the forest; but, as his power of hunting depended upon chance supplies of game, his labour necessarily took so irregular a direction, and was therefore so unproductive, that he never accumulated sufficient for his support in times of sickness, or for his comfortable support at any time. He became, therefore, despairing; and had that perfect apathy, that indifference to the future, which is the most pitiable evidence of extreme wretchedness. This man felt his powerless situation more keenly than his companions; but with all savage tribes there is a want of steady and persevering exertion, proceeding from the same cause. Severe labour is succeeded by long fits of idleness, because their labour takes a chance direction. This is a universal case. Habits of idleness, of irregularity, of ferocity, are the characteristics of all those who maintain existence by the pursuit of the unappropriated productions of nature; while constant application, orderly arrangement of time, and civility to others, result from systematic industry. The savage and the poacher are equally the slaves of violent impulses—equally disgusted at the prospect of patient application. When the support of life depends upon chance supplies, the reckless spirit of a gambler is sure to take possession of the whole man; and the misery which results

from these chance supplies produces either dejection or ferocity. The author of this book used to observe the habits of a class of such persons, who frequent the Thames at Eton ; and he thus described them in verses of his boyhood :—

What boat is this which creeps so lazily  
Up the still stream ? How quietly falls the drip  
Of the slow paddle ! Now it shoots along,  
As if that lone man fear'd us. Well I ken  
His rough and dangerous trade. He knows each hole  
Where the quick-sighted eel delights to swim  
When clouds obscure the moon ; and there he lays  
His traps and gins, and then he sleeps awhile ;  
But rouses up before the prying dawn  
Betrays his course ; and out he cautiously glides  
To try his doubtful luck. Perchance he finds  
Stores that may buy him bread ; but oft'ner still  
His toil is fruitless, and deject he comes  
Home to his emberless hearth, and sits him down,  
Idle and starving through the busy day.

Mungo Park describes the wretched condition of the inhabitants of countries in Africa where small particles of gold are found in the rivers. Their lives were spent in hunting for the gold to exchange for useful commodities, instead of raising the commodities themselves ; and they were consequently poor and miserable, listless and unsteady. Their fitful industry had too much of chance mixed up with it to afford a certain and general profit. The accounts which of late years we have received from the gold-diggings of California and Australia exhibit the same suffering from the same cause. The natives of Cape de la Hogue, in Normandy, were the most wretched and ferocious people in all France, because they depended principally for support on the wrecks that were frequent on their coasts. When there were no tempests, they made an easy transition from the character of wreckers to that of robbers. A benefactor of his species taught these unhappy people to collect a marine plant to make potash. They immediately became profitable labourers and exchangers ; they obtained a pro-

perty in the general intelligence of civilized life; the capital of society raised them from misery to wealth, from being destroyers to being producers.

The Indians, as we thus see, were poor and wretched, because they had no appropriation beyond articles of domestic use; because they had no property in land, and consequently no cultivation. Yet even they were not insensible to the importance of the principle, for the preservation of the few advantages that belonged to their course of life. Tanner says, "I have often known a hunter leave his traps for many days in the woods without visiting them, or feeling any anxiety about their safety." The Indians even carried the principle of appropriation almost to a division of land; for each tribe, and sometimes each individual, had an allotted hunting-ground—imperfectly appropriated, indeed, by the first comer, and often contested with violence by other hunters, but still showing that they approached the limits which divides the savage from the civilized state, and that, if cultivation were introduced amongst them, there would be a division of land, as a matter of necessity. The security of individual property is the foundation of all social improvement. It is impossible to speak of the productive power of labour in the civilized state, without viewing it in connexion with that great principle of society which considers all capital as appropriated.

At the commencement of the present century all the Indian tribes who were abiding in the territory of the United States, east of the Mississippi, were in the condition which has been described by Tanner. The want of resources in the country of the Indians was so manifest, that when commissioners from the government of the United States, in 1802, gathered together the chiefs of the various tribes of the Creek Indians in their own country, to propose to them a plan for their civilization, it became necessary to provide for the support of the people so assembled by conveying food into the forests from the stores of the American

towns. The Indians have now vanished from their old hunting-grounds. Where they so recently maintained a precarious existence, there are populous cities, navigable rivers, roads, railways. The clink of the hammer is heard in the forge, and the rush of the stream from the mill-dam tells of agriculture and commerce. But even the Indians themselves have become labourers. A number of the tribes have been removed to a large tract of country west of the Mississippi, and have been raised into the dignity of cultivators. The Cherokees, the Creeks, and the Choctaws, with many smaller tribes, now breed cattle instead of hunting martens. They have houses in the place of huts; they have schools and churches. Instead of being extirpated by famine or the sword, they have been adopted into the great family of civilized man.

But this wise and humane arrangement of the United States has not wholly removed the Indians from the wide regions of North America. In the Hudson's Bay territories the life which Tanner described still goes forward. The wants of civilized society—the desire to possess the earth—have transported the Indians from the banks of the Ohio to the lands watered by the Arkansas. The opposite principle has retained them on the shores of Hudson's Bay. They are wanted there as hunters, and are not encouraged as cultivators. They are kept out of the pale of civilization, and not received within it. The rude industry of the Hudson's Bay Indians is stimulated by the luxury of Europe into an employ which would cease to exist if the people became civilized. If agriculture were introduced amongst them—if they were to grow corn and keep domestic animals—they would cease to be hunters of foxes and martens, because their wants would be much better supplied by other modes of labour, involving less suffering and less uncertainty. As it is, the traders, who want skins, do not think of giving the Indians tools to work the ground, and seeds to put in it, and cows and sheep to breed other cows and sheep. They avail themselves of the uncivilized state of these poor tribes,

to render them the principal agents in the manufacture of fur, to supply the luxuries of another hemisphere. But still the exchange which the hunters carry on with the European traders, imperfect as it is in all cases, and unjust as it is in many, is better for the Indians than no exchange; although we fear that ardent spirits take away from the Indians the greater number of the advantages which would otherwise remain with them as exchangers. If the Indians had no skins to give to Europe, Europe would have no blankets and ammunition to give to them. They would obtain their food and clothing by the use of the bow alone. They would live entirely from hand to mouth. They would have no motive for accumulation, because there would be no exchanges; and they would consequently be even poorer and more helpless than they are now as exchangers of skins. They are suffering from the effects of small accumulations and imperfect exchange; but these are far better than no accumulation and no exchange. If the course of their industry were to be changed by perfect appropriation—if they were consequently to become cultivators and manufacturers, instead of wanderers in the woods to hunt for wild and noxious animals—they would, in the course of years, have abundance of profitable labour, because they would have abundance of capital. This is the better lot of the tribes with whom the government of the United States has made a far nobler treaty than Penn made with his Indians. As it is, their accumulations are so small, that they cannot proceed with their own uncertain labour of hunting without an advance of capital on the part of the traders; and thus, even in the rude tradings of these poor Indians, credit, that complicated instrument of commercial exchange, operates upon the direction of their labour. Of course credit would not exist at all without appropriation. Their rights of property are perfect as far as they go; but they are not carried far enough to direct their labours into channels which would ensure sufficient production for the labourers. Their labour is unproductive because they have small accumula-

tions; their accumulations are small because they have imperfect exchange; their exchange is imperfect because they have limited appropriation. We may illustrate this state of imperfect production by another passage from Tanner's story:—

"The Hudson's Bay Company had now no post in that part of the country, and the Indians were soon made conscious of the advantage which had formerly resulted to them from the competition between rival trading companies. Mr. Wells, at the commencement of winter, called us all together, gave the Indians a ten-gallon keg of rum and some tobacco, telling them at the same time he would not credit one of them the value of a single needle. When they brought skins he would buy them, and give in exchange such articles as were necessary for their comfort and subsistence during the winter. I was not with the Indians when this talk was held. When it was reported to me, and a share of the presents offered me, I not only refused to accept anything, but reproached the Indians for their pusillanimity in submitting to such terms. They had been accustomed for many years to receive credits in the fall; they were now entirely destitute not of clothing merely, but of ammunition, and many of them of guns and traps. How were they, without the accustomed aid from the traders to subsist themselves and their families during the ensuing winter? A few days afterwards I went to Mr. Wells, and told him that I was poor, with a large family to support by my own exertions, and that I must unavoidably suffer, and perhaps perish, unless he would give me such a credit as I had always in the fall been accustomed to receive. He would not listen to my representation, and told me roughly to be gone from his house. I then took eight silver beavers, such as are worn by the women as ornaments on their dress, and which I had purchased the year before at just twice the price that was commonly given for a capote;\* I laid them before him on the table, and asked him to give

\* A sort of great-coat.

me a capote for them, or retain them as a pledge for the payment of the price of the garment, as soon as I could procure the peltries.\* He took up the ornaments, threw them in my face, and told me never to come inside of his house again. The cold weather of the winter had not yet set in, and I went immediately to my hunting-ground, killed a number of moose, and set my wife to make the skins into such garments as were best adapted to the winter season, and which I now saw we should be compelled to substitute for the blankets and woollen clothes we had been accustomed to receive from the traders."

This incident at once shows us that the great blessing of the civilized state is its increase of the powers of production. Here we see the Indians, surrounded on all sides by wild animals whose skins might be made into garments, reduced to the extremity of distress because the traders refused to advance them blankets and other necessaries, to be used during the months when they were employed in catching the animals from which they might obtain the skins. It is easy to see that the Indians were a long way removed from the power of making blankets themselves. Before they could reach this point, their forests must have been converted into pasture-grounds; they must have raised flocks of sheep, and learnt all the various complicated arts, and possessed all the ingenious machinery, for converting wool into cloth. By their exchange of furs for blankets, they obtained a share in the productiveness of civilization; they obtained comfortable clothing with much less labour than they could have made it out of the furs. If Tanner had not considered the capote which he desired to obtain from the traders, better, and less costly, than the garment of moose skins, he would not have carried on any exchange of the two articles with the traders. The skins of martens and foxes were only valuable to the Indians, without exchanging, for the purpose of sewing together to make covering. They had a different value in Europe as articles

\* Skins.

of luxury ; and therefore the Indians by exchange obtained a greater plenty of superior clothing than if they had used the skins themselves. But the very nature of the trade, depending upon chance supplies, rendered it impossible that they should accumulate. They had such pressing need of ammunition, traps, and blankets, that the produce of the labour of one hunting season was not more than sufficient to procure the commodities which they required to consume in the same season. But supposing the Indians could have bred foxes, and martens, and beavers, as we breed rabbits, for the supply of the European demand for fur, doubtless they would have then advanced many steps in the character of producers. The thing is perhaps impossible ; but were it possible, and were the Indians to have practised it, they would immediately have become capitalists, to an extent that would have soon rendered them independent of the credit of the traders. They must, however, have previously established a more perfect appropriation. Each must have enclosed his own hunting-ground, and each must have raised some food for the maintenance of his own stock of beavers, foxes, and martens. It would be easier, doubtless, to raise the food for themselves, and ultimately to exchange corn for clothing, instead of furs for clothing. When this happens—and it will happen sooner or later, unless the remnant of the hunting Indians are extirpated by their poverty, which proceeds from their imperfect production—Europe must go without the brilliant variety of skins which we procure at the cost of so much labour, accompanied with so much wretchedness, because the labour is so unproductive to the labourers. When the ladies of London and Paris are compelled to wear boas of rabbits instead of sables, and when the hair of the beaver ceases to be employed in the manufacture of our hats, the wooded regions of Hudson's Bay will have been cleared—the fur-bearing animals will have perished—corn will be growing in the forest and the marsh—the inhabitants will be building houses instead of trapping foxes ;

there will be appropriation and capital, profitable labour and comfort. Three hundred thousand mink and marten-skins will no longer be sent from those shores to London in one year; but Liverpool may send to those shores woven cottons and worsteds, pottery and tools, in exchange for products whose cultivation will have exterminated the minks and martens.

The fur-bearing animals, and their hunters will probably be extinguished somewhat more quickly than was expected when the previous edition of this book was published ten years ago. Vancouver's Island, which was leased to the Hudson's Bay Company, and contributed something to their fur trade, was too near to the gold district of California not to be invaded by a host of adventurers. Victoria, the capital of the island, was a very small and insignificant place, but it was the nearest town to the gold-fields. The colony of British Columbia has been founded, and its eventual results will not only interfere with the fur-hunting arrangements of the Hudson's Bay Company, but by bringing *free-traders* into those regions will probably put an end, in process of time, to that unequal system of barter which has so long kept the Indians from a knowledge of the commonest value of what they exchange. But they never will become *free-exchangers* whilst a beaver's skin is the standard of currency, and whilst the ordinary necessaries for their hunting expeditions are supplied in advance. If ever, by co-operation or any other form of accumulation, they should possess their own stores of blankets, guns, ammunition, and knives, they would have made a great approach towards a more complete civilization.

---

#### QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER III.

1. Mention an instance of a white man reduced to a state of civilization, more advanced than that of Alexander Selkirk, but still imperfect.
2. What conditions, favourable to the production of utility, were fulfilled by the North American Indians amongst whom John Tanner lived?

3. What were the obstacles in this case to the production of utility?
4. What was the result of the unproductive relations of life amongst these Indians?
5. What were the conditions of productiveness which they neglected?
6. What were the results of the absence among them of any division of labour?
7. Why was the principle of exchange imperfectly acted upon?
8. What is the effect on character and habits of an imperfect system of appropriation?
9. Mention instances of such an effect.
10. What principle has retained the Indians on the shores of Hudson's Bay?
11. What would be the result of civilizing the Hudson's Bay Indians?
12. Are the Indians benefited or not by their intercourse with the European traders of Hudson's Bay?
13. How could they attain to the lot of the tribes civilized by the United States' Government?
14. What causes the labour of the Hudson's Bay Indians to be unproductive?
15. What causes their accumulations to be small?
16. What causes their exchange to be imperfect?
17. How do these Indians obtain a share in the productiveness of civilization?
18. What alterations in their condition would be necessary before they could become free exchangers, and make an approach to a more complete civilization?

***CHAPTER IV.***

The Prodigal—Advantages of the poorest man in civilized life over the richest savage — Savings banks, deposits, and interest — Progress of accumulation —Insecurity of capital, its causes and results — Property, its constituents —Accumulation of capital.

THERE is an account in Foster's Essays of a man who, having by a short career of boundless extravagance dissipated every shilling of a large estate which he inherited from his fathers, obtained possession again of the whole property by a course which the writer well describes as a singular illustration of decision of character. The unfortunate prodigal, driven forth from the home of his early years by his own imprudence, and reduced to absolute want, wandered about for some time in a state of almost unconscious despair, meditating self-destruction, till he at last sat down upon a hill which overlooked the fertile fields that he once called his own. "He remained," says the narrative, "fixed in thought a number of hours, at the end of which he sprang from the ground with a vehement exulting emotion. He had formed his resolution, which was, that all these estates should be his again; he had formed his plan, too, which he instantly began to execute." We shall show, by and by, how this plan worked in detail;—it will be sufficient, just now, to examine the principles upon which it was founded. He looked to no freak of fortune to throw into his lap by chance what he had cast from him by wilfulness. He neither trusted to inherit those lands from their present possessor by his favour, nor to wring them from him by a course of law. He was not rash and foolish enough to dream of obtaining

again by force those possessions which he had exchanged for vain superfluities. But he resolved to become once more their master by the operation of the only principle which could give them to him in a civilized society. He resolved to obtain them again by the same agency through which he had lost them—by exchange. But what had he to exchange? His capital was gone, even to the uttermost farthing, he must labour to obtain new capital. With a courage worthy of imitation he resolved to accept the very first work that should be offered to him, and, however low the wages of that work, to spend only a part of those wages, leaving something for a store. The day that he made this resolution he carried it into execution. He found some service to be performed—irksome, doubtless, and in many eyes degrading. But he had a purpose which made every occupation appear honourable, as every occupation truly is that is productive of utility. Incessant labour and scrupulous parsimony soon accumulated for him a capital; and the store, gathered together with such energy, was a rapidly increasing one. In no very great number of years the once destitute labourer was again a rich proprietor. He had earned again all that he had lost. The lands of his fathers were again his. He had accomplished his plan.

A man so circumstanced—one who possesses no capital, and is only master of his own natural powers—if suddenly thrown down from a condition of ease, must look upon the world, at the first view, with deep apprehension. He sees everything around him appropriated. He is in the very opposite condition of Alexander Selkirk, when he is made to exclaim “I am monarch of all I survey.” Instead of feeling that his “right there is none to dispute,” he knows that every blade of corn that covers the fields, every animal that grazes in the pastures, is equally numbered as the property of some individual owner, and can only pass into his possession by exchange. In the towns it is the same as in the country. The dealer in bread and in clothes,—

the victualler from whom he would ask a cup of beer and a night's lodging,—will give him nothing, although they will exchange everything. He cannot exist, except as a beggar, unless he puts himself in the condition to become an exchanger.

But still, with all these apparent difficulties, his prospects of subsisting, and of subsisting comfortably, are far greater than in any other situation in which he must labour to live. As we have already seen, the condition of by far the greater number of the millions that constitute the exchangers of civilized society is greatly superior to that of the few thousands who exist upon the precarious supplies of the unappropriated productions of nature in the savage life. Although an exchange must always be made—although in very few cases “the fowl and the brute” offer themselves to the wayfaring man for his daily food—although no herbs worth the gathering can be found for the support of life in the few uncultivated parts of a highly cultivated country—the aggregate riches are so abundant, and the facilities which exist for exchanging capital for labour are therefore so manifold, that the poorest man in a state of civilization has a much greater certainty of supplying all his wants, and of supplying them with considerably more ease, than the richest man in a state of uncivilization. The principle upon which he has to rely is, that in a highly civilized country there is large production. There is large production because there is profitable labour;—there is profitable labour because there is large accumulation;—there is large accumulation because there is unlimited exchange;—there is unlimited exchange because there is universal appropriation. John Tanner was accounted a rich man by the Indians—doubtless because he was more industrious than the greater number of them; but we have seen what privations he often suffered. He suffered privations because there was no capital, no accumulation of the products of labour, in the country in which he lived. Where such a store exists, the poorest man has a tolerable

certainty that he may obtain his share of it as an exchanger ; and the greater the store the greater the certainty that his labour, or power of adding to the store, will obtain a full proportion of what previous labour has gathered together.

In 1864 the amount of stock vested to the account of depositors in the savings banks of the United Kingdom was 39,277, 197*l.*, including the deposits of friendly societies. The total amount that has been received by the National Debt Commissioners from savings banks, and of the interest accrued thereon, exceeds ninety millions sterling. But another mode of investing savings has the guarantee of the government, and is more convenient to the depositor than the ordinary savings bank. The post office savings banks have only been instituted within the last few years, and yet, at the end of 1864 there was very nearly five million sterling standing to the credit of the depositors. The interest for that year having been above a hundred thousand pounds. The large capital thus deposited in both species of savings banks, and which goes on fructifying as it has fructified in producing many millions of interest, was an accumulation, penny by penny, shilling by shilling, and pound by pound, of the savings of that class of persons who, in every country, have the greatest difficulty in accumulating. Habitual efforts of self-denial, and a rigid determination to postpone temporary gratification to permanent good, could alone have enabled these accumulators to retain so much of what they had produced beyond the amount of what they consumed.

The capital sum of more than forty millions now belonging to the depositors in savings banks, represents as many products of industry as could be bought by that sum. It is a capital which remains for the encouragement of *productive* consumption ; that is, it is now applied as a fund for setting others to produce,—to enable them to consume while they produce,—and in like manner to accumulate some part of their productions beyond what they consume.

The millions of interest which the depositors have received is the price paid for the use of the capital by others who require its employment. The whole amount of our national riches—the capital of this and of every other country—has been formed by the same slow but certain process of individual savings, and the accumulations of savings, stimulating new industry, and yielding new accumulations.

The consumption of any production is the destruction of its value. The production was created by industry to administer to individual wants, to be consumed, to be destroyed. When a thing capable of being consumed is produced, a value is created; when it is consumed, that value is destroyed. The general mass of riches then remains the same as it was before that production took place. If the power to produce, and the disposition to consume, were equal and constant, there could be no saving, no accumulation, no capital. If mankind, by their intelligence, their skill, their division of employments, their union of forces, had not put themselves in a condition to produce more than is consumed, while the great body of industrial undertakings is in progress, society would have been stationary,—civilization could never have advanced.

It may assist us in making the value of capital more clear, if we take a rapid view of the most obvious features of the accumulation of a highly civilized country.

The first operation in a newly settled country is what is termed to clear it. Look at a civilized country, such as England. It is cleared. The encumbering woods are cut down, the unhealthy marshes are drained. The noxious animals which were once the principal inhabitants of the land are exterminated; and their place is supplied with useful creatures, bred, nourished, and domesticated by human art, and multiplied to an extent exactly proportioned to the wants of the population. Forests remain for the produce of timber, but they are confined within the limits of their utility;—mountains “where the nibbling flocks do

stray," have ceased to be barriers between nations and districts. Every vegetable that the diligence of man has been able to transplant from the most distant regions is raised for food. The fields are producing a provision for the coming year; while the stock for immediate consumption is ample, and the laws of demand and supply are so perfectly in action, and the facilities of communication with every region so unimpeded, that scarcity seldom occurs, and famine never. Rivers have been narrowed to bounds which limit their inundations, and they have been made navigable wherever their navigation could be profitable. The country is covered with roads, with canals, and now, more especially, with railroads, which render distant provinces as near to each other for commercial purposes as neighbouring villages in less advanced countries. Science has created the electric telegraph, by which prices are equalized through every district, by an instant communication between producers and consumers. Houses, all possessing some comforts which were unknown even to the rich a few centuries ago, cover the land, in scattered farm-houses and mansions, in villages, in towns, in cities, in capitals. These houses are filled with an almost inconceivable number of conveniences and luxuries—furniture, glass, porcelain, plate, linen, clothes, books, pictures. In the stores of the merchants and traders the resources of human ingenuity are displayed in every variety of substances and forms that can exhibit the multitude of civilized wants; and in the manufactories are seen the wonderful adaptations of science for satisfying those wants at the cheapest cost. The people who inhabit such a civilized land have not only the readiest communication with each other by the means of roads and canals, but can trade by the agency of ships with all parts of the world. To carry on their intercourse amongst themselves they speak one common language, reduced to certain rules, and not broken into an embarrassing variety of unintelligible dialects. Their written communications are conveyed to the obscurest

corners of their own country, and even to the most remote lands, with prompt and unfailing regularity, and now with a cheapness which makes the poorest and the richest equal in their power to connect the distant with their thoughts by mutual correspondence. Whatever is transacted in such a populous hive, the knowledge of which can afford profit or amusement to the community, is recorded with a rapidity which is not more astonishing than the general accuracy of the record. What is more important, the discoveries of science, the elegancies of literature, and all that can advance the general intelligence, are preserved and diffused with the utmost ease, expedition, and security, so that the public stock of knowledge is constantly increasing. Lastly, the general well-being of all is sustained by laws—sometimes indeed imperfectly devised and expensively administered, but on the whole of infinite value to every member of the community; and the property of all is defended from external invasion and from internal anarchy by the power of government, which will be respected only in proportion as it advances the general good of the humblest of its subjects, by securing their capital from plunder and defending their industry from oppression.

This capital is ready to be won by the power of every man capable of work. But he must exercise this power in complete subjection to the natural laws by which every exchange of society is regulated. These laws sometimes prevent labour being instantly exchanged with capital, for an exchange necessarily requires a balance to be preserved between what one man has to supply and what another man has to demand; but in their general effect they secure to labour the certainty that there shall be abundance of capital to exchange with; and that, if prudence and diligence go together, the labourer may himself become a capitalist, and even pass out of the condition of a labourer into that of a proprietor, or one who lives upon accumulated produce. The experience of every day shows this process going forward—not in a solitary instance, as in that of the

ruined and restored man whose tale we have just told, but in the case of thriving tradesmen all around us, who were once servants. But if the labourer, or the great body of labourers were to imagine that they could obtain such a proportion of the capital of a civilized country except as exchangers, the store would instantly vanish. They might perhaps divide by force the crops in barns and the clothes in warehouses—but there would be no more crops or clothes. The principle upon which all accumulation depends, that of security of property, being destroyed, the accumulation would be destroyed. Whatever tends to make the state of society insecure, tends to prevent the employment of capital. In despotic countries, that insecurity is produced by the tyranny of one. In other countries, where the people, having been misgoverned, are badly educated, that insecurity is produced by the tyranny of many. In either case, the bulk of the people themselves are the first to suffer, whether by the outrages of a tyrant, or by their own outrages. They prevent labour by driving away to other channels the funds which support labour.

In some eastern countries, where, when a man becomes rich, his property is seized upon by the one tyrant, nobody dares to avow that he has any property. Capital is not employed ; it is hidden : and the people who have capital live not upon its profits, but by the diminution of the capital itself. In the very earliest times we hear of concealed riches. In the book of Job those who "long for death" are said to "dig for it more than for hid treasures." The tales of the east are full of allusions to money buried and money dug up. The poor woodman, in making up his miserable faggot, discovers a trap-door, and becomes rich. In India, where the rule of Mohammedan princes was usually one of tyranny, even now the search after treasure goes on. The popular mind is filled with the old traditions ; and so men dream of bags of gold to be discovered in caves and places of desolation, and they forthwith dig, till hope is banished, and the real treasure is found in

systematic industry. It was the same in the feudal times in England, when the lord tyrannized over his vassals, and no property was safe but in the hands of the strongest. In those times people who had treasure buried it. Who thinks of burying treasure now in England? In the plays and story-books which depict the manners of our early times, we constantly read of people finding bags of money. We never find bags of money now, except when a very old hoard, hidden in some time of national trouble, comes to light. So little time ago as the reign of Charles II. we read of the Secretary to the Admiralty going down from London to his country house, with all his money in his carriage, to bury it in his garden. What Samuel Pepys records of his doings with his own money, was a natural consequence of the practices of a previous time. He also chronicles, in several places of his curious diary, his laborious searches, day by day, for 7000*l.* hid in butter firkins in the cellars of the Tower of London. Why is money not hidden and not sought for now? Because people have security for the employment of it, and by the employment of it in creating new produce the nation's stock of capital goes on hourly increasing. When we read in Blackstone's "Commentaries on the Laws of England," that the concealment of treasure-trove, or found treasure, from the king, is a misdemeanour punishable by fine and imprisonment, and that it was formerly a capital offence, we at once see that this is a law no longer for our time; and we learn from this instance, as from many others, how the progress of civilization silently repeals laws which belong to another condition of the people.

When we look at the nature of the accumulated wealth of society, it is easy to see that the poorest member of it who dedicates himself to profitable labour is in a certain sense rich—rich, as compared with the unproductive and therefore poor individuals of any uncivilized tribe. The very scaffolding, if we may so express it, of the social structure, and the moral forces by which that structure was

reared, and is upheld, are to him riches. To be rich is to possess the means of supplying our wants—to be poor is to be destitute of those means. Riches do not consist only of money and lands, of stores of food or clothing, of machines and tools. The particular knowledge of any art—the general understanding of the laws of nature—the habit from experience of doing any work in the readiest way—the facility of communicating ideas by written language—the enjoyment of institutions conceived in the spirit of social improvement—the use of the general conveniences of civilized life, such as roads—these advantages, which the poorest man in England possesses or may possess, constitute individual property. They are means for the supply of wants, which in themselves are essentially more valuable for obtaining his full share of what is appropriated, than if all the productive powers of nature were unappropriated, and if, consequently, these great elements of civilization did not exist. Society obtains its almost unlimited command over riches by the increase and preservation of knowledge, and by the division of employments, including union of power. In his double capacity of a consumer and producer, the humblest man has the full benefit of these means of wealth—of these great instruments by which the productive power of labour is carried to its highest point.

But if these common advantages, these public means of society, offering so many important agents to the individual for the gratification of his wants, alone are worth more to him than all the precarious power of the savage state—how incomparably greater are his advantages when we consider the wonderful accumulations, in the form of private wealth, which are ready to be exchanged with the labour of all those who are in a condition to add to the store. It has been truly said by M. Say, a French economist, “It is a great misfortune to be poor, but it is a much greater misfortune for the poor man to be surrounded only with other poor like himself.” The reason is obvious. The productive power of labour can be carried but a very little way

without accumulation of capital. In a highly civilized country, capital is heaped up on every side by ages of toil and perseverance. A succession, during a long series of years, of small advantages to individuals unceasingly renewed and carried forward by the principle of exchanges, has produced this prodigious amount of the aggregate capital of a country whose civilization is of ancient date. This accumulation of the means of existence, and of all that makes existence comfortable, is principally resulting from the labours of those who have gone before us. It is a stock which was beyond their own immediate wants, and which was not extinguished with their lives. It is our capital. It has been produced by labour alone; physical and mental. It can be kept up only by the same power which has created it, carried to the highest point of productiveness by the arrangements of society.

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER IV.

1. Give an example of the power, in civilized life, of the principle of exchange.
2. What is the cause that only an exchanger can exist, except as a beggar, in civilized life?
3. What are the causes that make universal appropriation a general advantage?
4. What is the public effect of an accumulation of private savings in savings-banks?
5. What is the effect of the new industry stimulated by an accumulation of savings?
6. What would be the result if the power to produce and the disposition to consume were equal?
7. What is the first operation in a newly settled country?
8. Enumerate the most obvious features of the accumulation of a highly civilized country.
9. What are the general effects of the natural laws of exchange?
10. What results from the destruction of security of property?
11. What class is the first to suffer by the insecurity of property?
12. What is the effect of the insecurity of property in despotic countries?
13. Why is money not hidden now?
14. What advantages constitute individual property?
15. How does society obtain its almost unlimited command over riches?

## **CHAPTER V.**

Common interests of Capital and Labour—Labour directed by Accumulation —Capital enhanced by Labour — Balance of rights and duties — Relation of demand and supply — Money exchanges — Intrinsic and representative value of money.

THERE is an old proverb, that “When two men ride on one horse, one man must ride behind.” Capital and Labour are, as we think, destined to perform a journey together to the end of time. We have shown how they proceed on this journey. We have shown that, although Labour is the parent of all wealth, its struggles for the conversion of the rude supplies of nature into objects of utility are most feeble in their effects till they are assisted by accumulation. Before the joint interests of Labour and Capital were at all understood, they kept separate; when they only began to be understood, as we shall show, they were constantly pulling different ways, instead of giving “a long pull, a strong pull, and a pull altogether;” and even now, when these interests in many respects are still imperfectly understood, they occasionally quarrel about the conditions upon which they will continue to travel in company. In the very outset of the journey, Labour, doubtless, took the lead. In the dim morning of society Labour was up and stirring before Capital was awake. Labour did not then ride; he travelled slowly on foot through very dirty ways. Capital, at length, as slowly followed after, through the same mire, but at an humble distance from his parent. But when Capital grew into strength, he saw that there were quicker and more agreeable modes of travelling for both than Labour had found out. He procured that fleet and untiring horse Ex-

change ; and when he proposed to Labour that they should mount together, he claimed the right, and kept it, for their mutual benefit, of taking the direction of the horse. For this reason, as it appears to us, we are called upon to assign to one of the companions, according to the practice of the old Knights Templars, the privilege of sitting before the other—holding the reins, indeed, but in all respects having a community of interests, and an equality of duties, as well as rights, with his fellow-traveller.

Let us endeavour to advance another step in the illustration of these positions, by going back to the prodigal who had spent all his substance. Let us survey him at the moment when he had made the wise, and in many respects heroic, resolution to pass from the condition of a consumer into that of a producer. The story says, “The first thing that drew his attention was a heap of coals shot out of a cart on the pavement before a house. He offered himself to shovel or wheel them into the place where they were to be laid, and was employed.” Here, then, we see that the labour of this man was wholly and imperatively directed by accumulation. It was directed as absolutely by the accumulation of others as the labour of Dampier’s Moskito Indian was directed by his own accumulation. The Indian could not labour profitably—he could not obtain fish and goats. for his food, instead of seal’s flesh—till he had called into action the power which he possessed in his knife and his gun-barrel. The prodigal had no accumulation whatever of his own. He had not even the accumulation of peculiar skill in any mode of labour;—for a continual process of waste enlarges neither the mental nor physical faculties, and generally leaves the wretched being who has to pass into the new condition of a producer as helpless as the weakest child. He had nothing but the lowest power, of labouring without peculiar knowledge or skill. He had, however, an intensity and consistency of purpose which raised this humble power into real strength. He was determined never to go backward—always to go on. He

knew, too, his duties as well as his rights; and he saw that he must wholly accommodate his power to the greater power which was in action around him. When he passed into the condition of a producer, he saw that his powers and rights were wholly limited and directed by the principles necessary to advance production; and that his own share of what he assisted in producing must be measured by the laws which enabled him to produce at all. He found himself in a position where his labour was absolutely governed by the system of exchanges. No other system could operate around him, because he was in a civilized country. Had he been thrown upon a desert land without food and shelter, his labour must have been instantly and directly applied to procuring food and shelter. He was equally without food and shelter in a civilized country. But the system of exchanges being in action, he did not apply his labour directly to the production of food and lodging for himself. He added by his labour a new value to a heap of coals; he enabled another man more readily to acquire the means of warmth; and by this service, which he exchanged for "a few pence" and "a small gratuity of meat and drink," he indirectly obtained food and lodging. He conferred an additional value upon a heap of coals: and that additional value was represented by the "few pence" and "a small gratuity of meat and drink." Had the system of exchange been less advanced, that is, had society been less civilized, he would probably have exchanged his labour for some object of utility, by another and a ruder mode. He would have received a portion of the coals as the price of the labour by which he gave an additional value to the whole heap. But mark the inconvenience of such a mode of exchange. His first want was food; his next, shelter: had he earned the coals, he must have carried them about till he had found some other person ready to exchange food and lodging for coals. Such an occurrence might have happened, but it would have been a lucky accident. He could find all persons ready to

exchange food and clothes for money—because money was ready again to exchange for other articles of utility which they might require, and which they would more readily obtain by the money than by the food and clothes which our labourer had received for them. During the course of the unprofitable labour of waiting till he had found an exchanger who wanted coals, he might have perished. What then gave him the means of profitable labour, and furnished him with an article which every one was ready to receive in exchange for articles of immediate necessity? Capital in two forms. The heap of coals was capital. The coals represented a very great and various accumulation of former labour that had been employed in giving them value. The coals were altogether valueless till labour had been employed to raise them from the pit, and to convey them to the door of the man who was about to consume them. But with what various helps had this labour worked! Mere manual labour could have done little or nothing with the coals in the pit. Machines had raised them from the pit. Machines had transported them from the pit to the door of the consumer. They would have remained buried in the earth but for large accumulations of knowledge, and large accumulations of pecuniary wealth to set that knowledge in action by exchanging with it. The heap of coals represented all this accumulation; and it more immediately represented the Circulating Capital of consumable articles of utility, which had been paid in the shape of wages, at every stage of the labour exercised in raising the coals from the mine, and conveying them to the spot in which the prodigal found them laid. The coals had almost attained their highest value by a succession of labour; but one labour was still wanting to give them the highest value. They were at their lowest value when they remained unbroken in the coal-pit; they were at their highest value when they were deposited in the cellar of the consumer. For that last labour there was circulating capital ready to be exchanged. The man whose course of

production we have been tracing imparted to them this last value, and for this labour he received a "few pence" and a "gratuity of meat and drink." These consumable commodities, and the money which might be exchanged for other consumable commodities, were circulating capital. They supplied his most pressing wants with incomparably more readiness and certainty than if he had been turned loose amongst the unappropriated productions of nature, with unlimited freedom and absolute rights. In the state in which he was actually placed his rights were limited by his duties,—but this balance of rights and duties was the chief instrument in the satisfaction of his wants. Let us examine the principle a little more in detail.

An exchange was to be carried on between the owner of the coals and the man who was willing to shovel them into the owner's cellar. The labourer did not want any distinct portion of the coals, but he wanted some articles of more urgent necessity in exchange for the new value which he was ready to bestow upon the coals. The object of each exchanger was, that labour should be exchanged with capital. That object could not have been accomplished, or it would have been accomplished slowly, imperfectly, and therefore unprofitably, unless there had been interchangeable freedom and security for both exchangers,—for the exchanger of capital, and the exchanger of labour. The first right of the labourer was, that his labour should be free;—the first right of the capitalist was, that his capital should be free. The rights of each were built upon the security of the property. Could this security have been violated, it might have happened, either that the labourer should have been compelled to shovel in the coals—or, that the capitalist should have been compelled to employ the labourer to shovel them in. Had the lot of the unfortunate prodigal been cast in such a state of society as would have allowed this violation of the natural rights of the labourer and the capitalist, he would have found little accumulation to give a profitable direction to his labour. He would have

found production suspended, or languishing. There would probably have been no heap of coals wanting his labour to give them the last value ;—for the engines would have been idle that raised them from the pit, and the men would have been idle that directed the engines. The circulating capital that found wages for the men, and fuel for the engines, would have been idle, because it could not have worked with security. Accumulation, therefore, would have been suspended ;—and all profitable labour would, in consequence, have been suspended. It was the unquestionable right of the labourer that his labour should be free ; but it was balanced by the right of the capitalist that his accumulation should be secure. Could the labour have seized upon the capital, or the capital upon the labour, production would have been stopped altogether, or in part. The mutual freedom and security of labour and capital compel production to go forward ; and labour and capital take their respective stations, and perform their respective duties. altogether with reference to the laws which govern production. These laws are founded upon the natural action of the system of exchange, carrying forward all its operations by the natural action of the great principle of demand and supply. When capital and labour know how to accommodate themselves to the direction of these natural laws, they are in a healthy state with respect to their individual rights, and the rights of industry generally. They are in that state in which each is working to the greatest profit in carrying forward the business of production.

The story of the prodigal goes on to say, “ He then looked out for the next thing that might chance to offer ; and went with indefatigable industry through a succession of servile employments, in different places, of longer and shorter duration.” Here we see the principle of Demand and Supply still in active operation. “ He *looked out* for the next thing that might chance to offer.” He was ready with his supply of labour immediately that he saw a demand for it. Doubtless, the “ indefatigable industry ” with which he was ready

with his supply created a demand, and thus he had in some degree a control over the demand. But in most cases the demand went before the supply, and he had thus to watch and wait upon the demand. In many instances demand and supply exercise a joint influence and control, each with regard to the other. Pliny, the Roman naturalist, relates that in the year 454 of the building of Rome (300 years before Christ) a number of barbers came over from Sicily to shave the Romans, who till that time had worn long beards. But the barbers came in consequence of being sent for by a man in authority. The demand here distinctly went before the supply; but the supply, doubtless, acted greatly upon the demand. During a time of wild financial speculation in Paris, created by what is called the Mississippi bubble, a hump-backed man went daily into the street where the stock jobbers were accustomed to assemble, and earned money by allowing them to sign their contracts upon the natural desk with which he was encumbered. The hump-back was doubtless a shrewd fellow, and saw the difficulty under which the stock-jobbers laboured. He supplied what they appeared to want; and a demand was instantly created for his hump. He was well paid, says the story. That was because the supply was smaller than the demand. If other men with humps had been attracted by the demand, or if persons had come to the street with portable desks more convenient than the hump, the reward of his service would naturally have become less. He must have yielded to the inevitable law by which the amount of circulating capital, as compared with the number of labourers, prescribes the terms upon which capital and labour are united.

By following the direction which capital gave to his industry, the prodigal, whose course we have traced up to the point when he went into the condition of a labourer, became at length a capitalist. "He had gained, after a considerable time, money enough to purchase, in order to sell again, a few cattle, of which he had taken pains to understand the value. He speedily, but cautiously, turned

his first gains into second advantages ; retained, without a single deviation, his extreme parsimony ; and thus advanced by degrees into larger transactions and incipient wealth. The final result was that he more than recovered his lost possessions, and died an inveterate miser, worth 60,000*l.*"

He gained "money" and he "purchased" cattle. In the simple transaction which has been recorded of the first exchange of the prodigal's labour for capital, we find the circumstances which represent every exchange of labour for capital. The prodigal wanted meat and drink, and he gave labour in exchange for meat and drink ; the capitalist wanted the produce of labour—he wanted a new value bestowed upon his coals by labour—and he gave meat and drink in exchange for the labour which the prodigal had to give. But the prodigal wanted something beyond the meat and drink which was necessary for the supply of the day. He had other immediate necessities beyond food ; and he had determined to accumulate capital. He therefore required "a few pence" in addition to the "meat and drink." The capitalist held that the labour performed had conferred a value upon his property, which would be fairly exchanged for the pence in addition to the food, and he gave, therefore, in exchange, that portion of his capital which was represented by the money and by the food. This blending of one sort of consumable commodity, and of the money which represented any other consumable commodity which the money could be exchanged for, was an accident arising out of the peculiar circumstances in which the prodigal happened to be placed. In ordinary cases he would have received the money alone,—that is, he would have received a larger sum of money to enable him to exchange for meat and drink, instead of receiving them in direct payment. It is clear, therefore, that as the money represented one portion of the consumable commodities which were ready to pay for the labour employed in giving a new value to the coals, it might represent another portion —the meat, for instance, without the drink ; or it might

represent all the consumable commodities, meat, drink, lodging, clothes, fuel, which that particular labourer might want; and even represent the accumulation which he might extract out of his self-denial as to the amount of meat, drink, lodging, clothes, and fuel which he might require as a consumer; and the farthing saved out of his money-payment might be the nest-egg which was to produce the increase out of which he purchased cattle, and died a rich miser.

We may be excused for calling attention to the fact, which is a very obvious one, that if the labourer, whose story we have told, had received a portion of the coals upon which he had conferred a new value in exchange for the labour which produced that value, he would have been paid in a way very unfavourable for production. It would have required a new labour before the coals could have procured him the meat, and drink, and lodging of which he had an instant want; and he therefore must have received a larger portion of coals to compensate for his new labour, or otherwise his labour must have been worse paid. There would have been unprofitable labour, whose loss must have fallen somewhere,—either upon the capitalist or the labourer in the first instance, but upon both ultimately, because there would have been less production. All the unprofitable labour employed in bringing the exchange of the first labour for capital to maturity would have been so much power withdrawn from the efficiency of the next labour to be performed; and therefore production would have been impeded to the extent of that unprofitable labour. The same thing would have happened if, advancing a step forward in the science of exchange, the labourer had received an entire payment in meat and drink, instead of a portion of the coals, which he could have exchanged for meat and drink. Wanting lodging, he would have had to seek a person who wanted meat and drink in exchange for lodging, before he could have obtained lodging. But he had a few pence,—he had money. He had a commodity to exchange that he

might divide and subdivide as long as he pleased, whilst he was carrying on an exchange,—that is, he might obtain as much lodging as he required for an equivalent portion of his money. If he kept his money, it would not injure by keeping as the food would. He might carry it from place to place more easily than he could carry the food. He would have a commodity to exchange, whose value could not be made matter of dispute, as the value of meat and drink would unquestionably have been. This commodity would represent the same value, with little variation, whether he kept it a day, or a week, or a month, or a year; and therefore would be the only commodity whose retention would advance his design of accumulating capital with certainty and steadiness. It is evident that a commodity possessing all these advantages must have some intrinsic qualities which all exchangers would recognise—that it must be a standard of value—at once a commodity possessing real value, and a measure of all other values. This commodity exists in all commercial or exchanging nations in the shape of coined metal. The metal itself possesses a real value, which represents the labour employed in producing it; and, in the shape of coin, represents also a measure of other value, because the value of the coin has been determined by the sanction of some authority which all admit. That authority is most conveniently expressed by a Government, as the representative of the aggregate power of society. The metal itself, unless in the shape of coined money, would not represent a definite value; because the metal might be depreciated in value by the admixture of baser or inferior metals, unless it bore the impress of authority to determine its value. The exchangers of the metal for other articles of utility could not, without great loss of labour, be constantly employed in reducing it to the test of value, even if they had the knowledge requisite for so ascertaining its value. It used to cost 1000*l.* a year to the Bank of England for the wages of those who weighed the gold coin brought to the Bank; and it has been estimated that 30,000 sovereigns

pass over the Bank counter daily. A machine is now used at the Bank, which separates the full-weight sovereigns and the light ones, at the rate of 10,000 an hour. In Greece a piece of gold in the rude times was stamped with the figure of an ox, to indicate that it would exchange for an ox. In modern England, a piece of gold, called a sovereign, represents a certain weight in gold uncoined, and the Government stamp indicates its purity; whilst the perpetual separation of the light sovereigns from those of full-weight affords a security that very few light ones are in general circulation. A sovereign purchases so many pounds' weight of an ox, and a whole ox purchases so many sovereigns. The great use of the coined metal is to save labour in exchanging the ox for other commodities. The money purchases the ox, and a portion of the ox again purchases some other commodity, such as a loaf of bread from the baker, who obtains a portion of the ox through the medium of the money, which is a standard of value between the bread and the beef. Our great poetical satirist, Pope, in conducting his invective against the private avarice and political corruption of his day, imagines a state of things in which, money and credit being abolished, ministers would bribe and be bribed in kind. It is a true picture of what would be universal, if the exchanges of men resolved themselves into barter:

“A statesman's slumbers how this speech would spoil !  
‘Sir, Spain has sent a thousand jars of oil ;  
Huge bales of British cloth blockade the door ;  
A hundred oxen at your levee roar.’”

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER V.

1. How do capital and labour act with reference to each other ?
2. Is exchange procured by capital or by labour ?
3. What are the consequent rights of capital ?
4. Give an instance of labour directed by accumulation.
5. What are the duties of labour ?
6. What does labour add to capital ?

7. What does the labourer receive in exchange for that additional value?
8. Give examples of the inconveniences of a rude mode of exchange.
9. What is necessary to freedom of exchange?
10. What is the first right of the labourer?
11. What of the capitalist?
12. Upon what are these rights built?
13. What is the effect on production of an absence of the security and freedom of capital and labour?
14. Upon what are the laws of production founded?
15. Give instances of the mutual influence of demand and supply.
16. What are the advantages of a money payment over a payment in kind?
17. What is represented by the real value of money?
18. What gives a representative value to money?
19. Why would not uncoined metal represent a definite value?
20. What is the great use of coined metal?

**CHAPTER VI.**

Importance of capital to the profitable employment of labour—Contrast between the prodigal and the prudent man : the Dukes of Buckingham and Bridgewater—Making good for trade—Unprofitable consumption—War against capital in the middle ages—Evils of corporate privileges—Condition of the people under Henry VIII.

IF we have succeeded in making our meaning clear, by stating a general truth, not in an abstract form, but as brought out by various instances of the modes in which it is exhibited, we shall have led the reader to the conclusion that accumulation, or capital, is absolutely essential to the profitable employment of labour ; and that the greater the accumulation the greater the extent of that profitable employment. This truth, however, has been denied altogether by some speculative writers ;—and, what is more important, has been practically denied by the conduct of nations and individuals in the earlier state of society,—and is still denied by existing prejudices, derived from the current maxims of former days of ignorance and half-knowledge. With the speculative writers we have little to do. When Rousseau, for instance, advises governments not to secure property to its possessors, but to deprive them of all means of accumulating, it is sufficient to know that the same writer advocated the savage state, in which there should be no property, in preference to the social, which is founded on appropriation. Knowing this, and being convinced that the savage state, even with imperfect appropriation, is one of extreme wretchedness, we may safely leave such opinions to work their own cure. For it is not likely that any individual, however disposed to think that accumulation is an evil,

would desire, by destroying accumulation, to pass into the condition, described by John Tanner, of a constant encounter with hunger in its most terrific forms: and seeing, therefore, the fallacy of such an opinion, he will also see that, if he partially destroys accumulation, he equally impedes production, and equally destroys his share in the productive power of capital and labour working together for a common good in the social state.

But, without going the length of wishing to destroy capital, there are many who think that accumulation is a positive evil, and that consumption is a positive benefit: and, therefore, that economy is an evil, and waste a benefit. The course of a prodigal man is by many still viewed with considerable admiration. He sits up all night in frantic riot—he consumes whatever can stimulate his satiated appetite—he is waited upon by a crowd of unproductive and equally riotous retainers—he breaks and destroys everything around him with an unsparing hand—he rides his horses to death in the most extravagant attempts to wrestle with time and space; and when he has spent all his substance in these excesses, and dies an outcast and a beggar, he is said to have been a hearty fellow, and to have “made good for trade.” When, on the contrary, a man of fortune economizes his revenue—lives like a virtuous and reasonable being, whose first duty is the cultivation of his understanding—eats and drinks with regard to his health—keeps no more retainers than are sufficient for his proper comfort and decency—breaks and destroys nothing—has respect to the inferior animals, as well from motives of prudence as of mercy—and dies without a mortgage on his lands; he is said to have been a stingy fellow who did not know how to “circulate his money.” To “circulate money,” to “make good for trade,” in the once common meaning of the terms, is for *one* to consume unprofitably what, if economized, would have stimulated production in a way that would have enabled *hundreds*, instead of one, to consume profitably. Let us offer two historical examples of these two opposite

modes of making good for trade, and circulating money. The Duke of Buckingham, "having been possessed of about 50,000*l.* a year, died in 1687, in a remote inn in Yorkshire, reduced to the utmost misery."\* After a life of the most wanton riot, which exhausted all his princely resources, he was left at the last hour, under circumstances which are well described in the following lines by Pope :—

" In the worst inn's worst room, with mat half hung,  
 The floor of plaster, and the walls of dung,  
 On once a flock bed, but repair'd with straw,  
 With tape-tied curtains never meant to draw,  
 The George and Garter dangling from that bed  
 Where tawdry yellow strove with dirty red ;  
 Great Villiers lies.  
 No wit to flatter left of all his store,  
 No fool to laugh at, which he valued more,  
 There, victor of his health, of fortune, friends,  
 And fame, this lord of useless thousands ends."

Contrast the course of this unhappy man with that of the Duke of Bridgewater, who devoted his property to really "making good for trade," by constructing the great canals which connect Manchester with the coal countries and with Liverpool. The Duke of Buckingham lived in a round of sensual folly : the Duke of Bridgewater limited his personal expenditure to 400*l.* a year, and devoted all the remaining portion of his revenues to the construction of a magnificent work of the highest public utility. The one supported a train of cooks and valets and horse-jockeys ; the other called into action the labour of thousands, and employed in the direction of that labour the skill of Brindley, one of the greatest engineers that any country has produced. The one died without a penny, loaded with debt, leaving no trace behind him but the ruin which his waste had produced : the other bequeathed almost the largest property in Europe to his descendants, and opened a channel for industry which afforded, and still affords, employment to thousands.

\* Rufhead's Pope.

When a mob amused themselves by breaking windows, as was once a common recreation on an illumination night, by way of showing the amount of popular intelligence, some were apt to say they have "made good for trade." Is it not evident that the capital which was represented by the unbroken windows was really so much destroyed of the national riches when the windows were broken?—for if the windows had remained unbroken, the capital would have remained to stimulate the production of some new object of utility. The glaziers, indeed, replaced the windows; but there having been a destruction of windows, there must have been a necessary retrenchment in some other outlay, that would have afforded a benefit to the consumer. Doubtless, when the glazier is called into activity by a mob breaking windows, some other trade suffers; for the man who has to pay for the broken windows must retrench somewhere, and, if he has less to lay out, some other person has less to lay out. The glass-maker, probably, makes more glass at the moment; but he does so to exchange with the capital that would otherwise have gone to the maker of clothes or of furniture: and, there being an absolute destruction of the funds for the maintenance of labour, by an unnecessary destruction of what former labour has produced, trade generally is injured to the extent of the destruction. Some now say that a fire makes good for trade. The only difference of evil between the fire which destroys a house, and the mob which breaks the windows, is, that the fire absorbs capital for the maintenance of trade, or labour, in the proportion of a hundred to one when compared with the mob. Some say that war makes good for trade. The only difference of pecuniary evil (the moral evils admit of no comparison) between the fire and the war is, that the war absorbs capital for the maintenance of trade or labour, in the proportion of a million to a hundred when compared with the fire. If the incessant energy of production were constantly repressed by mobs, and fires, and wars, the end would be that consumption would altogether exceed

production ; and that then the producers and the consumers would both be starved into wiser courses, and perceive that nothing makes good for trade but profitable industry and judicious expenditure. Prodigality devotes itself too much to the satisfaction of present wants : avarice postpones too much the present wants to the possible wants of the future. Real economy is the happy measure between the two extremes ; and that only "makes good for trade," because, while it carries on a steady demand for industry, it accumulates a portion of the production of a country to stimulate new production. That judicious expenditure consists in

"The sense to value riches, with the art  
T' enjoy them."

The fashion of "making good for trade" by unprofitable consumption is a relic of the barbarous ages. In the twelfth century a count of France commanded his vassals to plough up the soil round his castle, and he sowed the ground with coins of gold, to the amount of fifteen hundred guineas, that he might have all men talk of his magnificence. Piqued at the lordly prodigality of his neighbour, another noble ordered thirty of his most valuable horses to be tied to a stake and burnt alive, that he might exhibit a more striking instance of contempt for accumulation. In the latter part of the fourteenth century, a Scotch noble, Colin Campbell, on receiving a visit from the O'Neiles of Ireland, ostentatiously burnt down his house at Inverary upon their departure ; and an Earl of Athol pursued the same course in 1528, after having entertained the papal legate, upon the pretence that it was "the constant habitude of the highlanders to set on fire in the morning the place which had lodged them the night before." When the feudal lords had so little respect for their own property, it was not likely that they would have much regard for the accumulation of others. The Jews, who were the great capitalists of the middle ages, and who really merit the gratitude of Europeans for their avarice, as that almost alone enabled any accumulation to

go forward, and any production to increase, were, as it is well known, persecuted in every direction by the crown, by the nobles, by the people. When a solitary farmer or abbot attempted to accumulate corn, which accumulation could alone prevent the dreadful famines invariably resulting from having no stock that might be available upon a bad harvest, the people burnt the ricks of the provident men, by way of lessening the evils of scarcity. The consequence was, that no person thought of accumulating at all, and that the price of wheat often rose, just before the harvest, from five shillings a quarter to five pounds.

We are accustomed to read and talk of "merry England," but we sometimes fail to think how much real suffering lay beneath the surface of the merriment. Herrick, one of our charming old lyric poets, has sung the glories of the hock-cart—the cart that bore the full sheaves to the empty barn:—

"The harvest swains and wenches bound  
For joy, to see the hock-cart crown'd ;  
About the cart hear how the rout  
Of rural younglings raise the shout,  
Pressing before, some coming after,  
Those with a shout, and these with laughter.  
Some bless the cart, some kiss the sheaves,  
Some prank them up with oaken leaves ;  
Some cross the fill-horse, some with great  
Devotion stroke the home-borne wheat."

Assuredly there was joy and there was devotion; for the laden cart made the difference between plenty and starvation. Before that harvest-home came there had been many an aching heart in the village hovels, for there was no store to equalise prices, and no communication to make the abundance of one district—much less of one country—mitigate the scarcity of another. It was not a question of the rise or the fall of a penny or two in the price of a loaf of bread; it was a question of bread or no bread.

During these dark periods the crown carried on the war against capital with an industry that could not be exceeded

by that of the nobles or the people. Before the great charter the Commons complained that King Henry seized upon whatever was suited to his royal pleasure—horses, implements, food, anything that presented itself in the shape of accumulated labour. In the reign of Henry III. a statute was passed to remedy excessive distresses; from which it appeared that it was no unfrequent practice for the king's officers to take the opportunity of seizing the farmer's oxen at the moment when they were employed in ploughing, or, as the statute says, “winning the earth”—taking them off, and starving them to death, or only restoring them with new and enormous exactions for their keep. Previous to the Charter of the Forest no man could dig a marl-pit on his own ground, lest the king's horses should fall into it when he was hunting. As late as the time of James I. we find, from a speech of the great Lord Bacon, that it was a pretty constant practice of the king's purveyors to extort large sums of money by threatening to cut down favourite trees which grew near a mansion-house or in avenues. Despotism, in all ages, has depopulated the finest countries; by rendering capital insecure, and therefore unproductive; insomuch that Montesquieu lays it down as a maxim, that lands are not cultivated in proportion to their fertility, but in proportion to their freedom. In the fifteenth century, in England, we find sums of money voted for the restoration of decayed towns and villages. Just laws would have restored them much more quickly and effectually. The state of agriculture was so low that the most absurd enactments were made to compel farmers to till and sow their own lands, and calling upon every man to plant at least forty beans. All the laws for the regulation of labourers, at the same period, assumed that they should be compelled to work, and not wander about the country,—just in the same way that farmers should be compelled to sow and till. It is perfectly clear that the towns would not have been depopulated, and gone to decay, if the accumulation of capital had not been obstructed by insecurity and wasted by ignor-

ance, and that the same insecurity and the same waste rendered it necessary to assume that the farmer would not till and sow, and the labourer would not labour, without compulsion. The natural stimulus to industry was wanting, and therefore there was no industry, or only unprofitable industry. The towns decayed, the country was uncultivated—production languished—the people were all poor and wretched; and the government dreamt that acts of parliament and royal ordinances could rebuild the houses and cultivate the land, when the means of building and cultivation, namely, the capital of the country, was exhausted by injustice producing insecurity.

But if the king, the nobles, and the people of the middle ages conspired together, or acted at least as if they conspired, to prevent the accumulation of capital, the few capitalists themselves, by their monstrous regulations, which still throw some dark shadows over our own days, prevented that freedom of industry without which capital could not accumulate. Undoubtedly the commercial privileges of corporations originally offered some barriers against the injustice of the crown and of the nobility; but the good was always accompanied with an evil, which rendered it to a certain extent valueless. Where these privileges gave security, they were a good; where they destroyed freedom, they were an injury. Instead of encouraging the intercourse between one trade and another, they encircled every trade with the most absurd monopolies and exclusive privileges. Instead of rendering commerce free between one district and another, they, even in the same country, encompassed commerce with the most harassing restrictions, which separated county from county, and town from town, as if seas ran between them. If a man of Coventry came to London with his wares, he was encountered at every step with the privileges of companies; if the man of London sought to trade at Coventry, he was obstructed by the same corporate rights, preventing either the Londoner or the Coventry man trading with advantage. The revenues of

every city were derived from forfeitures upon trades, almost all established upon the principle that, if one trade became too industrious or too clever, it would be the ruin of another trade. Every trade was fenced round with secrets ; and the commonest trade, as we know from the language of an apprentice's indenture, was called an "art and mystery." All these follies went upon the presumption that "one man's gain is another man's loss," instead of vanishing before the truth, that, in proportion as the industry of all men is free, so will it be productive ; and that production on all sides ensures a state of things in which every exchanger is a gainer, and no one a loser.

It is not to be wondered at that, while such opinions existed, the union of capital and labour should have been very imperfect ; and that, while the capitalists oppressed the labourers, in the same way that they oppressed each other, the labourers should have thought it not unreasonable to plunder the capitalists. It is stated by Harrison, an old writer of credit,\* that during the single reign of Henry VIII. seventy-two thousand thieves were hanged in England. No fact can exhibit in a stronger light the universal misery that must have existed in those days. The whole kingdom did not contain half a million grown-up males, so that, considering that the reign of Henry VIII. extended over two generations, about one man in ten must have been, to use the words of the same historian, "devoured and eaten up by the gallows." In the same reign the first statute against Egyptians (gipsies) was passed. These people went from place to place in great companies —spoke a cant language, which Harrison calls Pedler's French—and were subdivided into fifty-two different classes of thieves. The same race of people prevailed throughout Europe. Cervantes, the author of "Don Quixote," says of the Egyptians or Bohemians, that they seem to have been born for no other purpose than that of pillaging. While this universal plunder went forward, it is evident that the

\* Preface to the *Chronicles of Holinshed*.

insecurity of property must have been so great that there could have been little accumulation, and therefore little production. Capital was destroyed on every side ; and because profitable labour had become so scarce by the destruction of capital, one-half of the community sought to possess themselves of the few goods of the other half, not as exchangers but as robbers. As the robbers diminished the capital, the diminution of capital increased the number of robbers ; and if the unconquerable energy of human industry had not gone on producing, slowly and painfully indeed, but still producing, the country would have soon fallen back to the state in which it was a thousand years before, when wolves abounded more than men. One great cause of all this plunder and misery was the oppression of the labourers.

---

## QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER VI.

1. What is absolutely essential to the profitable employment of labour ?
2. Give an instance of an unprofitable consumer.
3. Give an instance of a profitable economizer.
4. Give historical examples of these opposite courses.
5. Why is the destruction of property injurious to trade ?
6. Give instances of unprofitable consumption in the feudal ages.
7. What were the great obstacles to accumulation in the middle ages ?
8. What caused the decay of towns ?
9. How did the capitalists themselves impede accumulation ?
10. Upon what principle were these restrictions founded ?
11. What was the result of the oppression of labourers by capitalists ?
12. What resulted from the destruction of capital by plunder ?
13. What again resulted from the diminution of capital ?

**CHAPTER VII.**

Rights of labour—Effects of slavery on production—Condition of the Anglo-Saxons—Progress of freedom in England—Laws regulating labour—Wages and prices—Poor-law—Law of settlement.

ADAM SMITH, in his great work, “The Wealth of Nations,” says, “The property which every man has in his own labour, as it is the original foundation of all other property, so it is the most sacred and inviolable. The patrimony of a poor man lies in the strength and dexterity of his hands; and to hinder him from employing this strength and dexterity in what manner he thinks proper, without injury to his neighbour, is a plain violation of this most sacred property.” The right of property, in general, has been defined by another writer, M. Say, to be “the exclusive faculty guaranteed to a man, or body of men, to dispose, at their own pleasure, of that which belongs to them.” There can be no doubt that labour is entitled to the same protection as a property that capital is entitled to. There can be no doubt that the labourer has rights over his labour which no government and no individual should presume to interfere with. There can be no doubt that, as an exchanger of labour for capital, the labourer ought to be assured that the exchange shall in all respects be as free as the exchanges of any other description of property. His rights as an exchanger are, that he shall not be compelled to part with his property, by any arbitrary enactments, without having as ample an equivalent as the general laws of exchange will afford him; that he shall be free to use every just means, either by himself or by union with others, to obtain such an equivalent; that he shall be at full liberty to offer that property in the best market that he can find, without being

limited to any particular market; that he may give to that property every modification which it is capable of receiving from his own natural or acquired skill, without being narrowed to any one form of producing it. In other words, natural justice demands that the working-man shall work when he please, and be idle when he please, always providing that, if he make a contract to work, he shall not violate that engagement by remaining idle; that no labour shall be forced from him, and no rate of payment for that labour prescribed by statutes or ordinances; that he shall be free to obtain as high wages as he can possibly get, and unite with others to obtain them, always providing that in his union he does not violate that freedom of industry in others which is the foundation of his own attempts to improve his condition; that he may go from place to place to exchange his labour without being interfered with by corporate rights or monopolies of any sort, whether of masters or workmen; and that he may turn from one employment to the other, if he so think fit, without being confined to the trade he originally learnt, or may strike into any line of employment without having regularly learnt it at all. When the working-man has these rights secured to him by the sanction of the laws, and the concurrence of the institutions and customs of the country in which he lives, he is in the condition of a free exchanger. He has the full, uninterrupted, absolute possession of his property. He is upon a perfect legal equality with the capitalist. He may labour cheerfully with the well-founded assurance that his labour will be profitably exchanged for the goods which he desires for the satisfaction of his wants, as far as laws and institutions can so provide. In a word, he may assure himself that, if he possesses anything valuable to offer in exchange for capital, the capital will not be fenced round with any artificial barriers, or invested with any unnatural preponderance, to prevent the exchange being one of perfect equality, and therefore a real benefit to both exchangers.

We are approaching this desirable state in England.

Indeed, there is scarcely any legal restriction acted upon which prevents the exchange of labour with capital being completely unembarrassed. Yet it is only within a few centuries that the working-men of this country have emerged from the condition of actual slaves into that of free labourers; it is only a few hundred years ago since the cultivator of the ground, the domestic servant, and sometimes even the artisan, was the absolute property of another man—bought, sold, let, without any will of his own, like an ox or a horse—producing nothing for himself—and transmitting the miseries of his lot to his children. The progress of civilization destroyed this monstrous system, in the same way that at the present day it is destroying it in Russia and other countries where slavery still exists. But it was by a very slow process that the English slave went forward to the complete enjoyment of the legal rights of a free exchanger. The transition exhibits very many years of gross injustice, of bitter suffering, of absurd and ineffectual violations of the natural rights of man; and of struggles between the capitalist and the labourer, for exclusive advantages, perpetuated by ignorant lawgivers, who could not see that the interest of all classes of producers is one and the same. We may not improperly devote a little space to the description of this dark and evil period. We shall see that while such a struggle goes forward—that is, while security of property and freedom of industry are not held as the interchangeable rights of the capitalist and the labourer—there can be little production and less accumulation. Wherever positive slavery exists—wherever the labourers are utterly deprived of their property in their labour, and are compelled to dispose of it without retaining any part of the character of voluntary exchangers—there are found idleness, ignorance, and unskilfulness; industry is enfeebled—the oppressor and the oppressed are both poor—there is no national accumulation. The existence of slavery amongst the nations of antiquity was a great impediment to their progress in the arts of life. The community,

in such nations, was divided into a caste of nobles called citizens, and a caste of labourers called slaves. The Romans were rich, in the common sense of the word, because they plundered other nations ; but they could not produce largely when the individual spirit to industry was wanting. The industry of the freemen was rapine : the slaves were the producers. No man will work willingly when he is to be utterly deprived of the power of disposing at his own will of the fruits of his labour ; no man will work skilfully when the same scanty pittance is doled out to each and all, whatever be the difference in their talents and knowledge. Wherever the freedom of industry is thus violated, property cannot be secure. If Rome had encouraged free labourers, instead of breeding menial slaves, it could not have happened that the thieves, who were constantly hovering round the suburbs of the city, like vultures looking out for carrion, should have been so numerous that, during the insurrection of Catiline, they formed a large accession to his army. But Rome had to encounter a worse evil than that of the swarms of highwaymen who were ready to plunder whatever had been produced. Production itself was so feeble when carried on by the labour of slaves, that Columella, a writer on rural affairs, says the crops continued so gradually to fall off that there was a general opinion that the earth was growing old and losing its power of productiveness. Wherever slavery exists at the present day, there we find feeble production and national weakness. Poland, the most prolific corn-country in Europe, is unquestionably the poorest country. Poland has been partitioned, over and over again, by governments that knew her weakness ; and she has been said to have fallen "without a crime." That is not correct. Her "crime" was, and is, the slavery of her labourers. There is no powerful class between the noble and the serf or slave ; and whilst this state of things endures, Poland can never be independent, because she can never be industrious, and therefore never wealthy.

England, as we have said, once groaned under the evils

of positive slavery. The Anglo-Saxons had what they called "live money," such as sheep and slaves. To this cause may be doubtless attributed the easy conquest of the country by the Norman invaders, and the oppression that succeeded that conquest. If the people had been free, no king could have swept away the entire population of a hundred thousand souls that dwelt in the country between the Humber and the Tees, and converted a district of sixty miles in length into a dreary desert, which remained for years without houses and without inhabitants. This the Conqueror did. In the reign of Henry II. the slaves of England were exported in large numbers to Ireland. These slaves, or villeins, as is the case in Russia and Poland at the present day, differed in the degree of the oppression which was exercised towards them. Some, called "villeins in gross," were at the absolute disposal of the lord—transferable from one owner to another, like a horse or a cow. Others, called "villeins regardant," were annexed to particular estates, and were called upon to perform whatever agricultural offices the lord should demand from them, not having the power of acquiring any property, and their only privilege being that they were irremovable except with their own consent. These distinctions are not of much consequence, for, by a happy combination of circumstances, the bondmen of every kind, in the course of a century or two after the Conquest, were rapidly passing into the condition of free labourers. But still capital was accumulated so slowly, and labour was so unproductive, that the land did not produce the tenth part of a modern crop; and the country was constantly exposed to the severest inflictions of famine, whenever a worse than usual harvest occurred.

In the reign of Edward III. the woollen manufacture was introduced into England. It was at first carried on exclusively by foreigners; but as the trade extended new hands were wanting, and the bondmen of the villages began to run away from their masters, and take refuge in the towns. If the slave could conceal himself successfully from the

pursuit of his lord for a year and a day, he was held free for ever. The constant attraction of the bondmen to the towns, where they could work for hire, gradually emboldened those who remained as cultivators to assert their own natural rights. The nobility complained that the villeins refused to perform their accustomed services, and that corn remained uncut upon the ground. At length, in 1351, the 25th year of Edward III., the class of free labourers was first recognised by the legislature; and a statute was passed, oppressive indeed, and impolitic, but distinctly acknowledging the right of the labourer to assume the character of a free exchanger. Slavery, in England, was not wholly abolished by statute till the time of Charles II.: it was attempted in vain to be abolished in 1526. As late as the year 1775, the colliers of Scotland were accounted *adscripti glebae*—that is, as belonging to the estate or colliery where they were born and continued to work. It is not necessary for us further to notice the existence of villeinage or slavery in these kingdoms. Our business is with the slow progress of the establishment of the rights of free labourers—and this principally to show that, during the long period when a contest was going forward between the capitalists and the labourers, industry was comparatively unproductive. It was not so unproductive, indeed, as during the period of absolute slavery; but as long as any man was compelled to work, or to continue at work, or to receive a fixed price, or to remain in one place, or to follow one employment, labour could not be held to be free—property could not be held to be secure—capital and labour could not have cordially united for production—accumulation could not have been certain and rapid.

In the year 1349 there was a dreadful pestilence in England, which swept off large numbers of the people. Those of the labourers that remained, following the natural course of the great principle of demand and supply, refused to serve, unless they were paid double the wages which they had received five years before. Then came the

"Statute of Labourers," of 1351, to regulate wages; and this statute enacted what should be paid to haymakers, and reapers, and thrashers; to carpenters, and masons, and tilers, and plasterers. No person was to quit his own village if he could get work at these wages; and labourers and artificers flying from one district to another in consequence of these regulations were to be imprisoned.

Good laws, it has been said, execute themselves. When legislators make bad laws, there requires a constant increase of vigilance and severity, and constant attempts at reconciling impossibilities, to allow such laws to work at all. In 1360 the Statute of Labourers was confirmed with new penalties, such as burning in the forehead with the letter F those workmen who left their usual abodes. Having controlled the wages of industry, the next step was for these blind lawgivers to determine how the workmen should spend their scanty pittance; and, accordingly, in 1363, a statute was passed to compel workmen and all persons not worth forty shillings to wear the coarsest cloth called russet, and to be served once a day with meat, or fish, and the offal of other victuals. We were not without imitators of such absurdities in other nations. An ordinance of the King of France, in 1461, determined that good and fat meat should be sold to the rich, while the poor should be allowed only to buy the lean and stinking.

While the wages of labour were fixed by statute, the price of wheat was constantly undergoing the most extraordinary fluctuations, ranging from 2*s.* a quarter to 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* It was perfectly impossible that any profitable industry could go forward in the face of such unjust and ridiculous laws. In 1376 the Commons complained that masters were *obliged* to give their servants higher wages to prevent their running away; and that the country was covered with *staf-strikers* and *sturdy rogues*, who robbed in every direction. The villages were deserted by the labourers resorting to the towns, where commerce knew how to evade

the destroying regulations of the statutes; and to prevent the total decay of agriculture, labourers were not allowed to move from place to place without letters patent: any labourer not producing such a letter, was to be imprisoned and put in the stocks. If a lad had been brought up to the plough till he was twelve years of age, he was compelled to continue in husbandry all his life; and in 1406 it was enacted that all children of parents not possessed of land should be brought up in the occupation of their parents. While the legislature, however, was passing these abominable laws, it was most effectually preparing the means for their extermination. Children were allowed to be sent to school in any part of the kingdom. When the light of education dawned upon the people, they could not long remain in the "darkness visible" that succeeded the night of slavery.

When the industry of the country was nearly annihilated by the laws regulating wages, it was found out that something like a balance should be preserved between wages and prices; and the magistrates were therefore empowered twice a year to make proclamation, according to the price of provisions, how much every workman should receive. The system, however, would not work well. In 1496, a new statute of wages was passed, the preamble of which recited that the former statutes had not been executed, because "the remedy by the said statutes is not very perfect." Then came a new remedy; that is, a new scale of wages for all trades; regulations for the hours of work and of rest; and penalties to prevent labour being transported from one district to another. As a necessary consequence of a fixed scale for wages, came another fixed scale for regulating the prices of provisions; till at last, in the reign of Henry VIII., lawgivers began to open their eyes to the folly of their proceedings, and the preamble of a statute says, "that dearth, scarcity, good cheap, and plenty of cheese, butter, capons, hens, chickens, and other victuals necessary for man's sustenance, happeneth, riseth,

and chanceth, of so many and divers occasions, that it is very hard and difficile to put any certain prices to any such things." Yet they went on with new scales, in spite of the hardness of the task, till at last some of the worst of these absurd laws were swept from the statute-book. The justices, whose principal occupation was to balance the scale of wages and labour, complained incessantly of the difficulty of the attempt; and the statute of the 5th Elizabeth acknowledged that these old laws "could not be carried into execution without the great grief and burden of the poor labourer and hired man." Still new laws were enacted to prevent the freedom of industry working out plenty for capitalists as well as labourers; and at length, in 1601, a general assessment was directed for the support of the impotent poor, and for setting the unemployed poor to work. The capitalists at length paid a grievous penalty for their two centuries of oppression; and had to maintain a host of paupers, that had gradually filled the land during these unnatural contests. It would be perhaps incorrect to say, that these contests alone produced the paupers that required this legislative protection in the reign of Elizabeth; but certainly the number of those paupers would have been far less, if the laws of industry had taken their healthy and natural course,—if capital and labour had gone hand in hand to produce abundance for all, and fairly to distribute that abundance in the form of profits and wages, justly balanced by the steady operation of demand and supply in a free and extensive market.

The whole of these absurd and iniquitous laws, which had succeeded the more wicked laws of absolute slavery, proceeded from a struggle on the part of the capitalists in land against the growing power and energy of free labour. If the capitalists had rightly understood their interests they would have seen that the increased production of a thriving and happy peasantry would have amply compensated them for all the increase of wages to which they were compelled to submit; and that at every step by which the

condition of their labourers was improved their own condition was also improved. If, then, capital had worked naturally and honestly for the encouragement of labour, there would have been no lack of labourers; and it would not have been necessary to pass laws to compel artificers, under the penalty of the stocks, to assist in getting in the harvest (5 Eliz.). If the labourers in agriculture had been adequately paid, they would not have fled to the towns; and if they had not been liable to cruel punishments for the exercise of this their natural right, the country would not have been covered with “valiant rogues and sturdy beggars.”

The Law of Settlement, which, after years of discussion, has at last been effectually modified, had been the curse of industry for nearly two centuries. All the best men of past times have cried out against its oppression. Roger North, soon after its enactment, in the time of Charles II., clearly enough showed its general operation:—“Where most work is, there are fewest people, and è *contra*. In Norfolk, Suffolk, and Essex, a labourer hath 12d. a day; in Oxfordshire, 8d.; in the North, 6d., or less; and I have been credibly informed that in Cornwall a poor man will be thankful for 2d. a day and poor diet: and the value of provisions in all these places is much the same. Whence should the difference proceed? Even from plenty and scarcity of work and men, which happens crossgrainedly, so that one cannot come to the other.” When men honestly went from home to seek work, they were called vagrants, and were confounded with the common beggars, for whom every severity was provided by the law—the stocks, the whip, the pillory, the brand. It was all in vain. Happy would it have been for the land if the law had left honest industry free, and in the case of dishonesty had applied itself to more effectual work than punishments and terror. One of our great judges, Sir Matthew Hale, said, long ago, what we even now too often forget—“The prevention of poverty, idleness, and a loose and disorderly education,

even of poor children, would do more good to this kingdom than all the gibbets, and cauterizations, and whipping-posts, and jails in this kingdom." The whole scheme of legislation for the poor was to set the poor to work by forced contributions from capital. If the energy of the people had not found out how to set themselves to work in spite of bad laws, we might have remained a nation of slaves and paupers.

---

## QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER VII.

1. What is the right of property?
2. In what does the property of a poor man consist?
3. Of what is the labourer an exchanger?
4. What are the rights of a labourer with regard to the property which he exchanges?
5. What is the condition of the labourer who has these rights secured to him by the laws?
6. Is it a benefit or not to the capitalist that this should be the condition of the labourer?
7. Is there at present acted upon in England any legal restriction on the free exchange of labour and capital?
8. What was formerly the condition of the English labourer?
9. What are the results of a disregard of the rights of labour?
10. Give an instance of this in the nations of antiquity.
11. Give an instance of this in a modern nation.
12. What was the cause of the easy conquest of England by the Normans?
13. What was the effect on slavery of the introduction of the woollen manufacture into England?
14. When was the class of free labourers first recognized by the English legislature?
15. When was slavery wholly abolished by statute?
16. Mention some laws regulating labour.
17. What was the effect of these laws on prices and on industry?
18. Mention some legislative attempts to preserve the balance between wages and prices.
19. What penalty did the capitalists incur by these oppressive laws?
20. What was the effect on industry of the Law of Settlement?

***CHAPTER VIII.***

Possessions of the different classes in England—Condition of Colchester in 1301—Tools, stock-in-trade, furniture, &c.—Supply of food—Comparative duration of human life—Want of facilities for commerce—Plenty and civilization not productive of effeminacy—Colchester in the present day.

IT will be desirable to exhibit something like an average view of the extent of the possessions of all classes of society, and especially of the middling and labouring classes, in this country, at a period when the mutual rights of capitalists and labourers were so little understood as in the fourteenth century. We have shown how, at that time, there was a general round of oppression, resulting from ignorance of the proper interests of the productive classes; and it would be well also to show that during this period of disunion and contest between capital and labour, each plundering the other, and both plundered by arbitrary power, whether of the nobles or the crown, production went on very slowly and imperfectly, and that there was little to plunder and less to exchange. It is difficult to find the materials for such an inquiry. There is no very accurate record of the condition of the various classes of society before the invention of printing; and even after that invention we must be content to form our conclusions from a few scattered facts not recorded for any such purpose as we have in view, but to be gathered incidentally from slight observations which have come down to us. Yet enough remains to enable us to form a picture of tolerable accuracy; and in some points to establish conclusions which cannot be disputed. It is in the same way that our knowledge of the former state of the physical world must be derived from relics of that former

state, to which the inquiries and comparisons of the present times have given an historical value. We know, for instance, that the animals of the southern countries once abounded in these islands, because we occasionally find their bones in quantities which could not have been accumulated unless such animals had been once native to these parts ; and the remains of sea-shells upon the tops of hills now under the plough show us that even these heights have been heaved up from the bosom of the ocean. In the same way, although we have no complete picture of the state of property at the period to which we allude, we have evidence enough to describe that state from records which may be applied to this end, although preserved for a very different object.

In the reign of Edward III., Colchester, in Essex, was considered the tenth city in England in point of population. It then paid a poll-tax for 2955 lay persons. In 1301, about half a century before, the number of inhabitant housekeepers was 390 ; and the whole household furniture, utensils, clothes, money, cattle, corn, and every other property found in the town, was valued at 518*l.* 16*s.* 0*4d.* This valuation took place on occasion of a subsidy or tax to the crown, to carry on a war against France ; and the particulars, which are preserved in the Rolls of Parliament, exhibit with great minuteness the classes of persons then inhabiting that town, and the sort of property which each respectively possessed. The trades exercised in Colchester were the following ;—baker, barber, blacksmith, bowyer, brewer, butcher, carpenter, carter, cobler, cook, dyer, fisherman, fuller, furrier, girdler, glass-seller, glover, linen-draper, mercer and spice-seller, miller, mustard and vinegar seller, old clothes seller, saddler, tailor, tanner, tiler, weaver, wood-cutter, and wool-comber. If we look at a small town of the present day, where such a variety of occupations are carried on, we shall find that each tradesman has a considerable stock of commodities, abundance of furniture and utensils, clothes in plenty, some plate, books,

and many articles of convenience and luxury to which the most wealthy dealers and mechanics of Colchester of the fourteenth century were utter strangers. That many places at that time were much poorer than Colchester there can be no doubt : for here we see the division of labour was pretty extensive, and that is always a proof that production is going forward, however imperfectly. We see, too, that the tradesmen were connected with manufactures in the ordinary use of the term ; or there would not have been the dyer, the glover, the linen-draper, the tanner, the weaver, and the wool-comber. There must have been a demand for articles of foreign commerce, too, in this town, or we should not have had the spice-seller. Yet, with all these various occupations, indicating considerable profitable industry when compared with earlier stages in the history of this country, the whole stock of the town was valued at little more than 500*l.* Nor let it be supposed that this smallness of capital can be accounted for by the difference in the standard of money ; although that difference is considerable. We may indeed satisfy ourselves of the small extent of the capital of individuals at that day, by referring to the inventory of the articles upon which the tax we have mentioned was laid at Colchester.

The whole stock of a carpenter's tools was valued at one shilling. They altogether consisted of two broad axes, an adze, a square, and a navegor or spoke-shave. Rough work must the carpenter have been able to perform with these humble instruments ; but then let it be remembered that there was little capital to pay him for finer work, and that very little fine work was consequently required. The three hundred and ninety housekeepers of Colchester then lived in mud huts, with a rough door and no chimney. Harrison, speaking of the manners of a century later than the period we are describing, says, "There were very few chimneys even in capital towns : the fire was laid to the wall, and the smoke issued out at the roof, or door, or window. The houses were wattled, and plastered over with clay ; and all

the furniture and utensils were of wood. The people slept on straw pallets, with a log of wood for a pillow." When this old historian wrote, he mentions the erection of chimneys as a modern luxury. We had improved little upon our Anglo-Saxon ancestors in the articles of chimneys. In their time Alcuin, an abbot who had ten thousand vassals, writes to the emperor at Rome that he preferred living in his smoky house to visiting the palaces of Italy. This was in the ninth century. Five hundred years had made little difference in the chimneys of Colchester. The nobility had hangings against the walls to keep out the wind, which crept in through the crevices which the builder's bungling art had left: the middle orders had no hangings. Shakspeare alludes to this rough building of houses even in his time ;—

" Imperial Cæsar, dead and turn'd to clay,  
Might stop a hole to keep the wind away."

Even the nobility went without glass to their windows in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. "Of old time," says Harrison, "our country houses, instead of glass, did use much lattice, and that made either of wicker or fine rifts of oak, in checkerwise." When glass was introduced, it was for a long time so scarce that at Alnwick Castle, in 1567, the glass was ordered to be taken out of the windows, and laid up in safety, when the lord was absent.

The mercer's stock-in-trade at Colchester was much upon a level with the carpenter's tools. It was somewhat various, but very limited in quantity. The whole comprised a piece of woollen cloth, some silk and fine linen, flannel, silk purses, gloves, girdles, leather purses, and needlework; and it was altogether valued at 3*l*. There appears to have been another dealer in cloth and linen in the town, whose store was equally scanty. We were not much improved in the use of linen a century later. We learn from the Earl of Northumberland's household book, whose family was large enough to consume one hundred and sixty gal-

lons of mustard during the winter with their salt meat, that only seventy ells of linen were allowed for a year's consumption. In the fourteenth century none but the clergy and nobility wore white linen. As industry increased, and the cleanliness of the middle classes increased with it, the use of white linen became more general ; but even at the end of the next century, when printing was invented, the paper-makers had the greatest difficulty in procuring rags for their manufacture ; and so careful were the people of every class to preserve their linen, that night-clothes were never worn. Linen was so dear that Shakspere makes Falstaff's shirts eight shillings an ell. The more sumptuous articles of a mercer's stock were treasured in rich families from generation to generation ; and even the wives of the nobility did not disdain to mention in their wills a particular article of clothing, which they left to the use of a daughter or a friend. The solitary old coat of a baker came into the Colchester valuation ; nor is this to be wondered at, when we find that even the soldiers at the battle of Bannockburn, about this time, were described by an old rhymer as "well near all naked."

The household furniture found in use amongst the families of Colchester consisted, in the more wealthy, of an occasional bed, a brass pot, a brass cup, a gridiron, and a rug or two, and perhaps a towel. Of chairs and tables we hear nothing. We learn from the *Chronicles of Brantôme*, a French historian of these days, that even the nobility sat upon chests in which they kept their clothes and linen. *Harrison*, whose testimony we have already given to the poverty of these times, affirms, that if a man in seven years after marriage could purchase a flock bed, and a sack of chaff to rest his head upon, he thought himself as well lodged as the lord of the town, "who peradventure lay seldom on a bed entirely of feathers." An old tenure in England, before these times, binds the vassal to find straw even for the king's bed. The beds of flock, the few articles of furniture, the absence of chairs and tables, would have

been of less consequence to the comfort and health of the people, if they had been clean ; but cleanliness never exists without a certain possession of domestic conveniences. The people of England, in the days of which we are speaking, were not famed for their attention to this particular. Thomas à Becket was reputed extravagantly nice, because he had his parlour strewed every day with clean straw. As late as the reign of Henry VIII., Erasmus, a celebrated scholar of Holland, who visited England, complains that the nastiness of the people was the cause of the frequent plagues that destroyed them ; and he says, “their floors are commonly of clay, strewed with rushes, under which lie unmolested a collection of beer, grease, fragments, bones, spittle, excrements of dogs and cats, and of everything that is nauseous.” The elder Scaliger, another scholar who came to England, abuses the people for giving him no convenience to wash his hands. Glass vessels were scarce, and pottery was almost wholly unknown. The Earl of Northumberland, whom we have mentioned, breakfasted on trenchers and dined on pewter. While such universal slovenliness prevailed as Erasmus has described, it is not likely that much attention was generally paid to the cultivation of the mind. Before the invention of printing, at the time of the valuation of Colchester, books in manuscript, from their extreme costliness, could be purchased only by princes. The royal library of Paris, in 1378, consisted of nine hundred and nine volumes,—an extraordinary number. The same library now comprises upwards of four hundred thousand volumes. But it may fairly be assumed that, where one book could be obtained in the fourteenth century by persons of the working classes, four hundred thousand may be as easily obtained now. Here then was a privation which existed five hundred years ago, which debarred our ancestors from more profit and pleasure than the want of beds, and chairs, and linen ; and probably, if this privation had continued, and men therefore had not cultivated their understandings, they would not have

learnt to give any really profitable direction to their labour, and we should still have been as scantily supplied with furniture and clothes as the good people of Colchester of whom we have been speaking.

Let us see what accumulated supply, or capital, of food the inhabitants of England had five centuries ago. Possessions in cattle are the earliest riches of most countries. We have seen that cattle was called “live money;” and it is supposed that the word capital, which means stock generally, was derived from the Latin word “capita,” or heads of beasts. The law-term “chattels” is also supposed to come from cattle. These circumstances show that cattle were the chief property of our ancestors. Vast herds of swine constituted the great provision for the support of the people ; and these were principally fed, as they are even now in the New Forest, upon acorns and beech-mast. In Domesday Book, a valuation of the time of William the Conqueror, it is always mentioned how many hogs each estate can maintain. Hume the historian, in his Essays, alluding to the great herds of swine described by Polybius as existing in Italy and Greece, concludes that the country was thinly peopled and badly cultivated ; and there can be no doubt that the same argument may be applied to England in the fourteenth century, although many swine were maintained in forests preserved for fuel. The hogs wandered about the country in a half-wild state, destroying, probably, more than they profitably consumed ; and they were badly fed, if we may judge from a statute of 1402, which alleges the great decrease of fish in the Thames and other rivers, by the practice of feeding hogs with the fry caught at the weirs. The hogs’ flesh of England was constantly salted for the winter’s food. The people had little fodder for cattle in the winter, and therefore they only tasted fresh meat in the summer season. The mustard and vinegar seller formed a business at Colchester, to furnish a relish for the pork. Stocks of salted meat are mentioned in the inventory of many houses there, and live hogs as commonly. But salted

flesh is not food to be eaten constantly, and with little vegetable food, without severe injury to the health. In the early part of the reign of Henry VIII., not a cabbage, carrot, turnip, or other edible root, grew in England. Two or three centuries before, certainly, the monasteries had gardens with a variety of vegetables; but nearly all the gardens of the laity were destroyed in the wars between the houses of York and Lancaster. Harrison speaks of wheaten bread as being chiefly used by the gentry for their own tables; and adds that the artificer and labourer are "driven to content themselves with horse-corn, beans, peason, oats, tares, and lentils." There is no doubt that the average duration of human life was at that period not one-half as long as at the present day. The constant use of salted meat, with little or no vegetable addition, doubtless contributed to the shortening of life, to say nothing of the large numbers constantly swept away by pestilence and famine. Till lemon-juice was used as a remedy for scurvy amongst our seamen, who also are compelled to eat salted meat without green vegetables, the destruction of life in the navy was something incredible. Admiral Hosier buried his ships' companies twice during a West India voyage in 1726, partly from the unhealthiness of the Spanish coast, but chiefly from the ravages of scurvy. Bad food and want of cleanliness swept away the people of the middle ages, by ravages upon their health that the limited medical skill of those days could never resist. Matthew Paris, an historian of that period, states that there were in his time twenty thousand hospitals for lepers in Europe.

The slow accumulation of capital in the early stages of the civilization of a country is in a great measure caused by the indisposition of the people to unite for a common good in public works, and the inability of governments to carry on these works, when their principal concern is war, foreign or domestic. The foundations of the civilization of this country were probably laid by our Roman conquerors, who carried roads through the island, and taught

us how to cultivate our soil. Yet improvement went on so slowly that, even a hundred years after the Romans were settled here, the whole country was described as marshy. For centuries after the Romans made the Watling-street and a few other roads, one district was separated from another by the general want of these great means of communication. Bracton, a law-writer of the period we have been so constantly mentioning, holds that, if a man being at Oxford engage to pay money the same day in London, he shall be discharged of his contract, as he undertakes a physical impossibility. We find, as late as the time of Elizabeth, that her Majesty wou'd not stay to breakfast at Cambridge because she had to travel twelve miles before she could come to the place, Hinchinbrook, where she desired to sleep. Where there were no roads, there could be few or no markets. An act of parliament of 1272 says that the religious houses should not be compelled to *sell* their provisions—a proof that there were no considerable stores except in the religious houses. The difficulty of navigation was so great, that William Long-sword, son of Henry II., returning from France, was during three months tossed upon the sea before he could make a port in Cornwall. Looking, therefore, to the want of commerce proceeding from the want of communication—looking to the small stock of property accumulated to support labour—and looking, as we have previously done, to the incessant contests between the small capital and the misdirected labour, both feeble, because they worked without skill—we cannot be surprised that the poverty of which we have exhibited a faint picture should have endured for several centuries, and that the industry of our forefathers must have had a long and painful struggle before it could have bequeathed to us such magnificent accumulations as we now enjoy.

The writers who lived at the periods when Europe was slowly emerging from ignorance and poverty, through the first slight union of capital and labour as voluntary ex-

changers, complain of the increase of comforts as indications of the growing luxury and effeminacy of the people. Garrison says, "In times past men were contented to dwell in houses builded of sallow, willow, plum-tree, or elm; so that the use of oak was dedicated to churches, religious houses, princes' palaces, noblemen's lodgings, and navigation. But now, these are rejected, and nothing but oak any whit regarded. And yet see the change; for when our houses were builded of willow, then had we oaken men; but now that our houses are made of oak, our men are not only become willow, but many, through Persian delicacy crept in among us, altogether of straw, which is a sore alteration. In those days, the courage of the owner was a sufficient defence to keep the house in safety; but now, the assurance of the timber, double doors, locks, and bolts, must defend the man from robbing. Now have we many chimneys, and our tenderlings complain of rheums, catarrhs, and poses. Then had we none but rere-dosses, and our heads did never ache." These complaints go upon the same principle that made it a merit in Epictetus, the Greek philosopher, to have had no door to his hovel. We think he would have been a wiser man if he had contrived to have a door. A story is told of a Highland chief, Sir Evan Cameron, that himself and a party of his followers being benighted, and compelled to sleep in the open air, when his son rolled up a ball of snow and laid his head upon it for a pillow, the rough old man kicked it away, exclaiming, "What, sir! are you turning effeminate?" We doubt whether Sir Evan Cameron and his men were braver than the English officers who fought at Waterloo; and yet many of these marched from the ball-room at Brussels in their holiday attire, and won the battle in silk stockings. It is an old notion that plenty of the necessaries and conveniences of life renders a nation feeble. We are told that the Carthaginian soldiers whom Hannibal carried into Italy were suddenly rendered effeminate by the abundance which they found around them at Capua. The commissariat of modern nations goes upon

another principle, and believes that unless the soldier has plenty of food and clothing he will not fight with alacrity and steadiness. The half-starved soldiers of Henry V. won the battle of Agincourt; but it was not because they were half-starved, but because they roused their native courage to cut their way out of the peril by which they were surrounded. The Russians of our time had a notion that the English could not fight on land, because for forty years we had been a commercial instead of a military nation. The battle of the Alma corrected their mistake. When we hear of ancient nations being enervated by abundance, we may be sure that the abundance was almost entirely devoured by a few tyrants, and that the bulk of the people were rendered weak by the destitution which resulted from the unnatural distribution of riches. We read of the luxury of the court of Persia—the pomp of the seraglios, and of the palaces—the lights, the music, the dancing, the perfumes, the silks, the gold, and the diamonds. The people are held to be effeminate. The Russians, from the hardy north, can lay the Persian monarchy any day at their feet. Is this national weakness caused by the excess of production amongst the people, giving them so extravagant a command over the necessaries and luxuries of life that they have nothing to do but drink of the full cup of enjoyment? Mr. Fraser, an English traveller, thus describes the appearance of a part of the country which he visited in 1821:—"The plain of Yezid Khaust presented a truly lamentable picture of the general decline of prosperity in Persia. Ruins of large villages thickly scattered about with the skeleton-like walls of caravansaries and gardens, all telling of better times, stood like *memento moris* (remembrances of death) to kingdoms and governments; and the whole plain was dotted over with small mounds, which indicate the course of cannauts (artificial streams for watering the soil), once the source of riches and fertility, now all choked up and dry; for there is neither man nor cultivation to require their aid." Was it the luxury of the people which pro-

duced this decay—the increase of their means of production—their advancement in skill and capital; or some external cause which repressed production, and destroyed accumulation both of outward wealth and knowledge? “Such is the character of their rulers,” says Mr. Fraser, “that the only measure of their demands is the power to extort on one hand, and the ability to give or retain on the other.” Where such a system prevails, all accumulated labour is concealed, for it would otherwise be plundered. It does not freely and openly work to encourage new labour. Burckhardt, the traveller of Nubia, saw a farmer who had been plundered of everything by the pacha, because it came to the ears of the savage ruler that the unhappy man was in the habit of eating wheaten bread; and that, he thought, was too great a luxury for a subject. If such oppressions had not long ago been put down in England, we should still have been in the state of Colchester in the fourteenth century. When these iniquities prevailed, and there was neither freedom of industry nor security of property—when capital and labour were not united—when all men consequently worked unprofitably, because they worked without division of labour, accumulation of knowledge, and union of forces—there was universal poverty, because there was feeble production. Slow and painful were the steps which capital and labour had to make before they could emerge, even in part, from this feeble and degraded state. But that they have made a wonderful advance in five hundred years will not be difficult to show. It may assist us in this view if we compare the Colchester of the nineteenth century with the Colchester of the fourteenth, in a few particulars.

In the reign of Edward III. Colchester numbered 359 houses of mud, without chimneys, and with latticed windows. In the reign of Queen Victoria, at the present time, 1866 (judging from the census of 1861), it has 5000 houses, inhabited by a population of 25,000 males and females. The houses of the better class, those rented at ten pounds a

year and upwards, are commonly built of brick, and slated or tiled ; secured against wind and weather ; with glazed windows and with chimneys ; and generally well ventilated. The worst of these houses are supplied, as fixtures, with a great number of conveniences, such as grates, and cupboards, and fastenings. To many of such houses gardens are attached, wherein are raised vegetables and fruits that kings could not command two centuries ago. Houses such as these are composed of several rooms—not of one room only, where the people are compelled to eat and sleep and perform every office, perhaps in company with pigs and cattle—but of a kitchen, and often a parlour, and several bedrooms. These rooms are furnished with tables, and chairs, and beds, and cooking-utensils. There is ordinarily, too, something for ornament and something for instruction ;—a piece or two of china, silver spoons, books, and not unfrequently a watch or clock. The useful pottery is abundant and of really elegant forms and colours ; drinking-vessels of glass are universal. The inhabitants are not scantily supplied with clothes. The females are decently dressed, having a constant change of linen, and gowns of various patterns and degrees of fineness. Some, even of the humbler classes, are not thought to exceed the proper appearance of their station if they wear silk. The men have decent working habits, strong shoes and hats, and a respectable suit for Sundays, of cloth often as good as is worn by the highest in the land. Every one is clean ; for no house above the few hoyels which still deform the country is without soap and bowls for washing, and it is the business of the females to take care that the linen of the family is constantly washed. The children, very generally, receive instruction in some public establishment ; and when the labour of the day is over, the father thinks the time unprofitably spent unless he burns a candle to enable him to read a book or the newspaper. The food which is ordinarily consumed is of the best quality. Wheaten bread is no longer confined to the rich ; animal food is not necessarily salted, and salt

meat is used principally as a variety ; vegetables of many sorts are plenteous in every market, and these by a succession of care are brought to higher perfection than in the countries of more genial climate from which we have imported them ; the productions too of distant regions, such as spices, and coffee, and tea, and sugar, are universally consumed almost by the humblest in the land. Fuel, also, of the best quality, is abundant and comparatively cheap.

If we look at the public conveniences of a modern English town, we shall find the same striking contrast. Water is brought not only into every street, but into every house ; the dust and dirt of a family is regularly removed without bustle or unpleasantness ; the streets are paved, and lighted at night ; roads in the highest state of excellence connect the town with the whole kingdom, and by means of railroads a man can travel several hundred miles in a few hours, and more readily than he could ten miles in the old time ; and canal and sea navigation transport the weightiest goods with the greatest facility from each district to the other, and from each town to the other, so that all are enabled to apply their industry to what is most profitable for each and all. Every man, therefore, may satisfy his wants, according to his means, at the least possible expense of the transport of commodities. Every tradesman has a stock ready to meet the demand ; and thus the stock of a very moderately wealthy tradesman of the Colchester of the present day is worth more than all the stock of all the different trades that were carried on in the same place in the fourteenth century. The condition of a town like Colchester—a flourishing market-town in an agricultural district—offers a fair point of comparison with a town of the time of Edward III.

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER VIII.

1. What was the value of the whole property of Colchester in 1801 ?
2. What was the number of inhabitant housekeepers ?
3. At what was the whole stock of a carpenter's tools valued ?

4. Of what did these tools consist ?
5. What was a mercer's stock-in-trade ?
6. At what was it valued ?
7. Of what did the household furniture consist ?
8. What proportion did the books within the reach of the working class at that time bear to the number within their reach now ?
9. What would have been the probable result if this privation had continued ?
10. What accumulated supply of food had the inhabitants of England five centuries ago ?
11. What is the effect of the constant use of salt meat ?
12. What are two great causes of the slow accumulation of capital in the early stages of the civilization of a country ?
13. What is one great impediment to commerce resulting from these causes ?
14. How was the increase of comforts viewed in early times ?
15. What is the real cause of the national weakness of countries such as Persia ?
16. Mention some points of contrast between Colchester in 1301 and at the present day.
17. Mention some of the public conveniences of a modern English town.

**CHAPTER IX.**

Certainty the stimulus to industry—Effects of insecurity—Instances of unprofitable labour—Former notions of commerce—National and class prejudices, and their remedy.

TWO of the most terrific famines that are recorded in the history of the world occurred in Egypt—a country where there is greater production, with less labour, than is probably exhibited in any other region. The principal labourer in Egypt is the river Nile, whose periodical over-flowings impart fertility to the thirsty soil, and produce in a few weeks that abundance which the labour of the husbandman might not hope to command if employed during the whole year. But the Nile is a workman that cannot be controlled and directed, even by capital, the great controller and director of all work. The influences of heat, and light, and air, are pretty equal in the same places. Where the climate is most genial, the cultivators have least labour to perform in winning the earth; where it is least genial, the cultivators have most labour. The increased labour balances the small natural productiveness. But the inundation of a great river cannot be depended upon like the light and heat of the sun. For two seasons the Nile refused to rise, and labour was not prepared to compensate for this refusal; the ground refused to produce; the people were starved.

We mention these famines of Egypt to show that *certainty* is the most encouraging stimulus to every operation of human industry. We know that production as invariably follows a right direction of labour, as day succeeds to night. We believe that it will be dark to-night and light again to-morrow, because we know the general laws which govern light and darkness, and because our experience shows us

that those laws are constant and uniform. We know that if we plough, and manure, and sow the ground, a crop will come in due time, varying indeed in quantity according to the season, but still so constant upon an average of years, that we are justified in applying large accumulations and considerable labour to the production of this crop. It is this certainty that we have such a command of the productive powers of nature as will abundantly compensate us for the incessant labour of directing those forces, which has during a long course of industry heaped up our manifold accumulations, and which enables production annually to go forward to an extent which even half a century ago would have been thought impossible. The long succession of labour, which has covered this country with wealth, has been applied to the encouragement of the productive forces of nature, and the restraint of the destroying. No one can doubt that, the instant the labour of man ceases to direct those productive natural forces, the destroying forces immediately come into action. Take the most familiar instance—a cottage whose neat thatch was never broken, whose latticed windows were always entire, whose white-washed walls were ever clean, round whose porch the honeysuckle was trained in regulated luxuriance, whose garden bore nothing but what the owner planted. Remove that owner. Shut up the cottage for a year, and leave the garden to itself. The thatched roof is torn off by the wind and devoured by mice, the windows are driven in by storms, the walls are soaked through with damp and are crumbling to ruin, the honeysuckle obstructs the entrance which it once adorned, the garden is covered with weeds which years of after-labour will have difficulty to destroy :—

“ It was a plot  
Of garden-ground run wild, its matted weeds  
Mark'd with the steps of those whom, as they pass'd,  
The gooseberry-trees that shot in long lank slips,  
Or currants, hanging from their leafless stems  
In scanty strings, had tempted to o'erleap  
The broken wall.”

Apply this principle upon a large scale. Let the productive energy of a country be suspended through some great cause which prevents its labour continuing in a profitable direction. Let it be overrun by a conqueror, or plundered by domestic tyranny of any kind, so that capital ceases to work with security. The fields suddenly become infertile, the towns lose their inhabitants, the roads grow to be impassable, the canals are choked up, the rivers break down their banks, the sea itself swallows up the land. Shakspere, a great political reasoner as well as a great poet, has described such effects in that part of "Henry V." where the Duke of Burgundy exhorts the rival kings to peace :—

" Let it not disgrace me,  
If I demand, before this royal view,  
What rub, or what impediment, there is,  
Why that the naked, poor, and mangled peace,  
Dear nurse of arts, plenties, and joyful births,  
Should not, in this best garden of the world,  
Our fertile France, put up her lovely visage ?  
Alas ! she hath from France too long been chas'd ;  
And all her husbandry doth lie on heaps,  
Corrupting in its own fertility.  
Her vine, the merry cheerer of the heart,  
Unpruned, dies ; her hedges even-pleach'd,  
Like prisoners wildly overgrown with hair  
Put forth disorder'd twigs : her fallow leas,  
The darnel, hemlock, and rank fumitory  
Doth root upon ; while that the coulter rusts,  
That should deracinate such savagery :  
The even mead, that erst brought sweetly forth  
The freckled cowslip, burnet, and green clover,  
Wanting the scythe, all uncorrected, rank,  
Conceives by idleness ; and nothing teems  
But hateful docks, rough thistles, kecksies, burs,  
Losing both beauty and utility :  
And as our vineyards, fallows, meads, and hedges,  
Defective in their natures, grow to wildness ;  
Even so our houses, and ourselves and children,  
Have lost, or do not learn, for want of time,  
The sciences that should become our country."

We have heard it said that Tenterden steeple was the cause

of Goodwin Sands. The meaning of the saying is, that the capital which was appropriated to keep out the sea from that part of the Kentish coast was diverted to the building of Tenterden steeple; and there being no funds to keep out the sea, it washed over the land.\* The Goodwin Sands remain to show that man must carry on a perpetual contest to keep in subjection the forces of nature, which, as is said of fire, one of the forces, are good servants but bad masters. But these examples show, also, that in the social state our control of the physical forces of nature depends upon the right control of our own moral forces. There was injustice, doubtless, in misappropriating the funds which restrained the sea from devouring the land. Till men know that they shall work with justice on every side, they work feebly and unprofitably. England did not begin to accumulate largely and rapidly till the rights both of the poor man and the rich were to a certain degree established—till industry was free and property secure. Our great dramatic poet has described this security as the best characteristic of the reign of Queen Elizabeth :—

“In her days every man shall eat in safety  
Under his own vine what he plants.”

Shakspere derived his image from the Bible, where a state of security is frequently indicated by direct allusion to a man sitting under the shade of his own fig-tree or his own vine. In the days of Elizabeth, as compared with previous eras, there was safety, and a man might

“ sing  
The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours.”

We have gone on constantly improving these blessings. But let any circumstances again arise which may be powerful enough to destroy, or even molest, the freedom of industry and the security of property, and we should work once more without certainty. The elements of prosperity

\* Grey's Notes to Hudibras.

would not be constant and uniform. We should work with the apprehension that some hurricane of tyranny, no matter from what power, would arise, which would sweep away accumulation. When that hurricane did not rise, we might have comparative abundance, like the people of Egypt during the inundation of the Nile. We then should have an inundation of tranquillity. But if the tranquillity were not present—if lawless violence stood in the place of justice and security—we should be like the people of Egypt when the Nile did not overflow. We should suffer the extremity of misery; and that possible extremity would produce an average misery, even if tranquillity did return, because security had not returned. We should, if this state of things long abided, by degrees go back to the condition of Colchester in the fourteenth century, and thence to the universal marsh of two thousand years ago. The place where London stands would be, as it once was, a wilderness for howling wolves. The few that produced would again produce laboriously and painfully, without skill and without division of labour, because without accumulation; and it would probably take another thousand years, if men again saw the absolute need of security, to re-create what security has accumulated for our present use.

From the moment that the industry of this country began to work with security, and capital and labour applied themselves in union—perhaps not a perfect union, but still in union—to the great business of production, they worked with less and less expenditure of unprofitable labour. They continued to labour more and more profitably, as they laboured with knowledge. The labour of all rude nations, and of all uncultivated individuals, is labour with ignorance. Peter the wild boy, whom we have already mentioned, could never be made to perceive the right direction of labour, because he could not trace it through its circuitous courses for the production of utility. He could work under control, but, if left to himself, he would not work profitably. Having been trusted to fill a

cart with manure, he laboured with diligence till the work was accomplished ; but no one being at hand to direct him, he set to work as diligently to unload the cart again. He thought, as too many think even now, that the good was in the labour, and not in the results of the labour. The same ignorance exhibits itself in the unprofitable labour and unprofitable application of capital, even of persons far removed beyond the half-idiocy of Peter the wild boy. In the thirteenth century many of the provinces of France were overrun with rats, and the people, instead of vigorously hunting the rats, were persuaded to carry on a process against them in the ecclesiastical courts ; and there, after the cause of the injured people and the injuring rats was solemnly debated, the rats were declared cursed and excommunicated if they did not retire in six days. The historian does not add that the rats obeyed the injunction ; and doubtless the farmers were less prepared to resort to the profitable labour of chasing them to death when they had paid the ecclesiastics for the unprofitable labour of their excommunication. There is a curious instance of unprofitable labour given in a book on the Coal Trade of Scotland, written as recently as 1812. The people of Edinburgh had a passion for buying their coals in immense lumps, and, to gratify this passion, the greatest care was taken not to break the coals in any of the operations of conveying them from the pit to the cellar of the consumer. A wall of coals was first built within the pit, another wall under the pit's mouth, another wall when they were raised from the pit, another wall in the waggon, which conveyed them to the port where they were shipped, another wall in the hold of the ship, another wall in the cart which conveyed them to the consumer, and another wall in the consumer's cellar ; and the result of these seven different buildings-up and takings-down was, that after the consumer had paid thirty per cent. more for these square masses of coal than for coal shovelled together in large and small pieces, his servant had daily to break

the large coals to bits to enable him to make any use of them. It seems extraordinary that such waste of labour and capital should have existed amongst a highly acute and refined community within the last fifty years. They, perhaps, thought they were making good for trade, and therefore submitted to the evil; while the Glasgow people, on the contrary, by saving thirty per cent. in their coals had that thirty per cent. to bestow upon new enterprises of industry, and for new encouragements to labour.

The unprofitable applications of capital and labour which the early history of the civilization of every people has to record, and which, amongst many, have subsisted even whilst they held themselves at the height of refinement, have been fostered by the ignorance of the great, and even of the learned, as to the causes which, advancing production or retarding it, advanced or retarded their own interests, and the interests of all the community. Princes and statesmen, prelates and philosophers, were equally ignorant of

“ What makes a nation happy, and keeps it so;  
What ruins kingdoms, and lays cities flat.”

It was enough for them to consume; they thought it beneath them to observe even, much less to assist in, the direction of production. This was ignorance as gross as that of Peter the wild boy, or the excommunication of rats, It has always been the fashion of ignorant greatness to despise the mechanical arts. The pride of the Chinese mandarins was to let their nails grow as long as their fingers, to show that they never worked. Even European nobles once sought the same absurd distinction. In France, under the old monarchy, no descendant of a nobleman could embark in trade without the highest disgrace; and the principle was so generally recognised as just, that a French writer, even as recently as 1758, reproaches the sons of the English nobility for the contrary practice, and asks, with an air of triumph, how can a man be fit to serve his country in Parliament after having meddled with

such paltry concerns as those of commerce? Montesquieu, a writer in most respects of enlarged views, holds that it is beneath the dignity of governments to interfere with such trumpery things as the regulation of weights and measures. Society might have well spared the interference of government with weights and measures if they had been content to leave all commerce equally free. But, in truth, the regulation of weights and measures is almost a solitary exception to the great principle which governments ought to practise, of not interfering, or interfering little, with commerce.

Louis XIV. did not waste more capital and labour by his ruinous wars, and by his covering France with fortifications and palaces, than by the perpetual interferences of himself and his predecessors with the freedom of trade, which compelled capital and labour to work unprofitably. The naturally slow progress of profitable industry is rendered more slow by the perpetual inclination of those in authority to divert industry from its natural and profitable channels. It was therefore wisely said by a committee of merchants to Colbert, the prime minister of France in the reign of Louis XIV., when he asked them what measures government could adopt to promote the interests of commerce,— “Let us alone, permit us quietly to manage our own business.” It is undeniable that the interests of all are best promoted when each is left free to attend to his own interests, under the necessary social restraints which prevent him doing a positive injury to his neighbour. It is thus that agriculture and manufactures are essentially allied in their interests; that unrestrained commerce is equally essential to the real and permanent interests of agriculture and manufactures; that capital and labour are equally united in their interests, whether applied to agriculture, manufactures, or commerce; that the producer and the consumer are equally united in their most essential interest, which is, that there should be cheap production. While these principles are not understood at all, and while they are imperfectly understood, as they still are by many

classes and individuals, there must be a vast deal of unprofitable expenditure of capital, a vast deal of unprofitable labour, a vast deal of bickering and heart-burning between individuals who ought to be united, and classes who ought to be united, and nations who ought to be united ; and as long as it is not felt by all that their mutual rights are understood and will be respected, there is a feeling of insecurity which more or less affects the prosperity of all. The only remedy for these evils is the extension of knowledge. Louis XV. proclaimed to the French that the English were their "véritables ennemis," their true enemies. When knowledge is triumphant, it will be found that there are no "véritables ennemis," either among nations, or classes, or individuals. The prejudices by which nations, classes, and individuals are led to believe that the interest of one is opposed to the interest of another, are, nine times out of ten, as utterly absurd as the reason which a Frenchman once gave for hating the English—which was, "that they poured melted butter on their roast veal;" and this was not more ridiculous than the old denunciation of the English against the French, that "they ate frogs, and wore wooden shoes." When the world is disabused of the belief that the wealth of one nation, class, or individual must be created by the loss of another's wealth, then, and then only, will all men steadily and harmoniously apply to produce and to enjoy—to acquire prosperity and happiness—lifting themselves to the possession of good.

"By Reason's light, on Resolution's wings."

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER IX.

1. What is the peculiarity in the production and labour of Egypt?
2. In most countries by what is natural unproductiveness balanced?
3. What is the result in Egypt of the Nile failing to rise?
4. What is the most encouraging stimulus to labour?
5. What invariably follows a right direction of labour?

6. What is the result when productive natural forces cease to be directed by labour?
7. On what else does our control of the physical forces of nature depend?
8. If the freedom of industry and the security of property in England were to be destroyed or molested, what would be the effect on the prosperity of the country?
9. What have been the causes of the diminished expenditure of unprofitable labour in this country?
10. What is the character of labour of all rude nations and uncultivated individuals?
11. Mention some instances of unprofitable labour and unprofitable application of capital.
12. By what have the unprofitable applications of capital and labour in the early stages of civilization been fostered?
13. Mention some instances of this.
14. What are the results of a misunderstanding of the true interests of capital and labour?
15. What is the only remedy for these evils?

## PART II.

CAPITAL, LABOUR, AND SKILL, WORKING TOGETHER FOR  
PRODUCTION.

## CHAPTER X.

Employment of machinery in manufactures and agriculture—Erroneous notions formerly prevalent on this subject—Its advantages to the labourer—Spade-husbandry—The *principle* of machinery—Machines and tools—Change in the condition of England consequent on the introduction of machinery—Modern New Zealanders and ancient Greeks—Hand-mills and water-mills.

ONE of the most striking effects of the want of knowledge producing disunions amongst mankind that are injurious to the interests of each and all, is the belief which still exists amongst many well-meaning but unreflecting persons, that the powers and arrangements which Capital has created and devised for the advancement of production are injurious to the great body of working-men in their character of producers. The great forces by which capital and labour now work,—forces which are gathering strength every day,—are accumulation of skill and division of employments. It will be for us to show that the applications of science to the manufacturing arts have the effect of ensuring cheap production and increased employment. These applications of science are principally displayed in the use of MACHINERY; and we shall endeavour to prove that, although individual labour may be partially displaced, or unsettled for a time, by the use of this cheaper and better power than unassisted manual labour, all are great gainers

by the general use of that power. Through that power principally all possess, however poor they may be, many of the comforts which make the difference between man in a civilized and man in a savage state ; and further, that in consequence of machinery having rendered productions of all sorts cheaper, and therefore caused them to be more universally purchased, it has really increased the demand for that manual labour, which it appears to some, reasoning only from a few instances, it has a tendency to diminish.

In the year 1827 a Committee of the House of Commons was appointed to examine into the subject of Emigration. The first person examined before that Committee was Joseph Forster, a working weaver of Glasgow. He told the Committee that he and many others, who had formed themselves into a society, were in great distress ; that numbers of them worked at the *hand-loom* from eighteen to nineteen hours a day, and that their earnings, at the utmost, did not amount to more than seven shillings a week, and that sometimes they were as low as four shillings. That twenty years before that time they could readily earn a pound a week by the same industry ; and that as *power-loom* weaving had increased, the distress of the hand-weavers also had increased in the same proportion. The Committee then put to Joseph Foster the following questions, and received the following answers :—

“ Q. Are the Committee to understand that you attribute the insufficiency of your remuneration for your labour to the introduction of machinery ?

“ A. Yes.

“ Q. Do you consider, therefore, that the introduction of machinery is objectionable ?

“ A. We do not. The weavers in general, of Glasgow and its vicinity, do not consider that machinery can or ought to be stopped, or put down. They know perfectly well that machinery must go on, that it will go on, and that it is impossible to stop it. They are aware that every implement

of agriculture or manufacture is a portion of machinery, and, indeed, everything that goes beyond the teeth and nails (if I may use the expression) is a machine. I am authorized by the majority of our society, to say that I speak their minds, as well as my own, in stating this."

It is worthy of note how the common sense of this working-man, nearly forty years ago, saw clearly the great principle which overthrows, in the outset, all unreasoning hostility to machinery. Let us follow out his principle.

Amongst the many accounts which the newspapers in December, 1830, gave of the destruction of machinery by agricultural labourers, we observed that in the neighbourhood of Aylesbury, a band of mistaken and unfortunate men destroyed all the machinery of many farms, *down even to the common drills*. The men conducted themselves, says the county newspaper, with civility; and such was their consideration, that they moved the machines out of the farm-yards, to prevent injury arising to the cattle from the nails and splinters that flew about while the machinery was being destroyed. They *could not make up their minds* as to the propriety of destroying a horse-churn, and therefore that machine was passed over.

Five and thirty years have made a remarkable difference in the feelings, even in the least informed, with regard to machinery. The majority of the people now know, as the weavers in Glasgow knew in 1827, that "machinery must go on, that it will go on, and that it is impossible to stop it." We, therefore, adapting this volume to the improved times in which it is now published, think it needless to urge, as fully as we once did, any of the notions of the labourers of Aylesbury to their inevitable conclusions. It is sufficient briefly to show, that, if the labourers had been successful in their career, had broken all those ingenious implements which have aided in rendering British agriculture the most perfect in the world, they would not have advanced a single step in obtaining more employment, or being better paid.

We will suppose, then, that the farmer has yielded to this violence ; that the violence has had the effect which it was meant to have upon him ; and that he takes on all the hands which were out of employ, to thrash and winnow, to cut chaff, to plant with a dibber instead of with a drill, to do all the work, in fact, by the dearest mode instead of the cheapest. But he employs *just as many people as are absolutely necessary*, and no more, for getting his corn ready for market, and for preparing, in a slovenly way, for the seed-time. In a month or two the victorious destroyers find that not a single hand the more of them is really employed. And why not ? There are no drainings going forward, the hedges and ditches are neglected, the dung-heap is not turned over, the chalk is not fetched from the pit ; in fact, all those labours are neglected which belong to a state of agricultural industry which is brought to perfection. *The farmer has no funds to employ to such labours* ; he is paying a great deal more than he paid before for the same, or a less, amount of work, because his labourers choose to do certain labours with rude tools instead of perfect ones.

We will imagine that this state of things continues till the next spring. All this while the price of grain has been rising. Many farmers have ceased to employ capital at all upon the land. The neat inventions, which enabled them to make a living out of their business, being destroyed, they have abandoned the business altogether. A day's work will now no longer purchase as much bread as before. The horse, it might be probably found out, was as great an enemy as the drill-plough ; for, as a horse will do the field-work of six men, there must be six men employed, without doubt, instead of one horse. But how would the fact turn out ? If the farmer still went on, in spite of all these losses and crosses, he might employ men in the place of horses, but not a single man more than the number that would work at the price of the keep of one horse. To do the work of each horse turned adrift, he would require six men ; but he would only have about a shilling a-day to

divide between those six—the amount which the horse consumed.

As the year advanced, and the harvest approached, it would be discovered that not one-tenth of the land was sown: for although the ploughs were gone, because the horses were turned off, and there was plenty of *labour* for those who chose to labour for its own sake, or at the price of horse-labour, this amazing employment for human hands, somehow or other, would not quite answer the purpose. It has been calculated that the power of horses, oxen, &c., employed in husbandry in Great Britain is ten times the amount of human power. If the human power insisted upon doing all the work with the worst tools, the certainty is that not even one-tenth of the land could be cultivated. Where, then, would all this madness end? In the starvation of the labourers themselves, even if they were allowed to eat up all they had produced by such imperfect means. They would be just in the condition of any other barbarous people, that were ignorant of the inventions that constitute the power of civilization. They would eat up the little corn which they raised themselves, and have nothing to give in exchange for clothes, and coals, and candles, and soap, and tea, and sugar, and all the many comforts which those who are even the worst off are not wholly deprived of.

All this may appear as an extreme statement; and certainly we believe that no such evils could have happened: for if the laws had been passive, the most ignorant of the labourers themselves would, if they had proceeded to carry their own principle much farther than they had done, see in their very excesses the real character of the folly and wickedness to which it had led, and would lead them. Why should the labourers of Aylesbury not have destroyed the harrows as well as the drills? Why leave a machine which separates the clods of the earth, and break one which puts seeds into it? Why deliberate about a horse-churn, when they were resolved against a winnowing-machine? The truth is, these poor men perceived, even in the midst

of their excesses, the gross deception of the reasons which induced them to commit them. This motive was a natural, and, if lawfully expressed, a proper impatience, under a condition which had certainly many hardships, and those hardships in great part produced by the want of profitable labour. But in imputing those hardships to machinery, they were at once embarrassed when they came to draw distinctions between one sort of machine and another. This embarrassment decidedly shows that there were fearful mistakes at the bottom of their furious hostility to machinery.

It has been said, by persons whose opinions are worthy attention, that spade-husbandry is, in some cases, better than plough-husbandry ;—that is, that the earth, under particular circumstances of soil and situation, may be more fitly prepared for the influences of the atmosphere by digging than by ploughing. It is not our business to enter into a consideration of this question. The growth of corn is a manufacture, in which man employs the chemical properties of the soil and of the air in conjunction with his own labour, aided by certain tools or machines, for the production of a crop ; and that power, whether of chemistry or machinery,—whether of the salt, or the chalk, or the dung, or the guano, which he puts upon the earth, or the spade or the plough which he puts into it,—that power which does the work easiest is necessarily the best, *because it diminishes the cost of production*. If the plough does not do the work so well as the spade, it is a less perfect machine ; but the less perfect machine may be preferred to the more perfect, because, taking other conditions into consideration, it is a cheaper machine. The steam-plough has been introduced in some districts. It is perhaps a more perfect machine than the horse plough, but not so readily adapted for general uses. If the spade, applied in a peculiar manner by the strength and judgment of the man using it, more completely turns up the soil, breaks the clods, and removes the weeds than the plough, which receives one uniform

direction from man with the assistance of other animal power, then the spade is a more perfect machine in its combination with human labour than the plough is, worked with a lesser degree of the same combination. But still it may be a machine which cannot be used with advantage to the producer, and is therefore not desirable for the consumer. All such questions must be determined by the cost of production ; and that cost in agriculture is made up of the rent of land, the profit of capital, and the wages of labour or the portions of the produce belonging to the landlord, the farmer, and the labourer. Where rent is high, as in the immediate neighbourhood of large towns, it is important to have the labour performed as carefully as possible, and the succession of crops stimulated to the utmost extent by manure and labour. It is economy to turn the soil to the greatest account, and the land is cultivated as a garden. Where rent is low, it is important to have the labour performed upon other principles, because one acre cultivated by hand may cost more than two cultivated by the plough ; and though it may be the truest policy to carry the productiveness of the earth as far as possible, field cultivation and garden cultivation must have essential differences. In one case, the machine called a spade is used ; in the other, the machine called a plough is employed. The use of the one or the other belongs to practical agriculture, and is a question only of relative cost.

And this brings us to the great *principle* of all machinery. A tool of the simplest construction is a machine ; a machine of the most curious construction is only a complicated tool. There are many cases in the arts, and there may be cases in agriculture, in which the human arm and hand, with or without a tool, may do work that no machine can so well perform. There are processes in polishing, and there is a process in copperplate printing, in which no substance has been found to stand in the place of the human hand. And, if therefore the man with a spade alone does a certain agricultural work more completely than a man

guiding a plough, and a team of horses dragging it (which we do not affirm or deny), the only reason for this is, that the man with the spade is a better machine than the man with the plough and the horses. The most stupid man that ever existed is, beyond all comparison, a machine more cunningly made by the hands of his Creator, more perfect in all his several parts, and with all his parts more exquisitely adapted to the regulated movement of the whole body, less liable to accidents, and less injured by wear and tear, than the most beautiful machine that ever was, or ever will be, invented. There is no possibility of supplying in many cases a substitute for the simplest movements of a man's body, by the most complicated movements of the most ingenious machinery. The laws of mechanism are the same whether applied to a man, or to a lever, or a wheel; but the man has more pliability than any combination of wheels



and levers. "When a porter carries a burden, the attitude of the body must accommodate itself to the position of the common centre of gravity of himself and his load. Thus, in the accompanying figures it will be observed that when the man stands upright the centre of gravity of the man G falls within the base of support; and if his load L falls without the base, as does likewise g, the common centre of gravity of the man and load, the consequence would be that he

would fall backwards; but this is prevented, or, which is the same thing, the point *g* is brought within the base by the man bending his body forward.”\* What is called the lay figure of the painter—a wooden image with many joints—may be bent here and there; but the artist who wanted to draw a porter with a load could not put a hundredweight upon the back of his image and keep it upon its legs. The natural machinery by which a man even lifts his hand to his head is at once so complex and so simple, so apparently easy and yet so entirely dependent upon the right adjustment of a great many contrary forces, that no automaton, or machine imitating the actions of man, could ever be made to effect this seemingly simple motion, without showing that the contrivance was imperfect,—that it was a mere imitation, and a very clumsy one. What an easy thing it appears to be for a farming man to thrash his corn with a flail; and yet what an expensive arrangement of wheels is necessary to produce the same effects with a thrashing-machine! The truth is, that the man’s arm and the flail form a much more curious machine than the other machine of wheels, which does the same work; and the real question as regards the value of the two machines is, which machine in the greater degree lessens the cost of production?

We state this principle broadly, in our examination into the value of machinery in diminishing the cost of producing human food. A machine is not perfect because it is made of wheels or cylinders, employs the power of the screw or the lever, is driven by wind or water or steam, but because it best assists the labour of man, by calling into action some power which he does not possess in himself. If we could imagine a man entirely dispossessed of this power, we should see the feeblest of animal beings. He has no tools which are a part of himself, to build houses like the beaver, or cells like the bee. He has not even learnt from

\* See an article by Mr. Bishop, on “Locomotion of Animals,” in ‘English Cyclopaedia.’

nature to build instinctively, by certain and unchangeable rules. His power is in his mind; and that mind teaches him to subject all the physical world to his dominion, by availing himself of the forces which nature has spread around him. To act upon material objects he arms his weakness with tools and with machines. As we have before said, tools and machines are in principle the same. When we strike a nail upon the head with a hammer, we avail ourselves of a power which we find in nature—the effect produced by the concussion of two bodies; when we employ a water-wheel to beat out a lump of iron with a much larger hammer, we still avail ourselves of the same power. There is no difference in the nature of the instruments, although we call the one a tool, and the other a machine. Neither the tool nor the machine has any force of itself. In one case the force is in the arm, in the other in the weight of water which turns the wheel. The distinctions which have been taken between a tool and a machine are really so trivial, and the line of separation between the one and the other is so slight, that we can only speak of both as common instruments for adding to the efficiency of labour. The simplest application of a principle of mechanics to an every-day hand-tool may convert it into what is called a machine. Take a three-pronged fork—one of the universal tools;—fasten a rope to the end of the handle; put a log under the fork as a fulcrum; and we have a lever, when pulled down by the rope, which will grub up a strongly-rooted large shrub in a few minutes. The labourer has called in a powerful ally. The tool has become a machine.

The chief difference between man in a rude, and man in a civilized state of society is, that the one wastes his force, whether natural or acquired,—the other economizes, that is, saves it. The man in a rude state has very rude instruments; he therefore wastes his force: the man in a civilized state has very perfect ones; he therefore economizes it. Should we not laugh at the gardener who went to hoe

his potatoes with a stick having a short crook at the end? It would be a tool, we should say, fit only for children to use. Yet such a tool was doubtless employed by some very ancient nations; for there is an old medal of Syracuse which represents this very tool. The common hoe of the English gardener is a much more perfect tool, because it saves labour. Could we have any doubt of the madness of the man who would propose that all iron hoes should be abolished, to furnish more extensive employ to labourers who should be provided only with a crooked stick cut out



of a hedge? The truth is, if the working men of England had no better tools than crooked sticks, they would be in a state of actual starvation. One of the chiefs of New Zealand, before that country had been colonized by us, told Mr. Marsden, a missionary, that his wooden spades were all broken, and he had not an axe to make any more;—his canoes were all broken, and he had not a nail or a gimlet to mend them with;—his potato-grounds were uncultivated, and he had not a hoe to break them up with;—and that *for want of cultivation* he and his people would have

nothing to eat. This shows the state of a people without tools. The man had seen English tools, and knew their value.

About three or four hundred years ago, from the times of king Henry IV. to those of king Henry VI., and, indeed, long before these reigns, there were often, as we have already mentioned, grievous famines in this country, because the land was very wretchedly cultivated. Men, women, and children, perished of actual hunger by thousands ; and those who survived kept themselves alive by eating the bark of trees, acorns, and pig-nuts. There were no machines then ; but the condition of the labourers was so bad, that they could not be kept to work upon the land without those very severe and tyrannical laws noticed in Chap. VII., which absolutely forbade them to leave the station in which they were born as labourers, for any hope of bettering their condition in the towns. There were not labourers enough to till the ground, for they worked without any skill, with weak ploughs and awkward hoes. They were just as badly off as some of the people of Portugal and Spain, who are miserably poor, *because* they have bad machines ; or as the Chinese labourers, who have scarcely any machines, and are the poorest in the world. There was plenty of labour to be performed, but the tools were so bad, and the want of agricultural knowledge so universal, that the land was never half cultivated, and therefore all classes were poorly off. They had little corn to exchange for manufactures, and in consequence the labourer was badly clothed, badly-lodged, and had a very indifferent share of the scanty crop which he raised. The condition of the labourer would have proceeded from bad to worse, had agricultural improvement not gone forward to improve the general condition of all classes. Commons were enclosed ; arable land was laid down to pasture ; sheep were kept upon grass-land where wretched crops had before been growing. This was superseding labour to a great extent, and much clamour

was raised about this plan, and probably a large amount of real distress was produced. But mark the consequence. Although the money wages of labour were lowered, because there were more labourers in the market, the real amount of wages was higher, for better food was created by pasturage at a cheaper rate. The labourer then got meat who had never tasted it before ; and when the use of animal food became general, there were cattle and corn enough to be exchanged for manufactured goods, and the labourer got a coat and a pair of shoes, who had formerly gone half naked. Step by step have we been going in the same direction for two centuries ; and the agricultural industry of Great Britain is now as much directed to the production of meat, milk, butter, cheese, as to the growth of corn and other cereals. The once simple husbandry of our fore-fathers has become a scientific manufacture.

There may be some persons still who object to machinery, because, having grown up surrounded with the benefits it has conferred upon them, without understanding the source of these benefits, they are something like the child who sees nothing but evil in a rainy day. The people of New Zealand very rarely came to us ; but when they did come they were acute enough to perceive the advantages which machinery has conferred upon us, and the great distance in point of comfort between their state and ours, principally for the reason that they have no machinery, while we have a great deal. One of these men burst into tears when he saw a rope-walk ; because he perceived the immense superiority which the process of spinning ropes gave us over his own countrymen. He was ingenious enough, and so were many of his fellow islanders, to have twisted threads together after a rude fashion ; but he knew that he was a long way off from making a rope. The New Zealander saw the spinner in the rope-walk, moving away from a wheel, and gradually forming the hemp round his body into a strong cord. By the operation of the wheel he is enabled so to twine together a number of separate fibres, that no one fibre can be

separated from the mass, but forms part of a hard and compact body. A series of these operations produces a cable, such as may hold a barge at anchor. The twisted fibres of hemp become yarn ; many yarns become a strand ; three



Spinning.

strands make a rope ; and three ropes makes a cablet, or small cable. By carefully untwisting all its separate parts the principle upon which it is constructed is evident. The operation is a complex one ; and the rope-maker is a skilled workman. Rope-making machinery is now carried much farther. But the wheel that twisted the hemp into yarn was a prodigy to the inquiring savage.

Another of these New Zealanders, and he was a very shrewd and intelligent person, carried back to his country a small hand-mill for grinding corn, which he prized as the greatest of all earthly possessions. And well might he prize it ! He had no machine for converting corn into meal, but two stones, such as were used in the remote parts of the highlands of Scotland some years ago. And to beat the

grain into meal by these two stones (a machine, remember, however imperfect) would occupy the labour of one-fourth of his family, to procure subsistence for the other three-fourths. The ancient Greeks, three thousand years ago,



Analysis of a Cable.

had improved upon the machinery of the hand-stones, for they had hand-mills. But Homer, the old Greek poet, describes the unhappy condition of the slave who was always employed in using this mill. The groans of the slave were unheeded by those who consumed the produce of his labour ; and such was the necessity for meal, that the women were compelled to turn these mills when there were not slaves enough taken in war to perform this irksome office. There was plenty of labour then to be performed, even with the machinery of the hand-mill ; but the slaves and the women did not consider that labour was a good in itself, and therefore they bitterly groaned under it. By-

and-by the understandings of men found out that water and wind would do the same work that the slaves and the women had done; and that a large quantity of labour was at liberty to be employed for other purposes. Does any one ask if society was in a worse state in consequence. We answer, labour is worth nothing without results. Its value is only to be measured by what it produces. If, in a country where hand-mills could be had, the people were to go on beating grain between two stones, all would pronounce them fools, because they could obtain an equal quantity of meal with a much less expenditure of labour. Some have a general prejudice against that sort of machinery which does its work with very little human assistance: it is not quite so certain, therefore, that they would agree that a people would be equal fools to use the hand-mill when they could employ the wind-mill or the water-mill. But we believe they would think that, if flour could drop from heaven, or be had like water by whoever chose to seek it, it would be the height of folly to have stones, or hand-mills, or water-mills, or wind-mills, or any machine whatever for manufacturing flour. Does any one ever think of *manufacturing* water? The cost of water is only the cost of the labour which brings it to the place in which it is consumed. Yet this admission overturns all objections against machinery. *We admit that it is desirable to obtain a thing with no labour at all; can we therefore doubt that it is desirable to obtain it with the least possible labour?* The only difference between no labour and a little labour is the difference of the cost of production. And the only difference between little labour and much labour is precisely the same. In procuring anything that administers to his necessities, man makes an exchange of his labour for the thing produced, and the less he gives of his labour the better of course is his bargain.

To return to the hand-mill and the water-mill. An ordinary water-mill for grinding corn will grind about thirty-six sacks a day. To do the same work with a hand-mill would require 150 men. At two shillings a day the wages

of these men would amount to  $15l.$ , which, reckoning six working days, is  $90l.$  a week, or  $4680l.$  a year. The rent and taxes of a mill would be about  $150l.$  a year, or  $10s.$  a working day. The cost of machinery would be certainly more for the hand-mills than the water-mill, therefore we will not take the cost of machinery into calculation. To produce, therefore, thirty-six sacks of flour by hand we should pay  $15l.$ ; by the water-mill we should pay  $10s.$ : that is, we should pay thirty times as much by the one process as by the other. The actual saving is something about the price of the flour in the market; that is, the consumer, if the corn were ground by hand, would pay double what he pays now for flour ground at a mill.

But if the system of grinding corn by hand were a very recent system of society, and the introduction of so great a benefit as the water-mill had all at once displaced the hand-grinders, as the spinning machinery displaced the spinning-wheel, what must become, it is said, of the one hundred and fifty men who earned the  $15l.$  a-day, of which sum the consumer has now got  $14l. 10s.$  in his pocket? They must go to other work. And what is to set them to that work? The same  $14l. 10s.$ ; which, being saved in the price of flour, gives the poor man, as well as the rich man, more animal food and fuel; a greater quantity of clothes, and of a better quality; a better house than his hand-labouring ancestors used to have, much as his house might yet be improved; better furniture, and more of it; domestic utensils; and books. To produce these things there must be more labourers employed than before. The quantity of labour is, therefore, not diminished, while its productiveness is much increased. It is as if every man among us had become suddenly much stronger and more industrious. The machines labour for us, and are yet satisfied without either food or clothing. They increase all our comforts, and they consume none themselves. The hand-mills are not grinding, it is true: but the ships are sailing that bring us foreign produce; the looms are moving that give us more clothes; the potter, and glass-

maker, and joiner, are each employed to add to our household goods; we are each of us elevated in the scale of society; and all these things happen because machinery has diminished the cost of production.

The water-mill is, however, a simple machine compared with some mills of modern times. We are familiar with the village-mill. As we walk by the side of some gentle stream, we hear at a distance the murmur of water and the growl of wheels. We come upon the old mill, such as it has stood for a couple of centuries. No peasant quarrels with the mill. It is an object almost of his love; for he knows that it cheapens his food. It seems a part of the natural scenery amidst which he has been reared.

But let a more efficient machine for grinding corn be introduced, such as the Americans have at Pittsburgh, and the peasant might think that the working millers would be ruined. And yet the mill at Pittsburgh is making flour cheaper in England, by that competition which here forces onward improvement in mill-machinery: and by increasing the consumption of flour calls into action more superintending labour for its production. That particular American mill produces 500 barrels of flour per day, each containing 196 lbs., and it employs forty managing persons. It produces cheap flour by saving labour in all its processes. It stands on the bank of a navigable river—a high building into which the corn for grinding must be removed from boats alongside. Is the grain necessary to produce these 500 barrels of flour per day, amounting to 98,000 lbs., carried by man's labour to the topmost floor of that high mill? It is "raised by an elevator consisting of an endless band, to which are fixed a series of metal cans revolving in a long wooden trough, which is lowered through the respective hatchways into the boat, and is connected at its upper end with the building where its belt is driven. The lower end of the trough is open, and, as the endless band revolves, six or eight men shovel the grain into the ascending cans, which raise it so rapidly that 4000 bushels can be lifted and

deposited in the mill in an hour."\* The drudging and unskilled labourers who would have toiled in carrying up the grain are free to do some skilled labour, of which the amount required is constantly increasing; and the cost saved by the elevator goes towards the great universal fund, out of which more labour and better labour are to find the means of employment.

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER X.

1. What are the two great forces by which capital and labour now work?
2. What effect have the applications of science to the manufacturing arts?
3. How are these application principally displayed?
4. What was the opinion of a Glasgow weaver in 1827 on the subject of machinery.
5. What was the principle involved in this opinion?
6. How did this principle embarrass the agricultural labourers who wished to destroy all machinery?
7. If these labourers had succeeded in destroying all machinery what would have been the effect on labour and on production?
8. When may a less perfect machine be preferred to a more perfect one?
9. Of what is the cost of production in agriculture made up?
10. Under what circumstances is the dearer machine preferable to the cheaper?
11. What makes a machine perfect?
12. What converts a hand-tool into what is called a machine?
13. What is the great difference between man in a rude and man in a civilized state of society?
14. Mention an instance of the state of a people without tools.
15. What was the condition of labourers in England before there were any machines?
16. What was the effect on the condition of the labourer of agricultural improvement?
17. By what is the value of labour to be measured?
18. Is it desirable to obtain a thing with no labour at all?
19. Is it desirable or not to obtain a thing with the least possible labour?
20. How are objections against machinery affected by this admission?
21. What would be the difference in the cost to the consumer of flour ground by hand, and flour ground at a mill?
22. Is the quantity of labour diminished by the introduction of machinery?
23. How does the saving in labour by the introduction of machinery have the effect of increasing the demand for labour?

\* Whitworth's Special Report.

**CHAPTER XI.**

Present and former condition of the country—Progress of cultivation—Evil influence of feudalism—State of agriculture in the sixteenth century—Modern improvements—Prices of wheat—Increased breadth of land under cultivation—Average consumption of wheat—Implements of agriculture now in use.

IT is the remark of foreigners, as they travel from the sea-coast to London, that the country is a garden. It has taken nineteen centuries to make it such a garden. The marshes in which the legions of Julius Cæsar had to fight up to their loins, with the Britons to whom these swamps were habitual, are now drained. The dense woods in which the Druids worshipped are now cleared. Populous towns and cheerful villages offer themselves on every side. Wherever the eye reaches there is cultivation. Instead of a few scattered families painfully earning a subsistence by the chase, or by tilling the land without the knowledge and the instruments that science has given to the aid of manual labour,—that cultivation is carried on with a systematic routine that improves the fertility of a good season, and diminishes the evils of a bad. Instead of the country being divided amongst hostile tribes, who have little communication, the whole territory is covered with a network of roads, and canals, and navigable rivers, and railroads, through which means there is an universal market, and wherever there is demand there is instant supply. Rightly considered, there is no branch of production which has so largely benefited by the power of knowledge as that of agriculture. It was ages before the great physical changes were accomplished which we now behold on every side,

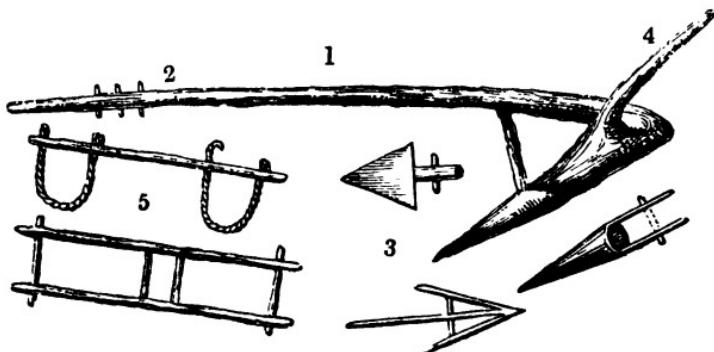
and we are still in a state of progress towards the perfection of those results which an over-ruling Providence had in store for the human race, in the gradual manifestation of those discoveries which have already so changed our condition and the condition of the world. It being estimated that the total area of England and Wales is about thirty-seven millions of acres, nearly twenty-nine millions are held to be cultivated. It is further estimated that four million more acres are capable of cultivation.

The history of cultivation in Great Britain is full of instruction as regards the inefficiency of mere traditional practice and the slowness with which scientific improvement establishes its dominion. It is no part of our plan to follow out this history; but a few scattered facts may not be without their value.

The oppressions of tenants that were perpetrated under the feudal system, when ignorant lords of manors impeded production by every species of extortion, may be estimated by one or two circumstances. There can be no doubt that the prosperity of a tenant is the best security for the landlord's due share of the produce of the land. Without manure, in some form or other, the land cannot be fertilized: the landlords knew this, but they required to have a monopoly of the fertility. Their tenants kept a few sheep, but the landlords reserved to themselves the exclusive privilege of having a sheepfold; so that the little tenants could not fold their own sheep on their own lands, but were obliged to let them be folded with those of their lord, or pay a fine.\* The flour-mill was the exclusive property of the manorial lord, whether lay or ecclesiastical; and whatever the distance, or however bad the road, the tenant could grind nowhere but at the lord's mill. No doubt the rent of land was exceedingly low, and the lord was obliged to maintain himself and his dependents by adding something considerable to his income by many forms of legalized extortion. The rent of land was so low because the produce was

\* Cullum's "History of Hawsted."

inconsiderable, to an extent which will be scarcely comprehended by modern husbandmen. In the law commentary called ‘*Fleta*,’ written about the end of the thirteenth century, the author says the farmer will be a loser unless corn be dear, if he obtains from an acre of wheat only three times the seed sown. He calculated the low produce at six bushels an acre: the average produce was perhaps little higher; we have distinct records of its being no higher a century afterwards. In 1390, at Hawsted, near Bury, the produce of the manor-farm was forty-two quarters of wheat or three hundred and thirty-six bushels, from fifty-seven acres; and upon an average of three years sixty-one acres produced only seventy quarters, or five hundred and sixty bushels. Sir John Cullum, who collected these details from the records of his own property, says, “no particular dearness of corn followed, so that, probably, those very scanty crops were the usual and ordinary effects of the imperfect husbandry then practised.” The husbandry was so imperfect that an unfavourable season for corn-crops, which in our days would have been compensated by a greater production of green crops, was followed by famine. When the ground was too hard, the seed could not be sown for want of the sufficient machine-power of plough and harrow. The chief instrument used was as weak and im-



1. The plough. 2. The pole. 3. The share (various). 4. The handle, or ploughtail.  
5. Yokes.

perfect as the plough which we see depicted in Egyptian monuments, and which is still found in parts of Syria. The Oriental ploughman was with such an instrument obliged to bend over his plough, and load it with all the weight of his body, to prevent it merely scratching the ground instead of turning it up. His labour was great and his care incessant, as we may judge from the words of our Saviour,—“No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.” Latimer, the Protestant martyr, in his ‘Sermon of the Plough,’ in which he holds that “preaching of the Gospel is one of God’s plough-works, and the preacher is one of God’s ploughmen,” describes the labour upon which he raises his parallel: “For as the ploughman first setteth forth his plough, and then tilleth his land and breaketh it in furrows, and sometimes ridgeth it up again; and at another time harroweth it and clotteth it, and sometimes dungeth it and hedgeth it, diggeth it and weedeth it, purgeth it and maketh it clean,—so the prelate, the preacher, hath many divers offices to do.” Latimer was the son of a Leicestershire farmer, and knew practically what he was talking about. He knew that the land would not bear an adequate crop without all this various and often-repeated labour. And yet the labour was so inadequately performed, that a few years after he had preached this famous sermon, we are told by a credible writer of the times of Queen Mary—William Bulleyn, a physician and botanist—that in 1555 “bread was so scant, insomuch that the plain poor people did make very much of acorns.” A few years onward a great impulse was given to husbandry through various causes, amongst which the increased abundance of the precious metals through the opening of the mines of South America had no inconsiderable influence. The industrious spirit of England was fairly roused from a long sleep in the days of Queen Elizabeth. Harrison, in his ‘Description of Great Britain,’ says, “The soil is even now in these our days grown to be much more fruitful than it hath

been in times past." This historian of manners saw the reason. "In times past" there was "idle and negligent occupation;" but when he wrote (1593) "our countrymen are grown to be more painful, skilful, and careful, through recompense of gain." The cultivators had their share of the benefits of cultivation; they had their "recompense of gain." Capital had been spread amongst the class of tenants: they were no longer miserable dependents upon their grasping lords. For a century or so onward the improvements in agriculture were not very decided. The rotation of crops was unknown; and winter food for sheep and cattle not being raised, the greater number were slaughtered and salted at Martinmas. The fleeces were wretchedly small, for the few sheep nibbled the stubbles and commons bare till the spring-time. The carcases of beef were not half their present size. At the beginning of the last century the turnip cultivation was introduced, and in the middle of the century the horse-hoeing husbandry came into use. Our agricultural revolution was fairly begun a hundred years ago; and yet for many years the value of manure was very imperfectly understood, and even up to our own time it has been wasted in every direction. There is given in Sir John Cullum's book an abstract of the lease of a farm in 1753. The tenant was to be allowed two shillings for every load of manure that he brought from Bury, about four miles distant. During twenty-one years the landlord was charged with only one load. At that period all agriculture was in a great degree traditional. There were no agricultural societies—no special journals for this great branch of national industry. Arthur Young applied his shrewd and observing talent to the dissemination of farming knowledge; but the agricultural mind, with very few exceptions, rejected book-knowledge as vain and impertinent. Chemistry applied to the soil was as unknown to the cultivator as the perturbations of the planets. Geology was an affair of conjecture, and had assumed no form of utility. Meteorology entered into no

farmer's mode of estimating the comparative value of one site and another. Sir John Cullum made a most curious and instructive estimate of the science of the Suffolk farmers in 1784, when he wrote,—“The farm-houses are in general well furnished with every convenient accommodation. Into many of them a *barometer* has of late years been introduced—a most useful instrument for the husbandman, and which is mentioned here as a *striking instance of the intelligence of this period.*”

The wars of the French Revolution, and the high prices consequent upon the almost utter absence of foreign supplies, gave a stimulus to agriculture, which principally displayed itself in the effort to bring waste lands into cultivation. From 1790 to 1819, a period of thirty years, there were two thousand one hundred and sixty-nine Inclosure Bills passed by Parliament. In the first ten years of this period the average price of wheat had increased ten shillings above the average of ten years from 1780 to 1789. In the second ten years it had increased thirty-six shillings above that average. In the third ten years it was very nearly double, being 88*s.* 8*d.* from 1810 to 1819, and 45*s.* 9*d.* from 1780 to 1789. A portion of these prices, however, must be attributed to a depreciated currency. During that period of thirty years very few of the great scientific improvements which have cheapened production had been introduced, although better modes of cultivation unquestionably prevailed. During the twenty years from 1820 to 1839 there were only three hundred and thirty-one Inclosure Bills passed; and the price of wheat had fallen to about the average of the ten years from 1790 to 1799, and it continued at that average for another ten years. In the ten years from 1840 to 1849, we cannot gather the amount of land brought into new cultivation from the number of Inclosure Bills, as there was a general Inclosure Act passed in 1835 to prevent the expense of particular bills for small tracts of land. But it has been calculated that, while more than three million acres were brought into cultivation in

the twenty years from 1800 to 1819, about one million acres only were inclosed in the thirty years from 1820 to 1849.\* If we look then, as we shall briefly do, at the wonderfully increased production of Great Britain, we shall be naturally led to the conclusion that some cause, much more efficient than the inclosure of waste lands, has given us the means of feeding a population which has doubled since the beginning of the century. This production is the result of the whole course of improvement effected by science, and stimulated by capital. The Bedford Level was drained by our ancestors. The fens of Cambridgeshire and Lincolnshire have been drained effectually in our time. That luxuriant flat now rejoices in waving corn-crops over many a mile. A few years ago it was a land of stagnant ditches, where little windmills, that looked to the solitary traveller through that cold district like the toys of children, lifted the water out of the trenches, and left an isolated acre or two of dry earth for man to toil in. Now mighty steam-pumps carry the water into artificial rivers, and the whole region is unrivalled for fertility.

It is estimated by some statisticians that the average consumption of wheat for each individual of the population is eight bushels. Others estimate that consumption at six bushels. It will be sufficient for a broad view of the increase of production, as compared with the increase of population, to take the consumption at eight bushels, or a quarter of wheat per head. In the ten years from 1801 to 1810, deducting an annual average of 600,000 quarters of foreign wheat and flour imported, the population of 1811 being 11,769,725, the number fed by wheat of home growth was somewhat above eleven millions. In the ten years from 1841 to 1850, deducting an annual average of 3,000,000 quarters of foreign wheat and flour, the population in 1851 being 21,121,967, the number fed by wheat of home growth was somewhat above eighteen millions. The productive power of the country had increased, in the course of fifty

\* See various tables in Porter's 'Progress of the Nation.'

years, to the enormous extent of giving subsistence, in one article of agricultural produce alone, to seven millions of people. The population in 1751 was estimated at little more than seven millions. It had trebled in a century; and we may be perfectly sure that the production of the land has far more than trebled in that period. The probability is that it has quadrupled; for there is no doubt that the great bulk of the people are better fed than in 1751, when ryebread was the common sustenance of the great body of labourers throughout the country.

Let us endeavour to take a rapid view of the implements of agriculture in common use at the present time—implements which have been described as “intended not to bring about new conditions of soil, nor to yield new products of any kind, but to do with more certainty and cheapness what had been done hitherto by employing the rude implements of former centuries.” Such are the words of Mr. Pusey’s admirable Report on the Agricultural Implements in the “Exhibition of the Works of Industry of all Nations.” We cannot do better than furnish a few slight notices of the leading subjects of this report.

The plough and the harrow were the sole instruments of tillage at the beginning of this century. Bloomfield, in his ‘Farmer’s Boy,’ describes them:—

“The ploughs move heavily, and strong the soil,  
And clogging harrows with augmented toil  
Dive deep.”

The old plough used to be drawn with four horses; and they were needed. It was a cumbrous instrument, “adapted to the clay soils when those soils were the chief source of corn to the country, and had been handed down from father to son, after the heavy lands had been widely laid down to grazing-ground, and the former downs had become our principal arable land.” The

modern plough is an implement constructed on mathematical principles, which, by its mould-board, "raising each slice of earth (furrow-slice) from its flat position, through an upright one, lays it over half inclined on the preceding slice." The perfect instrument produces the skilled labourer. A good ploughman will set up a pole a quarter of a mile distant, and trace a furrow so true up to that goal that no eye can detect any divergence from absolute straightness. Mr. Pusey justly says that this is a triumph of art. It is a beautiful exercise of skilled labour, acquired by continued practice. But suppose that this feat should come to have less value under an extended system of steam cultivation, in which the engineer with his steam-plough would produce as straight a furrow, and at the same time a much deeper one, than the best ploughman with his finest team. In such a case, would there be less demand for skilled labour as the cost of agricultural production became less? Would not wages infallibly rise, and the difference both as to the rewards of industry and the social position of the agricultural labourer and the artizan be constantly diminishing. It is only upon large holdings that scientific agriculture can be fully developed. If the condition of the labourer had been manifestly deteriorated by the gradual change that has been going on during a hundred years in the conversion of small farms into large, it would be a cause of deep regret for which no glories of scientific agriculture could compensate. But the enormous increase of agricultural produce that has followed this change, and the collateral diminution of the proportionate number of agricultural labourers, furnish a sufficient evidence of the contrary. During this process the condition of the labourers in husbandry has been bettered; and, unsatisfactory as it still is, is bettering at every step by which two blades of grass are made to grow where only one grew before.

With an agriculture that permits no waste, much of the picturesque has fled from our fields. Bloomfield describes

the repose of the ploughman after he has driven his team to the boundary of his furrow :—

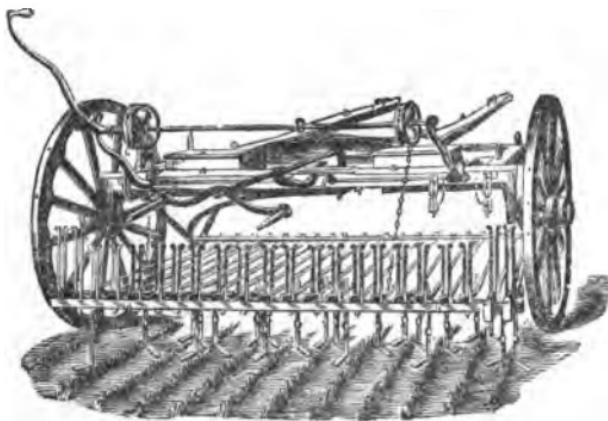
“ Welcome green headland ! firm beneath his feet ;  
Welcome the friendly bank’s refreshing seat ;  
There, warm with toil, his panting horses browse  
Their sheltering canopy of pendant boughs.”

Gone is the green headland ; gone the cowslip bank ; gone the pendant boughs. The furrow runs up to the extremest point of a vast field without hedges. Gone, too, are the green slips between the lands of common fields. Their very names of “ balk ” and “ feather ” are obsolete. These adornments of the landscape are inconsistent with the demands of a population that doubles itself in half a century. The labourer has small rest, and the soil has less. Under the old husbandry, before the culture of the green crops, one-third of the arable land was always idle. Two years of grain-crop, and one year of fallow, was the invariable rule. Look how the land is worked now. The plough and the harrow turn up and pulverize the soil, but they do it much more effectually than of old. The roller is a noble iron instrument, instead of an old pollard. Modern ingenuity has added the clod-crusher. But something was still wanting for the better preparation of land for seed—this is the scarifier or cultivator ; which, according to Mr. Pusey, will save one half of the horse-labour employed upon the plough. Into the details of this saving it is no part of our purpose to enter.\* We give these wood-cuts, not as exhibiting the various implements with the most recent improvements, but as illustrating the general nature of their construction and use.

We proceed to “ Instruments used in the Cultivation of Crops.” Mr. Pusey tells us that “ the sower with his seed-lip has almost vanished from southern England, driven out by a complicated machine, the drill, depositing the seed in rows, and drawn by several horses.” We miss the sower ;

\* See ‘ Journal of Royal Agricultural Society,’ vol. xii. p. 595.

and the next generation may require a commentary upon the many religious and moral images that arose out of his primitive occupation. When James Montgomery says of the seed of knowledge, "broadcast it o'er the land," some may one day ask what "broadcast" means. But the drill does not only sow the seed; it deposits artificial manures for the reception of the seed. The bones that were thrown upon the dunghill are now crushed. The mountains of fertilizing matter that have been accumulated through ages on islands of the Pacific, from the deposits of birds resting in their flight upon rocks of that ocean, and which we call guano, now form a great article of commerce. Superphosphate, prepared from bones, or from the animal remains of geological ages, is another of the precious dusts which the drill economizes. There are even drills for dropping water combined with superphosphate. "Such," says Mr. Pusey, "is the elastic yet accurate pliability with which, in agriculture, mechanism has seconded chemistry." The system of horse-hoeing, which is the great principle of



Horse-hoe.

modern husbandry, entirely depends upon the use of the drill. The horse-hoe cannot be worked unless the plants are in rows. Such a hoe as this will clean at once nine

rows of wheat, six of beans, and four of turnips. To manage such an instrument requires "a steady and cool hand." The skilled labourer is as essential as the beautiful machine.

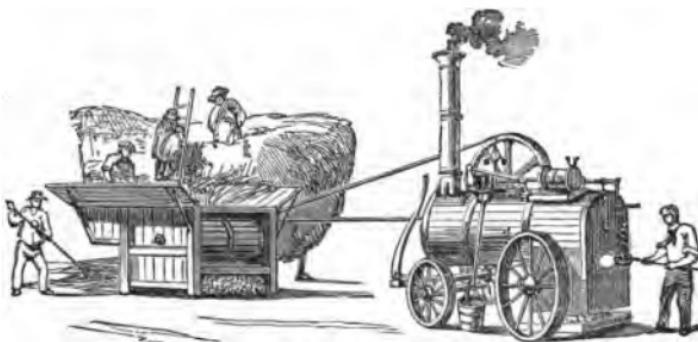
Of instruments for gathering the harvest, the most important are reaping-machines. In the United States they are sold to a great extent. Mr. M'Cormack, who completed his invention in 1845, states that the demand reaches to a thousand annually. Mr. Pusey says of this machine that, "in bad districts and late seasons, it may often enable the farmer to save the crop." In Scotland and the north of England Mr. Bell's reaping machine is coming into extensive use. The Americans have also their mowing-machines drawn by two horses, which mow, upon an average, six acres of grass per day. The haymaking machines, as labour-saving instruments, are not uncommon in England.

Machines for preparing corn for market are amongst the most important inventions of modern times. Here, indeed, agriculture assumes many of the external features of a manufacture. Steam comes prominently into action. In many large farms there is fixed steam-power; and most efficient it is. But the moveable steam-engine comes to the aid of the small farmer; and in some districts that power is let out to those who want it. By this little engine applied to a thrashing-machine, corn is thrashed at once from the rick, instead of being carried into the barn. We give a representation of the combined steam-engine and thrashing-machine. The thrashing-machine with horse-power is that generally used in England. Rarely, now, can the beautiful description of Cowper be realized:—

"Thump after thump resounds the constant flail,  
That seems to swing uncertain, and yet falls  
Full on the destined ear."

Few now wield that ancient instrument. Nor is the chaff now separated from the corn by the action of the wind, which was called winnowing, but we have the winnowing-

machine, by which forty quarters of wheat can be taken from the thrashing-machine and prepared for the market in five hours.



*Movable steam-engine and threshing-machine.*

But machinery does not end here. The food of stock is prepared by machines. First, there is the turnip-cutter. Our "Farmer's Boy" will tell us how his sheep and kine were fed in the winter fifty years ago :—

“ No tender ewe can break her nightly fast,  
Nor heifer strong begin the cold repast,  
Till Giles with ponderous beetle foremost go,  
And scattering splinters fly at every blow ;  
When, pressing round him, eager for the prize,  
From their mix'd breath warm exhalations rise.”

We are told that “ lambs fed with a turnip-cutter would be worth more at the end of a winter by eight shillings a head than lambs fed on whole turnips.” The chaff-cutter is an instrument equally valuable.

The last machine which we shall mention is connected with the greatest of all improvements in the crop-producing power of British land—the system of tile-draining. Pipes are now made by machinery; and land may be effectually drained at a cost of 4*l.* per acre.

The farmers of England have made what we may fairly call heroic efforts to meet foreign competition; but their

efforts would have been comparatively vain had science not come to the aid of production.

The total population of England and Wales, according to the Census of 1861, is, in round numbers, twenty millions and a quarter. The total agricultural class comprises two million persons, of both sexes and all ages. The workers of the land form one-fourth of the whole working community. This quarter of the population provides food, with the exception of foreign produce, for themselves and the other three quarters of the community. Such a result could not be accomplished without the appliances of scientific power which we have described in this chapter. In the early steps of British society a very small proportion of labour could be spared for other purposes than the cultivation of the soil. It has been held that a community is considerably advanced when it can spare one man in three from working upon the land. Only twenty-five per cent. of our adult males are agricultural—that is, three men labour at some other employment, while one cultivates the land. In 1811, the proportion of agricultural occupations to all other occupations was thirty-five per cent.

More precise details of the various divisions of agricultural occupation will be found in the Appendix to this 2nd Part of "Knowledge is Power," Class IV.

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON\* CHAPTER XI.

1. What branch of production has most benefited by the power of knowledge?
2. Give some instances of the oppressions of tenants under the feudal system.
3. Give some instances of the low produce of land at that time.
4. What was one cause of the impulse given to husbandry in the sixteenth century?
5. What was the condition of agriculture in the eighteenth century?
6. What was the effect on agriculture of the wars of the French Revolution?
7. How did this stimulus to agriculture principally display itself?

8. What has caused the wonderfully increased production of Great Britain?
9. What has been the increase of production as compared with the increase of population?
10. What were the sole instruments of tillage at the beginning of this century?
11. What are the most striking differences between the agriculture at that time and at the present time?
12. Mention some of the most important machines now used in agriculture.
13. What is now the proportion of agriculturists to the entire population of Great Britain?
14. How much has that proportion decreased since the beginning of this century?
15. What has rendered such a result possible?

**CHAPTER XII.**

Production of a knife—Manufacture of iron—Raising coal—The hot-blast—Iron bridges—Rolling bar-iron—Making steel—Sheffield manufactures—Mining in Great Britain—Numbers engaged in mines and metal manufactures.

WE have been speaking somewhat fully of agricultural instruments and agricultural labour, because they are at the root of all other profitable industry. Bread and beef make the bone and sinew of the workman. Ploughs and harrows, and drills, and threshing-machines are combinations of wood and iron. Rude nations have wooden ploughs. Unless the English labourer made a plough out of two pieces of stick, and carried it upon his shoulder to the field, as the toil-worn and poor people of India do, he must have some iron about it. He cannot get iron without machinery. He cannot get even his knife, his tool of all-work, without machinery. From the first step to the last in the production of a knife, machinery and scientific appliances have done the chief work. People that have no science and no machinery sharpen a stone, or a bit of shell or bone, and cut or saw with it in the best way they can; and after they have become very clever, they fasten it to a wooden handle with a cord of bark. An Englishman examines two or three dozens of knives, selects which he thinks the best, and pays a shilling for it, the seller thanking him for his custom. The man who has nothing but the bone or the shell would gladly toil a month for that which does not cost an English labourer half a day's wages.

And how does the Englishman obtain his knife upon

such easy terms? From the very same cause that he obtains all his other accommodations cheaper, in comparison with the ordinary wages of labour, than the inhabitant of most other countries—that is, from the operations of science, either in the making of the thing itself, or in procuring that without which it could not be made. We must always remember that, if we could not get the materials without scientific application, it would be impossible for us to get what is made of those materials—even if we had the power of fashioning those materials by the rudest labour.

Keeping this in mind, let us see how a knife could be obtained by a man who had nothing to depend on but his hands.

Ready-made, without the labour of some other man, a knife does not exist; but the iron, of which the knife is made, is to be had. Very little iron has ever been found in a native state, or fit for the blacksmith. The little that has been found in that state has been found only very lately; and if human art had not been able to procure any in addition to that, gold would have been cheap as compared with iron.

Iron is, no doubt, very abundant in nature; but it is always mixed with some other substance that not only renders it unfit for use, but hides its qualities. It is found in the state of what is called *iron-stone* or *iron-ore*. Sometimes it is mixed with clay, at other times with lime or with the earth of flint; and there are also cases in which it is mixed with sulphur. In short, in the state in which iron is frequently met with, it is a much more likely substance to be chosen for paving a road, or building a wall, than for making a knife.

But suppose that the man knows the particular ore or stone that contains the iron, how is he to get it out? Mere force will not do, for the iron and the clay, or other substance, are so nicely mixed, that, though the ore were ground to the finest powder, the grinder is

no nearer the iron than when he had a lump of a ton weight.

A man who has a block of wood has a wooden bowl in the heart of it ; and he can get it out too by labour. The knife will do it for him in time ; and if he take it to the turner, the turner with his machinery, his lathe, and his gouge, will work it out for him in half an hour. The man who has a lump of iron-ore has just as certainly a knife in the heart of it ; but no mere labour can work it out. Shape it as he may, it is not a knife, or steel, or even iron —it is iron-ore ; and dress it as he will, it would not cut better than a brickbat—certainly not so well as the shell or bone of the savage.

There must be knowledge before anything can be done in this case. We must know what is mixed with the iron, and how to separate it. We cannot do it by mere labour, as we can chip away the wood and get out the bowl ; and therefore we have recourse to fire.

In the ordinary mode of using it, fire would make matters worse. If we put the material into the fire as a stone, we should probably receive it back as slag or dross. We must, therefore, prepare our fuel. Our fire must be hot, very hot ; but if our fuel be wood we must burn it into charcoal, or if it be coal into coke.

The charcoal, or coke, answers for one purpose ; but we have still the clay or other earth mixed with our iron, and how are we to get rid of that ? Pure clay, or pure lime, or pure earth of flint, remains stubborn in our hottest fires ; but when they are mixed in a proper proportion, the one melts the other.

So charcoal or coke, and iron-stone or iron-ore, and limestone, are put into a furnace ; the charcoal or coke is lighted at the bottom, and wind is blown into the furnace, at the bottom also. If that wind is not sent in by machinery, and very powerful machinery too, the effect will be little, and the work of the man great ; but still it can be done.

In this furnace the lime and clay, or earth of flint, unite, and form a sort of glass, which floats upon the surface. At the same time the carbon, or pure charcoal, of the fuel, with the assistance of the limestone, mixes with the stone, or ore, and melts the iron, which, being heavier than the other matters, runs down to the bottom of the furnace, and remains there till the workman lets it out by a hole made at the bottom of the furnace for that purpose, and plugged with sand. When the workman knows there is enough melted, or when the appointed time arrives, he displaces the plug of sand with an iron rod, and the melted iron runs out like water, and is conveyed into furrows made in sand, where it cools, and the pieces formed in the principal furrows are called "sows," and those in the furrows branching from them "pigs."

We are now advanced a considerable way towards the production of a knife. We have the materials of a knife. We have the iron extracted out of the iron-ore. Before we trace the progress of a knife to its final polish, let us see what stupendous efforts of machinery have been required to produce the cast iron.

In every part of the operation of making iron—in smelting the iron out of the ore; in moulding cast iron into those articles for which it is best adapted; in working malleable iron, and in applying it to use after it is made; nothing can be done without fire, and the fuel that is used in almost every stage of the business is coal. The coal trade and the iron trade are thus so intimately connected, so very much dependent upon each other, that neither of them could be carried on to any extent without the other. The coal-mines supply fuel, and the iron-works give mining tools, pumps, railroads, wheels, and steam-engines, in return. A little coal might be got without the iron engines, and a little iron might be made without coals, by the charcoal of wood. But the quantity of both would be trifling in comparison. The wonderful amount of the production of iron in Great Britain, and the cheapness of iron, as com-

pared with the extent of capital required for its manufacture, arises from the fact that the coal-beds and the beds of iron-ore lie in juxta-position. The iron-stones alternate with the beds of coal in almost all our coal-fields; and thus the same mining undertakings furnish the ore out of which iron is made and the fuel by which it is smelted. If the coal were in the north, and the fuel in the south, the carriage of the one to the other would double the cost.

There was a time when iron was made in this country with very little machinery. Iron was manufactured here in the time of the Romans; but it was made with great manual labour, and was consequently very dear. Hutton, in his 'History of Birmingham,' tells us that there is a large heap of cinders near that town which have been produced by an ancient iron-furnace; and that from the quantity of cinders, as compared with the mechanical powers possessed by our forefathers, the furnace must have been constantly at work from the time of Julius Cæsar. A furnace with a steam blast would produce as large a heap in a few years.

At present a cottager in the south of England, where there is no coal in the earth, may have a bushel of good coals delivered at the door of his cottage for eighteen pence; although that is far more than the price of coal at the pit's mouth. If he had even the means of transporting himself and his family to the coal district, he could not, without machinery, get a bushel of coals at the price of a year's work. Let us see how a resolute man would proceed in such an undertaking.

The machinery, we will say, is gone. The mines are 'filled up, which the greater part of them would be, with water, if the machinery were to stop a single week. Let us suppose that the adventurous labourer knows exactly the spot where the coal is to be found. This knowledge, in a country that has never been searched for coals before, is no easy matter, even to those who understand the subject best: it is the province of geology to give that knowledge.

But we shall suppose that he gets over that difficulty too, for after it there is plenty of difficulty before him.

Well, he comes to the exact spot that he seeks, and places himself right over the seam of coal. That seam is only a hundred fathoms below the surface, which depth he will, of course, reach in good time. To work he goes; pares off the green sod with his shovel, loosens the earth with his pickaxe, and, in the course of a week, is twenty feet down into the loose earth and gravel, and clears the rock at the bottom. He rests during the Sunday, and comes refreshed to his work on Monday morning; when, behold, there are twelve feet of water in his pit.

Suppose he now calls in the aid of a bucket and rope, and that he bales away, till, as night closes, he has lowered the water three feet. Next morning it is up a foot and half: but no matter; he has done something, and next day he redoubles his efforts, and brings the water down to only four feet. That is encouraging; but, from the depth, he now works his bucket with more difficulty, and it is again a week before his pit is dry. The weather changes; the rain comes down heavily; the surface on which it falls is spongy; the rock which he has reached is water-tight; and in twelve hours his pit is filled to the brim. It is in vain to go on.

The sinking of a pit, even to a less depth than a hundred fathoms, sometimes demands, notwithstanding all the improvements by machinery, a sum of not less than a hundred pounds a fathom, or ten thousand pounds for the whole pit; and therefore, supposing it possible for a single man to do it at the rate of eighteen pence a day, the time which he would require would be between four hundred and five hundred years.

Whence comes it that the labour of between four hundred and five hundred years is reduced to a single day? and that which, independently of the carriage, would have cost ten thousand pounds, is got for eighteen pence? It is because man joins with man, and machinery is employed

to do the drudgery. Nations that have no machinery have no coal fires, and are ignorant that there is hidden under the earth a substance which contributes more, perhaps, to the health and comfort of the inhabitants of Britain than any other commodity which they enjoy.

The greater part of the coal now raised in Britain is produced by the employment of the most enormous mechanical power. There are in some places shallow and narrow pits, where coals may be raised to the surface by a windlass; and there are others where horse-power is employed. But the number of men that can work at a windlass, or the number of horses that can be yoked to a gin, is limited. The power of the steam-engine is limited only by the strength of the materials of which it is formed. The power of a hundred horses, or of five hundred men, may be very easily made by the steam-engine to act constantly, and on a single point; and thus there is scarcely anything in the way of mere force which the engine cannot be made to do. We have seen a pit in Staffordshire, which hardly gave coal enough to maintain a cottager and his family, for he worked the pit with imperfect machinery—with a half-starved ass applied to a windlass. A mile off was a steam-engine of 200-horse power, raising tons of coal and pumping out rivers of water with a force equal to at least a thousand men. This vast force acted upon a point; and therefore no advantage was gained over the machine by the opposing force of water, or the weight of the material to be raised. Before the steam-engine was invented, the produce of the coal-mines barely paid the expense of working and keeping them dry; and had it not been for the steam-engines and other machinery, the supply would long before now have dwindled into a very small quantity, and the price would have become ten or twenty times its present amount.

How the value of our cast-iron has been increased by modern science may be in some degree estimated by a consideration of what the hot-blast has accomplished. The hot-blast blows hot air into the iron-furnace instead of cold

air. The notion seems simple, but it is beyond all question that it has contributed greatly to the advance of the manufacture. The inventor, Mr. Neilson, about forty years ago introduced his method at the Clyde works. The iron is rendered cheaper through a smaller quantity of coal being necessary for its production. That production is almost unlimited in amount. In 1788 we produced only sixty thousand tons. The beautiful iron bridge of Colebrook-dale, erected in 1779, consumed three hundred and seventy-eight tons of cast iron. The wonderful Britannia Bridge, which has been carried over the Menai Strait, hung in mid air at the height of a hundred feet above the stream, has required ten thousand tons of iron for its completion. If chemistry and machinery had not been at work to produce more iron and cheaper iron, how would our great modern improvements have stopped short—our railroads, our water-pipes, our gas-pipes, our steam-ships! How should we have lacked the great material of every useful implement, from the gigantic anchor that holds the man-of-war firm in her moorings, and the mighty gun that, in the last resort, asserts a spirit without which all material improvement cannot avert a nation's decay,—to the steel pen with which thoughts are exchanged between friends at the opposite ends of the earth, and the needle by which the poor seamstress in her garret maintains her place amongst competing numbers.

Nearly all the people now engaged in iron-works are supported by the improvements that have been made in the manufacture, *by machinery*, since 1788. Yes, wholly by the machinery; for before then the quantity made by the charcoal of wood had fallen off one-fourth in forty-five years. The wood for charcoal was becoming exhausted, and nothing but the powerful blast of a machine will make iron with coke. Without the aid of machinery the trade would have become extinct. The iron and the coal employed in making it would have remained useless in the mines.

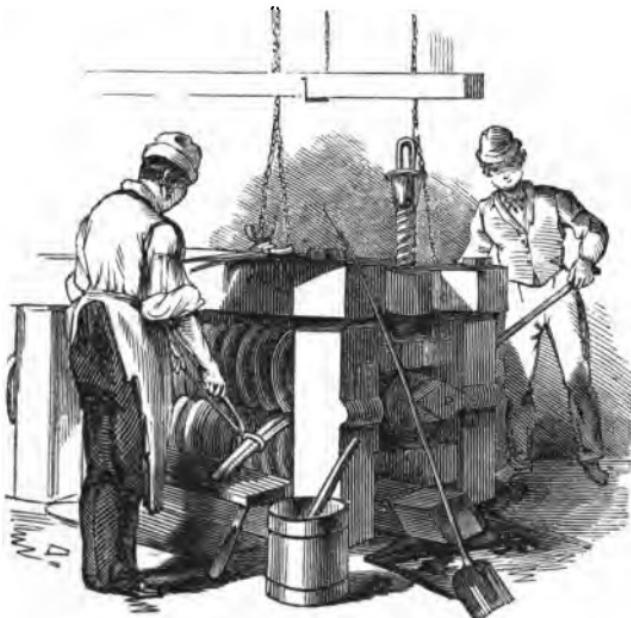
And now, having seen what is required to produce a "pig" of cast iron, let us return to the knife, whose course of manufacture we traced a little way.

The lump of cast iron as it leaves the furnace has many processes to go through before it becomes fit for making a knife. It cannot be worked by the hammer, or sharpened to a cutting edge; and so it must be made into malleable iron,—into a kind of iron which, instead of melting in the fire, will soften, and admit of being hammered into shape, or united by the process of welding.

The methods by which this is accomplished vary; but they in general consist in keeping the iron melted in a furnace, and stirring it with an iron rake, till the blast of air in the furnace burns the greater part of the carbon out of it. By this means it becomes tough; and, without cooling is taken from the furnace and repeatedly beaten by large hammers, or squeezed through large rollers, until it becomes the bar-iron of which so much use is made in every art of life.

About the close of the last century the great improvement in the manufacture of bar-iron was introduced by passing it through grooved rollers, instead of hammering it on the anvil; but in our own time the invention has become most important. The inventor, Mr. Cort, spent a fortune on the enterprise and died poor. His son, in 1812, petitioned Parliament to assign him some reward for the great gift that his father had bestowed upon the nation. He asked in vain. It is the common fate of the ingenious and the learned; and it is well that life has some other consolations for the man that has exercised his intellect more profitably for the world than for himself, than the pride of the mere capitalist, who thinks accumulation, and accumulation only, the chief business of existence. Rolling bar-iron is one of the great labour-saving principles that especially prevail in every branch of manufacture in metals. The unaided strength of all the men in Britain could not make all the iron which is at present made, though they did nothing

else. Machinery is therefore resorted to; and water-wheels, steam-engines, and all sorts of powers are set to work in moving hammers, turning rollers, and drawing rods and wires through holes, till every workman can have



*Rolling bar-iron.*

the particular form which he wants. If it were not for the machinery that is employed in the manufacture, no man could obtain a spade for less than the price of a year's labour; the yokes of a horse would cost more than the horse himself; and the farmer would have to return to wooden ploughshares, and hoes made of sticks with crooked ends.

After all this, the iron is not yet fit for a knife, at least for such a knife as an Englishman may buy for a shilling. Many nations would, however, be thankful for a little bit of it, and nations too, in whose countries there is no want of iron-ore. But they have no knowledge of the method of

making iron, and have no furnaces or machinery. When our ships sail among the people of the eastern islands, those people do not ask for gold. "Iron, iron!" is the call; and he who can exchange his best commodity for a rusty nail or a bit of iron hoop is a fortunate individual.

We are not satisfied with that in the best form, which is a treasure to those people in the worst. We must have a knife, not of iron, but of *steel*,—a substance that will bear a keen edge without either breaking or bending. In order to get that, we must again change the nature of our material.

How is that to be done? The oftener that iron is heated and hammered, it becomes the softer and more ductile; and as the heating and hammering forced the carbon out of it, if we give it the carbon back again, we shall harden it; but it happens that we also give it other properties, by restoring its carbon, when the iron has once been in a ductile state.

For this purpose, bars or pieces of iron are buried in powdered charcoal, covered up in a vessel, and kept at a red heat for a greater or less number of hours, according to the object desired. There are niceties in the process, which it is not necessary to explain, that produce the peculiar quality of steel, as distinguished from cast-iron. If the operation of heating the iron in charcoal is continued too long, or the heat is too great, the iron becomes cast steel, and cannot be welded; but if it is not melted in the operation, it can be worked with the hammer in the same manner as iron.

In each case, however, it has acquired the property upon which the keenness of the knife depends; and the chief difference between the cast steel and the steel that can bear to be hammered is, that cast steel takes a keener edge, but is more easily broken.

The property which it has acquired is that of bearing to be tempered. If it be made very hot, and plunged into cold water, and kept there till it is quite cooled, it is so hard that it will cut iron, but it is brittle. In this state

the workman brightens the surface, and lays the steel upon a piece of hot iron, and holds it to the fire till it becomes of a colour which he knows from experience is a test of the proper state of the process. Then he plunges it again into water, and it has the degree of hardness that he wants.

The grinding a knife, and the polishing it, even when it has acquired the requisite properties of steel, if they were not done by machinery, would cost more than the whole price of a knife upon which machinery is used. A travelling knife-grinder, with his treadle and wheels, has a machine, but not a very perfect one. The Sheffield knife-maker grinds the knife at first upon wheels of immense size, turned by water or steam, and moving so quickly that they appear to stand still—the eye cannot follow the motion. With these aids the original grinding and polishing cost scarcely anything; while the travelling knife-grinder charges two pence for the labour of himself and his wheel in just sharpening it.

The “Sheffield whittle” is as old as the time of Edward III., as we know from the poet Chaucer. Sheffield is still the metropolis of steel. It is in the change of iron into steel by a due admixture of carbon—by hammering, by casting, by melting—that the natural powers of Sheffield, her water and her coal, have become of such value. Wherever there is a stream with a fall, there is the grinding-wheel at work: and in hundreds of workshops the nicer labour of the artificer is fashioning the steel into every instrument which the art of man can devise, from the scythe of the mower to the lancet of the surgeon. The machinery that made the steel has called into action the skill that makes the file-cutter. No machine can make a file.<sup>7</sup> The file-cutter with a small hammer can cut notch after notch in a piece of softened steel, without a guide or gauge,—even to the number of a hundred notches in an inch. It is one out of many things in which skilled labour triumphs over the uniformity of operation which belongs to a machine. This

is one, also, of the numerous instances in which it is evident that the application of machinery to the arts calls into action an almost infinite variety of handicrafts. An ordinary workman can obtain a knife for the price of a few hours' labour. The causes are easily seen. Every part of the labour that can be done by machinery is so done. One turn of a wheel, one stroke of a steam-engine, one pinch of a pair of rollers, or one blow of a die, will do more in a second than a man could do in a month. One man, also, has but one thing to do in connection with the machinery; and when the work of the hand succeeds to the work of the wheel or the roller, the one man, like the file-cutter, has still but one thing to do. In the course of time he comes to do twenty times as much as if he were constantly shifting from one thing to another. The value of the work that a man does is not to be measured in all cases by the time and trouble that it cost him individually, but by the market value of what he produces; which value is determined, as far as labour is concerned, by the price paid for doing it in the best and most expeditious mode.

And does not all this machinery, and this economy of labour, it may still be said, deprive many workmen of employment? No. By these means the iron trade gives bread to hundreds, where otherwise it would not have given bread to one. There are more hands employed at the iron-works than there would have been if there had been no machinery; because without machinery men could not produce iron cheap enough to be generally used.

The machinery that is now employed in the iron trade, not only enables the people to be supplied cheaply with all sorts of articles of iron, but it enables a great number of people to find employment, not in the iron trade only, but in all other trades, who otherwise could not have been employed; and it enables everybody to do more work with the same exertion by giving them better tools; while it makes all more comfortable by furnishing them with more commodious domestic utensils.

There are thousands of families on the face of the earth that would be glad to exchange all they have for a tin kettle, or an iron pot, which can be bought anywhere in the three kingdoms for a shilling or two. And could the poor man in this country but once see how even the rich man in some other places must toil day after day before he can scrape or grind a stone so as to be able to boil a little water in it, or make it serve for a lamp, he would account himself a poor man no more. An English gipsy carries about with him more of the conveniences of life than are enjoyed by the chiefs or rulers in countries which naturally have much finer climates than that of England. But they have no machinery, and therefore they are wretched.

Great Britain is a country rich in other minerals than iron-stone and coal. Our earliest ancestors are recorded to have exchanged tin with maritime people who came to our shores. They had lead also, which was cast into oblong blocks during the Roman occupation of the island, and which bear the imperial stamp. At the beginning of the eighteenth century we worked tin into pewter, which, in the shape of plates, had superseded wooden trenchers. But we raised and smelted no copper, importing it unwrought. The valuable tin and copper mines of Cornwall were imperfectly worked in the middle of the last century, because the water which overflowed them was only removed by hydraulic engines, the best of which was introduced in 1700. When Watt had reconstructed the steam-engine, steam-power began to be employed in draining the Cornwall mines.

In all mining operations, conducted as they are in modern times, and in our own country, we must either go without the article produced, whether coal, or iron, or lead, or copper, if the machines were abolished,—or we must employ human labour, in works the most painful, at a price which would not only render existence unbearable, but destroy it altogether. The people, in that case, would be in the condition of the unhappy natives of South America, when the Spaniards resolved to get gold at any cost of

human suffering. The Spaniards had no machines but pickaxes and spades to put in the hands of the poor Indians. They compelled them to labour incessantly with these, and half the people were destroyed. Without machinery, in places where people can obtain even valuable ore for nothing, the collection and preparation of metals is hardly worth the labour. Mungo Park describes the sad condition of the Africans who are always washing gold-dust;—and we have seen in Derbyshire a poor man separating small particles of lead from the limestone, or spar, of that country, and unable to earn a shilling a day by the process. A man of capital erects lead-works, and in a year or two obtains an adequate profit, and employs many labourers.

In the Census of Occupations, 1861, the persons “working and dealing in minerals” is stated as 1,012,997. For the various divisions of these employments, we refer to the Appendix, Class V.

The boldness of some of the operations which are conducted in this department of industry, the various skill of the labourers, and the vastness of the aggregate results, impress the mind with a sense of power that almost belongs to the sublime. The fables of mythology are tame when compared with those realities of science. Vulcan with his anvils in *Ætna*, is a feeble instrument by the side of a steam-hammer that forges an anchor, or the hydraulic press that lifts a bridge. A knot of Cupids co-operating for the fabrication of their barbed arrows is the poetry of painting applied to the arts. But there is higher poetry in that triumph of knowledge, and skill, and union of forces, which fills a furnace with fifty thousand pounds of molten iron, and conducts the red-hot stream to the enormous mould which is to produce a cylinder without a flaw.

The changes in the amount of mineral production, not only in Great Britain, but in the whole of the world, have become so great and so rapid, that it would be wearisome and unprofitable to enumerate the quantities of particular products at the latest period of statistical information.

The Returns of "Occupations" will furnish some notion of the extent of new employments created by recent discoveries and inventions. With reference to the especial subjects of this chapter, we may quote a striking passage from the "Jurors' Reports" of the International Exhibition of 1862:—

"Never before, in the history of man, have the products of the mineral kingdom exercised within a brief period so momentous an influence on the fortunes of nations as that which in the last fourteen years has riveted the attention of the whole civilized world. If we look back only to the date of our first universal Exhibition, we find that a series of changes has been brought about which, but for the potency of the effect produced by mineral substances, would have required decades of years if not centuries to accomplish. Coal, the great basis of manufacture and locomotion, has been extracted on a scale never before contemplated, and sought for and found in new countries and under new conditions with something like equal strides; it has also been made to yield a variety of products brought with unexampled rapidity into the applications of daily life. Iron and steel have been manufactured in masses and applied to purposes equally unknown in former times. Metals scarcely known except by name in 1851, have become the subjects of operations of commercial importance. And lastly, the succession of gold discoveries in so many widely separated and enormous regions has led to the exploration and settlement of vast tracts by myriads of men, with a facility which was impossible before the extended use of iron and coal had smoothed the way for so gigantic an emigration."

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XII.

1. What are the processes by which iron is extracted from iron ore?
2. What efforts of machinery are required to produce cast iron?
3. What would be the result of an endeavour to raise coal without machinery?

4. By what means is coal raised to such an extent in Great Britain?
5. By what improvement of modern science has the value of our cast iron been principally increased?
6. What has saved the iron trade from extinction?
7. By what processes is cast iron converted into malleable iron?
8. By what processes is bar iron converted into steel?
9. Mention a case in which skilled labour must take the place of machinery.
10. What are the causes of the cheapness of iron articles in Great Britain?
11. What is the effect on labour of the employment of machinery in the iron trade?
12. What is the effect on the condition of the labourer?
13. What is the effect on the mining operations of Great Britain of the employment of steam power?
14. Have there been any great changes in the amount of mineral production throughout the world during the last fourteen years?
15. Mention the chief of those changes.

### *CHAPTER XIII.*

Conveyance and extended use of coal—Consumption at various periods—Condition of the roads in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries—Advantages of good roads—Want of roads in Australia—Turnpike roads—Canals—Railway of 1680—Railway statistics.

WE have seen how by machinery millions of tons of coal—now become one of the very first necessities of life—are obtained, which without machinery could not be obtained at all in the thousandth part of the quantity; and which, consequently, would be a thousand times the price—would, in fact, be precious stones, instead of common fuel.

Engines or machines, of some kind or other, not only keep the pits dry and raise the coals to the surface, but convey them to the ship upon iron rails; the ship, itself a machine, carries them round all parts of the coast; barges and boats convey them along the rivers and canals; and, within a very recent period, railways have carried the coals of the north into remote places in the southern and other counties, where what was called “sea-coal,” from its being carried coastwise, was scarcely known as an article of domestic use. The inhabitants of such places had no choice but to consume wood and turf for every domestic purpose.

Through the general consumption of wood instead of coal, a fire for domestic use in France is a great deal dearer than a fire in England; because, although the coal-pits are not to be found at every man's door, nor within many miles of the doors of some men, machinery at the pits, and ships and barges, and railways, which are also

machinery, enable most men to enjoy the blessings of a coal fire at a much cheaper rate than a fire of wood, which is not limited in its growth to any particular district. Without the machinery to bring coals to his door, not one man out of fifty of the present population of England could have had the power of warming himself in winter; any more than without the machines and implements of farming he could obtain food, or without those of the arts he could procure clothing. The sufferings produced by a want of fuel cannot be estimated by those who have abundance. In Normandy, very recently, such was the scarcity of wood, that persons engaged in various works of hand, as lace-making by the pillow, absolutely sat up through the winter nights in the barns of the farmers, where cattle were littered down, that they might be kept warm by the animal heat around them. They slept in the day, and were warmed by being in the same outhouse with cows and horses at night;—and thus they worked under every disadvantage, because fuel was scarce and very dear.

Coals were consumed in London in the time of Queen Elizabeth; but their use was, no doubt, very limited. Shakspere, who always refers to the customs of his own time, makes Dame Quickly speak of “sitting in my Dolphin-chamber at the round table, by a sea-coal fire, on Wednesday in Whitsun week.” But Mrs. Quickly was a luxurious person, who had plate and tapestry and gilt goblets. Harrison, in his ‘Description of Britain,’ at the same period, says, that coal is “used in the cities and towns that lie about the coast;” but he adds, “I marvel not a little that there is no trade of these into Sussex and Southamptonshire; for want thereof the smiths do work their iron with charcoal.” He adds, with great truth, “I think that far carriage be the only cause.”

The consumption of coal in London in the last year of Charles II. (1685) amounted to three hundred and fifty thousand tons. This was really a large consumption, however insignificant it may sound when compared with

the modern demand of the metropolis. In 1801 there were imported into London about a million tons of coals. At the present time the quantities brought to the London markets are six times as great. The average contract price in the ten years ending 1810 was 4*s.* 6*d.* It may be roughly stated that during the last forty years the price of coals, delivered at his own door to the consumer in London and the suburbs, has been reduced to more than one half of the former price. In 1824 the oppressive duty of 7*s.* 6*d.* per ton on seaborne coals was reduced to 4*s.*; and in 1831 the duty was wholly repealed. It is the boast of our present fiscal system that the chief materials of manufacture, and the great necessities and conveniences of life, are no longer made dear by injudicious taxation. But the competition of railways has had a material effect in giving to the Londoners an increased supply of coal, fully equal to the increase of the population. The same mode of inland conveyance has so cheapened fuel in many country towns that the vicinity of the railway station is held as one of the greatest blessings of the inhabitants.

The chief power which produces coal and iron cheap is that of machinery. It is the same power which distributes these bulky articles through the country, and equalizes the cost in a considerable degree to the man who lives in London and the man who lives in Durham or Staffordshire. The difference in cost is the price of transport; and machinery, applied in various improved ways, is every year lessening the cost of conveyance, and thus equalizing prices throughout the British Islands. The same applications of mechanical power enable a man to move from one place to another with equal ease, cheapness, and rapidity. Quick travelling has become cheaper than slow travelling. The time saved remains for profitable labour.

About two hundred years ago, when the first turnpike-road was formed in England, a mob broke the toll-gates, because they thought an unjust tax was being put upon them. They did not perceive that this small tax for the use

of a road would confer upon them innumerable comforts, and double and treble the means of employment.

If there were no road, and no bridge, a man would take six months in finding his way from London to Edinburgh, if indeed he found it at all. He would have to keep the line of the hills, in order that he might come upon the rivers at particular spots, where he would be able to jump over them with ease, or wade through them without danger.

When a man has gone up the bank of a river for twelve miles in one direction, in order to be able to cross it, he may find that, before he proceeds one mile in the line of his journey, he has to go along the bank of another river for twelve miles in the opposite direction; and the courses of the rivers may be so crooked that he is really farther from his journey's end at night than he was in the morning.

He may come to the side of a lake, and not know the end at which the river, too broad and deep for him to cross, runs out; and he may go twenty miles the wrong way, and thus lose forty.

Difficulties such as these are felt by every traveller in an uncivilized country. In reading books of travels, in Africa for instance, we sometimes wonder how it is that the adventurer proceeds a very few miles each day. We forget that he has no roads.

Two hundred years ago—even one hundred years ago—in some places fifty years ago—the roads of England were wholly unfit for general traffic and the conveyance of heavy goods. Pack-horses mostly carried on the communication in the manufacturing districts. The roads were as unfit for moving commodities of bulk, such as coal, wood, and corn, as the sandy roads of Poland were thirty years ago, and as many still are. Mr. Jacob, who went upon the continent to see what stores of wheat existed, found that in many parts the original price of wheat was doubled by the price of land conveyance for a very few miles.

In 1663 the first turnpike act, which was so offensive to

some of the people, was carried through Parliament. It was for the repair of the “ancient highway and post-road leading from London to York,” which was declared to be “very ruinous, and become almost impassable.” This was, on many accounts, one of the most important lines of the country. Let us see in what state it was seventeen years after the passing of the act. In the ‘Diary of Ralph Thoresby,’ under the date of October, 1680, we have this entry :—“To Ware, twenty miles from London, a most pleasant road in summer, and as bad in winter, because of the depth of the cart-ruts.” Take another road a little later. In December, 1703, Charles III., King of Spain, slept at Petworth on his way from Portsmouth to Windsor, and Prince George of Denmark went to meet him there by desire of the Queen. The distance from Windsor to Petworth is about forty miles. In the relation of the journey given by one of the prince’s attendants, he states,—“ We set out at six in the morning, by torchlight, to go to Petworth, and did not get out of the coaches (save only when we were overturned or stuck fast in the mire) till we arrived at our journey’s end. ’Twas a hard service for the Prince to sit fourteen hours in the coach that day without eating anything, and passing through the worst ways I ever saw in my life. We were thrown but once indeed in going, but our coach, which was the leading one, and his Highness’s body-coach, would have suffered very much, if the nimble boors of Sussex had not frequently poised it, or supported it with their shoulders, from Godalming almost to Petworth, and the nearer we approached the duke’s house the more inaccessible it seemed to be. The last nine miles of the way cost us six hours’ time to conquer them.” From Horsham, the county town of Sussex, about the beginning of the reign of George III., the roads were never in such a condition as to allow sheep or cattle to be driven on them to the London market; and consequently, there not being sufficient demand at home to give a remunerating price, the beef and mutton were sold at a rate far below the average to

the small population in the country, which was thus isolated from the common channels of demand and supply.

In the Highlands of Scotland, at the beginning of the present century, the communication from one district to another was attended with such difficulty and danger, that some of the counties were excused from sending jurors to the circuit to assist in the administration of justice. The poor people inhabiting these districts were almost entirely cut off from intercourse with the rest of mankind. The Highlands were of less advantage to the British empire than the most distant colony. Parliament resolved to remedy the evil; and, accordingly, from 1802 to 1817, the sum of two hundred thousand pounds was laid out in making roads and bridges in these mountainous districts. Mark the important consequences to the people of the Highlands, as described by Mr. Telford, the engineer of the roads :—

“ Since these roads were made accessible, wheelwrights and cartwrights have been established, the plough has been introduced, and improved tools and utensils are used. The plough was not previously used in general; in the interior and mountainous parts they frequently used crooked sticks with iron on them, drawn or pushed along. The moral habits of the great mass of the working classes are changed; they see that they may depend upon their own exertions for support. This goes on silently, and is scarcely perceived until apparent by the results. I consider these improvements one of the greatest blessings ever conferred upon any country. About two hundred thousand pounds has been granted in fifteen years. It has been the means of advancing the country at least one hundred years.”

There are many parts of Ireland which sustained the same miseries and inconveniences from the want of roads as the Highlands of Scotland did at the beginning of the present century. In 1823 Mr. Nimmo, the engineer, stated to Parliament, that the fertile plains of Limerick, Cork, and Kerry, were separated from each other by a deserted

country, presenting an impassable barrier between them. This region was the retreat of smugglers, robbers, and culprits of every description; for the tract was a wild, neglected, and deserted country, without roads, culture, or civilization. The government ordered roads to be made through the barren district. We will take one example of the immediate effect of this road-making, as described by a witness before Parliament:—"A hatter, at Castle-island, had a small field through which the new road passed; this part next the town was not opened until 1826. In making arrangements with him for his damages, he said that he ought to make me (the engineer) a present of all the land he had, for that the second year I was at the roads he sold more hats to the people of the mountains alone than he did for seven years before to the high and low lands together. Although he never worked a day on the roads, he got comfort and prosperity by them."

The hatter of Castle-island got comfort and prosperity by the roads, because the man who had to sell and the man who had to buy were brought closer to each other by means of the roads. When there were no roads, the hatter kept his goods upon the shelf, and the labourer in the mountains went without a hat. When the labourer and the hatter were brought together by the roads, the hatter soon sold off his stock, and the manufacturer of hats went to work to produce him a new stock; while the labourer, who found the advantage of having a hat, also went to work to earn more money, that he might pay for another when he should require it. It became a fashion to wear hats, and of course a fashion to work hard, and to save time, to be able to pay for them. Thus the road created industry on both sides,—on the side of the producer of hats and that of the consumer.

There must be general civilization before there are extensive roads. It has taken eighteen centuries to make our English roads, and the Romans, the kings of the world, were our great road-makers, whose works still remain:—

“ Labouring pioneers,  
A multitude with spades and axes arm'd,  
To lay hills plain, fell woods, or valleys fill,  
Or where plain was raise hill, or overlay  
With bridges rivers proud, as with a yoke.”—PARADISE REGAINED.

What the Romans were to England, the colonized English must be to Australia. But the discovery of great natural wealth, the vigour of the race, the intercourse with commercial nations of the old and new world, the free institutions which have been transplanted there without any arbitrary meddling or chilling patronage, will effect in a quarter of a century what the parent people, struggling with ignorant rulers and feeble resources, have been ages in accomplishing.

It is encouraging to all nations to see what we have accomplished in this direction.

In 1839, the turnpike-roads of England and Wales amounted to 21,962 miles, and in Scotland to 3666 miles; while in England and Wales the other highways amounted to 104,772 miles. The turnpike-roads were maintained at a cost of a million a year; and the parish highways at a cost of about twelve hundred thousand pounds. There were at that time nearly eight thousand toll-gates in England and Wales. There had been two thousand miles of turnpike-roads, and ten thousand miles of other highways, added to the number existing in 1814. But the improvements of all our roads during that period had been enormous. Science was brought to bear upon the turnpike lines. Common sense changed their form and re-organized their material. The most beautiful engineering was applied to raise valleys and lower hills. Mountains were crossed with ease; rivers were spanned over by massive piers, or by bridges which hung in the air like fairy platforms. The names of M'Adam and Telford became “household words.”

The system of railways had a natural tendency to put a stop to such great works as these and other engineers had been carrying forward early in the century. But the

general principles of road-making have not been neglected, and few of the great lines, now seldom used for rapid travelling, have been suffered to decay. Meanwhile, the parish highways, managed, in most cases, by incompetent surveyors, have not been correspondently improved. The legislature has at length seen the necessity of a better system of administration ; and the parochial authorities have become subsidiary to local boards composed of men of property and intelligence. These understand the real economy of the employment of scientific engineers, even for the construction of a road through the green lanes that connect one village with another.

The Canals of England date only for a hundred years back. The first Act of Parliament for the construction of a canal was passed in 1755. The Duke of Bridgewater obtained his first Act of Parliament in 1759, for the construction of those noble works which will connect his memory with those who have been the greatest benefactors of their country. The great manufacturing prosperity of England dates from this period ; and it will be for ever associated with the names of Watt, the improver and almost the inventor of the steam-engine,—of Arkwright, the presiding genius of cotton-spinning,—and of Brindley, the great engineer of canals. In the conception of the vast works which Brindley undertook for the Duke of Bridgewater, there was an originality and boldness which may have been carried further in recent engineering, but which a century ago were the creators of works which were looked upon as marvels. To cut tunnels through hills—to carry mounds across valleys—to build aqueducts over navigable rivers—were regarded then as wild and impracticable conceptions. Another engineer, at Brindley's desire, was called in to give an opinion as to a proposed aqueduct over the river Irwell. He looked at the spot where the aqueduct was to be built, and exclaimed, “I have often heard of castles in the air, but never before was shown the place where any of them were to be erected.”

Brindley's castle in the air still stands firm; and his example, and that of his truly illustrious employer, have covered our land with many such fabrics, which owe their origin not to the government but to the people.

The navigable canals of England are more than two thousand miles in length. For the slow transport of heavy goods they hold their place against the competition of railroads, and continue to be important instruments of internal commerce. When railways were first projected it is said that an engineer, being asked what would become of the canals if the new mode of transit were adopted, answered that they would be drained and become the beds of railways. Like many other predictions connected with the last great medium of internal communication, the engineer was wholly mistaken in his prophecy.

The great principle of exchange between one part of this empire and another part, which has ceased to be an affair of restrictions and jealousies, has covered the island with good roads, with canals, and finally with railways. The railway and the steam-carriage have carried the principle of diminishing the price of conveyance, and therefore of commodities, by machinery, to an extent which makes all other illustrations almost unnecessary. A road with a waggon moving on it is a mechanical combination; a canal, with its locks, and towing-paths, and boats gliding along almost without effort, is a higher mechanical combination; a railway, with its locomotive engine, and carriage after carriage dragged along at the rate of thirty or forty miles an hour, is the highest of such mechanical combinations. The force applied upon a level turnpike-road, which is required to move 1800 lbs., if applied to drag a canal-boat will move 55,500 lbs., both at the rate of  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles per hour. But we want economy in time as well as economy in the application of motive power. It has been attempted to apply speed to canal travelling. Up to four miles an hour the canal can convey an equal weight more economically than a railroad; but after a certain

velocity is exceeded, that is,  $13\frac{1}{2}$  miles an hour, the horse on the turnpike-road can drag as much as the canal-team. Then comes in the great advantage of the railroad. The same force that is required to draw 1900 lbs. upon a canal, at a rate above  $13\frac{1}{2}$  miles an hour, will draw 14,400 lbs. upon a railway, at the rate of  $13\frac{1}{2}$  miles an hour. The producers and consumers are thus brought together, not only at the least cost of transit, but at the least expenditure of time. The road, the canal, and the railway have each their distinctive advantages; and it is worthy of note how they work together. From every railway station there must be a road to the adjacent towns and villages, and a better road than was once thought necessary. Horses are required as much as ever, although mails and post-chaises are no longer the glories of the road; and the post finds its way into every hamlet by the united agency of the road and the railway.

Roger North described a Newcastle railway in 1680:—  
“Another thing that is remarkable is their way-leaves; for when men have pieces of ground between the colliery and the river, they sell leave to lead coals over their ground; and so dear that the owner of a rood of ground will expect 20*l.* per annum for this leave. The manner of the carriage is by laying rails of timber, from the colliery down to the river, exactly straight and parallel; and bulky carts are made with four rowlets fitting these rails; whereby the carriage is so easy that the horse will draw down four or five chaldron of coals, and is an immense benefit to the coal-merchant.” Who would have thought that this contrivance would have led to no large results till a hundred and fifty years had passed away? Who could have believed that “the rails of timber, exactly straight and parallel,” and the “bulky carts with four rowlets exactly fitting the rails,” would have changed the face, and to a great degree the destinies, of the world?

If we add to the road, the canal, and the railway, the steam-boat traffic of our own coasts, we cannot hesitate to believe that the whole territory of Great Britain and

Ireland is more compact, more closely united, more accessible, than was a single county two centuries ago. It may be said, without exaggeration, that it would now be impossible for a traveller in England to set himself down in any accessible situation where the post from London would not reach him in twelve hours. When the first edition of the "Results of Machinery" was published in 1831, we said that the posts from London would reach any part of England in three days; and that, "fifty years before, such a quickness of communication would have been considered beyond the compass of human means." In thirty-four years we have so diminished the practical amount of distance between one part of Great Britain and another, that if a letter be despatched from London to Aberdeen, a distance of five hundred and forty miles, on Monday night, it is delivered in Aberdeen soon after noon on Tuesday; and the reply may be written and despatched on Tuesday so as to reach London in time for delivery before noon on Wednesday. It is this wonderful rapidity of communication, in connection with the cheapness of postage, which has multiplied letters eightfold since 1839, when the penny rate was introduced. In that year the number of chargeable and franked letters distributed in the United Kingdom was eighty-two millions; in 1863 it was six hundred and forty-two millions.

The annual returns of our railways furnish some of the most astounding figures of modern statistics. On the 31st of December, 1864, there were open in England 8890 miles of railway; in Scotland, 2105 miles; in Ireland, 1794 miles; making a total for the United Kingdom of 12,789 miles. In 1864, there were one hundred and ninety-seven millions of passengers conveyed in England, twenty millions in Scotland, and eleven millions in Ireland. The total receipts from passenger-traffic were, in 1864, above fifteen millions and a half sterling; and from all sources of traffic, thirty-four millions.

When William Hutton, in the middle of last century, started from Nottingham (where he earned a scanty living

as a bookbinder) and walked to London and back for the purpose of buying tools, he was nine days from home, six of which were spent in going and returning. He travelled on foot, dreading robbers, and still more dreading the cost of food and lodging at public-houses. His whole expenses during this toilsome expedition were only ten shillings and eightpence ; but he contented himself with the barest necessities, keeping the money for his tools sewed up in his shirt-collar. If William Hutton had lived in these days, he would, upon sheer principles of economy, have gone to London by the Nottingham train at a cost of twenty shillings for his transit, in one forenoon, and returned in another. The twenty shillings would have been sacrificed for his conveyance, but he would have had a week's labour free to go to work with his new tools ; he need not have sewed his money in his shirt-collar for fear of thieves ; and his shoes would not have been worn out and his feet blistered in his toilsome march of two hundred and fifty miles.

A very few years ago it was not uncommon to hear men say that this wonderful communication, the greatest triumph of modern skill, was not a blessing ;—for the machinery had put somebody out of employ. Baron Humboldt, a traveller in South America, tells us that, upon a road being made over a part of the great chain of mountains called the Andes, the government was petitioned against the road by a body of men who for centuries had gained a living by carrying travellers in baskets strapped upon their backs over the fearful rocks, which only these guides could cross. Which was the better course—to make the road, and create the thousand employments belonging to freedom of intercourse, for these very carriers of travellers, and for all other men ; or to leave the mountains without a road, that the poor guides might make a premium for risking their lives in an unnecessary peril ? But, looking at their direct results, we have no doubt that railroads have greatly multiplied the employments connected with the conveyance of goods and passengers. But the indirect occupations

called into activity by railroads are so numerous as to defy all attempts at calculating the numbers engaged in them. No doubt many occupations were changed by railroads ;—there were fewer coachmen, guards, postboys, waggoners, and others, on such a post-road as that from London to York. But it is equally certain that throughout the kingdom there are far more persons employed in conducting the internal communication of the country, effecting that great addition to its productive powers, without which all other production would languish and decay. (See Appendix, Occupation of the People, Commercial Class.)

The vast extension, and the new channels, of our foreign commerce have been greatly affected by the prodigious facilities of our internal communication. They have created, in a measure, special departments of industry, which can be most advantageously pursued in particular localities ; but which railways and steam-vessels have united with the whole kingdom, with its colonies, with the habitable globe. The reindeer connects the Laplander with the markets of Sweden, and draws his sledge over the frozen wilds at a speed and power of continuance only rivalled by the locomotive. The same beneficent Providence which has given this animal to the inhabitant of the polar regions,—not only for food, for clothing, but for transport to associate him with some civilization,—has bestowed upon us the mighty power of steam, to connect us with the entire world, from which we were once held to be wholly separated.

#### QUESTIONS TO CHAPTER XIII.

1. Enumerate the various applications of machinery to the coal trade.
2. What is the cause that a wood fire is dearer than a coal fire ?
3. What has been the rate of increase in the consumption of coal since 1685 ?
4. What causes the difference of cost in coal ?
5. Give an instance of the importance of roads.
6. Give some instances of the state of the roads in Great Britain in the last century.

7. What effect had the making of roads on the condition of the Highlanders?
8. Give an instance of the immediate effect of road-making in Ireland.
9. How is industry created by the making of roads?
10. What is one of the main causes of the uncertainty of trade with Australia?
11. What is the comparative cost of conveying goods from London to Sydney, and from Sydney to Bathurst?
12. What is the cause of this?
13. What has the principle of exchange effected in the means of communication in England?
14. What is the highest mechanical combination to reduce the price of conveyance?
15. What was the first application of the railway principle?
16. What has been the effect of the improved means of communication in Great Britain and Ireland?
17. What has been the increase in the number of letters carried by the post since 1839?
18. What has been the increase in the speed of their conveyance?
19. How has labour been affected by the establishment of railways?
20. How has our foreign commerce been affected by the facilities of internal communication?

### *CHAPTER XIV.*

Houses—The pyramids—Mechanical power—Carpenter's tools—American machinery for building—Bricks—Slate—Household fittings and furniture—Paper-hangings—Carpets—Glass—Pottery—Improvements effected through the reduction or repeal of duties on domestic requirements.

THE beaver builds his huts with the tools which nature has given him. He gnaws pieces of wood in two with his sharp teeth, so sharp that the teeth of a similar animal, the agouti, form the only cutting-tool which some rude nations possess. When the beavers desire to move a large piece of wood, they join in a body to drag it along.

Man has not teeth that will cut wood : but he has reason, which directs him to the choice of much more perfect tools.

Some of the great monuments of antiquity, such as the pyramids of Egypt, are constructed of enormous blocks of stone brought from distant quarries. We have no means of estimating, with any accuracy, the mechanical knowledge possessed by the people engaged in these works. It was, probably, very small, and, consequently, the human labour employed in such edifices was not only enormous in quantity, but exceedingly painful to the workmen. The Egyptians, according to Herodotus, a Greek writer who lived two thousand five hundred years ago, hated the memory of the kings who built the pyramids. He tells us that the great pyramid occupied a hundred thousand men for twenty years in its erection, without counting the workmen who were employed in hewing the stones, and in conveying them to the spot where the pyramid was built. Herodotus

speaks of this work as a torment to the people ; and doubtless the labour engaged in raising huge masses of stone, that was extensive enough to employ a hundred thousand men for twenty years, which is equal to two millions of men for one year, must have been fearfully tormenting without machinery, or with very imperfect machinery. It has been calculated that about half the steam-engines of England, worked by thirty-six thousand men, would raise the same quantity of stones from the quarry, and elevate them to the same height as the great pyramid, in the short time of eighteen hours. The people of Egypt groaned for twenty years under this enormous work. The labourers groaned because they were sorely taxed ; and the rest of the people groaned because they had to pay the labourers. The labourers lived, it is true, upon the wages of their labour, that is, they were paid in food—kept like horses—as the reward of their work. Herodotus says that it was recorded on the pyramid that the onions, radishes, and garlic which the labourers consumed, cost sixteen hundred talents of silver : an immense sum, equivalent to several million pounds. But the onions, radishes, and garlic, the bread, and clothes of the labourer, were wrung out of the profitable labour of the rest of the people. The building of the pyramid was an unprofitable labour. There was no immediate or future source of produce in the pyramid ; it produced neither food, nor fuel, nor clothes, nor any other necessary. The labour of a hundred thousand men for twenty years, stupidly employed upon this monument, without an object beyond that of gratifying the pride of the tyrant who raised it, was a direct tax upon the profitable labour of the rest of the people.

“ Instead of useful works, like nature great,  
Enormous cruel wonders crushed the land.”

But admitting that it is sometimes desirable for nations and governments to erect monuments which are not of direct utility—which may have an indirect utility in re-

cording the memory of great exploits, or in producing feelings of reverence and devotion—it is clearly an advantage that these works, as well as all other works, should be performed in the cheapest manner, that is, that human labour should derive every possible assistance from mechanical aid. We will give an illustration of the differences of the application of mechanical aid in one of the first operations of building, the moving a block of stone. The following statements are the result of actual experiment upon a stone weighing ten hundred and eighty pounds.

To drag this stone along the smoothed floor of the quarry required a force equal to seven hundred and fifty-eight pounds. The same stone dragged over a floor of planks required six hundred and fifty-two pounds. The same stone placed on a platform of wood, and dragged over the same floor of planks, required six hundred and six pounds. When the two surfaces of wood were soaped as they slid over each other, the force required to drag the stone was reduced to one hundred and eighty-two pounds. When the same stone was placed upon rollers three inches in diameter, it required, to put it in motion along the floor of the quarry, a force only of thirty-four pounds; and by the same rollers upon a wooden floor, a force only of twenty-eight pounds. Without any mechanical aid, it would require the force of four or five men to set that stone in motion. With the mechanical aid of two surfaces of wood soaped, the same weight might be moved by one man. With the more perfect mechanical aid of rollers, the same weight might be moved by a very little child.

From these statements it must be evident that the cost of a block of stone very much depends upon the quantity of labour necessary to move it from the quarry to the place where it is wanted to be used. We have seen that with the simplest mechanical aid labour may be reduced sixty-fold. With more perfect mechanical aid, such as that of water-carriage, the labour may be reduced infinitely lower.

Thus, the streets of London are paved with granite from Scotland at a moderate expense.

The cost of timber, which enters so largely into the cost of a house, is in a great degree the cost of transport. In countries where there are great forests, timber-trees are worth nothing where they grow, except there are ready means of transport. In many parts of North America, the great difficulty which the people find is in clearing the land of the timber. The finest trees are not only worthless, but are a positive incumbrance, except when they are growing upon the banks of a great river; in which case the logs are thrown into the water, or formed into rafts, being floated several hundred miles at scarcely any expense. The same stream which carries them to a seaport turns a mill to saw the logs into planks; and when sawn into planks the timber is put on shipboard, and carried to distant countries where timber is wanted. Thus, mechanical aid alone gives a value to the timber, and by so doing employs human labour. The stream that floats the tree, the sawing-mill that cuts it, the ship that carries it across the sea, enable men profitably to employ themselves in working it. Without the stream, the mill, and the ship, those men would have no labour, because none could afford to bring the timber to their own doors.

What an infinite variety of machines, in combination with the human hand, is found in a carpenter's chest of tools! The skilful hand of the workman is the *power* which sets these machines in motion; just as the wind or the water is the power of a mill, or the elastic force of vapour the power of a steam-engine. When Mr. Boulton, the partner of the great James Watt, waited upon George III. to explain one of the improvements of the steam-engine which they had effected, the king said to him, "What do you sell, Mr. Boulton?" and the honest engineer answered, "What kings, sire, are all fond of—*power*." There are people at Birmingham who let out *power*, that is, there are people who have steam-engines who will lend the use of

them, by the day or the hour, to persons who require that saving of labour in their various trades ; so that a person who wants the strength of a horse, or half a horse, to turn a wheel for grinding, or for setting a lathe in motion, hires a room or part of a room in a mill, and has just as much as he requires. The *power* of a carpenter is in his hand, and the machines moved by that power are in his chest of tools. Every toil which he possesses has for its object to reduce labour, to save material, and to ensure accuracy—the objects of all machines. What a quantity of waste both of time and stuff is saved by his foot-rule ! and when he chalks a bit of string and stretches it from one end of a plank to the other, to jerk off the chalk from the string, and thus produce an unerring line upon the face of the plank, he makes a little machine which saves him great labour. Every one of his hundreds of tools, capable of application to a vast variety of purposes, is an invention to save labour. Without some tool the carpenter's work could not be done at all by the human hand. A knife would do very laboriously what is done very quickly by a hatchet. The labour of using a hatchet, and the material which it wastes, are saved twenty times over by the saw. But when the more delicate operations of carpentry are required—when the workman uses his planes, his rabbet-planes, his fillisters, his bevels, and his centre-bits—what an infinitely greater quantity of labour is economized, and how beautifully that work is performed, which, without them, would be rough and imperfect! Every boy of mechanical ingenuity has tried with his knife to make a boat; and with a knife only it is the work of weeks. Give him a chisel, and a gouge, and a vice to hold his wood, and the little boat is the work of a day. Let a boy try to make a round wooden box, with a lid, having only his knife, and he must be expert indeed to produce anything that will be neat and serviceable. Give him a lathe and chisels, and he will learn to make a tidy box in half an hour. Nothing but absolute necessity can render it expedient to

use an imperfect tool instead of a perfect. We sometimes see exhibitions of carving, "all done with the common penknife." Professor Willis has truly said, with reference to such weak boasting, "So far from admiring, we should pity the vanity and folly of such a display; and the more, if the work should show a natural aptitude in the workman: for it is certain that, if he has made good work with a bad tool he would have made better with a good one."

The Emperor Maximilian, at the beginning of the sixteenth century, ordered a woodcut to be engraved that should represent the carpentry operations of his time and country. This prince was, no doubt, proud of the advance of Germany in the useful arts. If the President of the United States were thus to record the advance of the republic of which he is the chief, he would show us his



Carpenters and their tools. (From an old German woodcut.)

saw-mills and his planing-mills. The German carpenters, as we see, are reducing a great slab of wood into shape by the saw and the adze. The Americans have planing-mills,

with cutters that make 4000 revolutions, and which plane boards eighteen feet long at the rate of fifty feet per minute; and while the face of the board is planed, it is tongued and grooved at the same time, that is, one board is made to fit closely into another. But the Americans carry machinery much farther into the business of carpentry. Mr. Whitworth tells us that "many works in various towns are occupied exclusively in making doors, window-frames, or staircases, by means of self-acting machinery, such as planing, tenoning, morticing, and jointing machines. They are able to supply builders with various parts of the wood-work required in building at a much cheaper rate than they can produce them in their own workshops without the aid of such machinery."

By the use of those machines we are told that twenty men can make panelled doors at the rate of a hundred a day, that is, one man can make five doors. A panelled door is a very expensive part of an English house; and so are window-frames and staircases. If doors and windows and staircases can be made cheaper, more houses and better houses will be built; and thus more carpenters will be employed in building than if those parts of a house were made by hand. The same principle applies to machines as to tools. If carpenters had not tools to make houses, there would be few houses made; and those that were made would be as rough as the hut of the savage who has no tools. The people would go without houses, and the carpenter would go without work,—to say nothing of the people, who would also go without work, that now make tools for the carpenter.

We build in this country more of brick than of stone, because brick-earth is found almost everywhere, and stone fit for building is found only in particular districts. Bricks used to pay the state a duty of five shillings and tenpence a thousand; and yet at the kilns they were to be bought under forty shillings a thousand which is less than a half-penny apiece. The government wisely resolved, in 1850,

to repeal the excise-duty on bricks. In 1845, the duty on glass was repealed. In 1847, the timber-duties were reduced; and in 1848, they were further reduced. The ever-present necessities of the people—the absolute want of house-accommodation for a population increasing so rapidly—rendered it a paramount duty of the government no longer to let tax interfere with the cheap building of houses. Every invention that adds to cheapness acts in the same direction; for although the direct taxes cease to press upon the various trades of building, the constant demand keeps bricks and timber at a price almost as high as before the removal or mitigation of the tax. But bricks, regarded as the production of a vast amount of labour, are intrinsically cheap. And why? Because they are made by what is truly machinery; as they were made three thousand years ago by the Egyptians.

The clay is ground in a horse-mill; the wooden mould, in which every brick is made singly, is a copying machine. One brick is exactly like another brick. Every brick is of the form of the mould in which it is made. Without the mould the workman could not make the brick of uniform dimensions; and without this uniformity the after labour of putting bricks together would be greatly increased. Without the mould the workman could not form the bricks so quickly;—his own labour would be increased tenfold. The simple machine of the mould not only gives employment to a great many brickmakers who would not be employed at all, but also to a great many bricklayers who would also want employment if the original cost of production were so enormously increased.

There is another material for building which was little used at the beginning of the century. Slates are not only used for roofing houses, but in slabs for cisterns and chimney-pieces. The great increase of the supply of water to houses by machinery led to a demand for a safer and cheaper material than lead for cisterns; and slate supplied the want.

How great a variety of things are contained in an iron-monger's shop ! Half his store consists of tools of one sort or another to save labour ; and the other half consists of articles of convenience or elegance, most perfectly adapted to every possible want of the builder or the maker of furniture. The uncivilized man is delighted when he obtains a nail,—any nail. A carpenter and joiner, who supply the wants of a highly civilized community, are not satisfied unless they have a choice of nails, from the finest brad to the largest clasp-nail. A savage thinks a nail will hold two pieces of wood together more completely than anything else in the world. It is seldom, however, that he can afford to put it to such a use. If it is large enough, he makes it into a chisel. An English joiner knows that screws will do the work more perfectly in some cases than any nail ; and therefore we have as great a variety of screws as of nails. The commonest house built in England has hinges, and locks, and bolts. A great number are finished with ornamental knobs to door-handles, with bells and bell-pulls, and a thousand other things that have grown up into necessities, because they save domestic labour, and add to domestic comfort. And many of these things really are necessities. M. Say, a French writer, gives us an example of this ; and as his story is an amusing one, besides having a moral, we may as well copy it :—

“ Being in the country,” says he, “ I had an example of one of those small losses which a family is exposed to through negligence. For the want of a latchet of small value, the wicket of a barn-yard leading to the fields was often left open. Every one who went through drew the door to : but as there was nothing to fasten the door with, it was always left flapping ; sometimes open, and sometimes shut. So the cocks and hens, and the chickens, got out, and were lost. One day a fine pig got out, and ran off into the woods ; and after the pig ran all the people about the place,—the gardener, and the cook, and the dairymaid. The gardener first caught sight of the runaway, and, hast-

ening after it, sprained his ankle ; in consequence of which the poor man was not able to get out of the house again for a fortnight. The cook found, when she came back from pursuing the pig, that the linen she had left by the fire had fallen down and was burning ; and the dairymaid having, in her haste, neglected to tie up the legs of one of her cows, the cow had kicked a colt, which was in the same stable, and broken its leg. The gardener's lost time was worth twenty crowns, to say nothing of the pain he suffered. The linen which was burned, and the colt which was spoiled, were worth as much more. Here, then, was caused a loss of forty crowns, as well as much trouble, plague, and vexation, for the want of a latch which would not have cost threepence." M. Say's story is one of the many examples of the truth of the old proverb—" for want of a nail the shoe was lost, for want of a shoe the horse was lost, for want of a horse the man was lost."

Nearly all the great variety of articles in an ironmonger's shop are made by machinery. Without machinery they could not be made at all, or they would be sold at a price which would prevent them being commonly used. Some of the finer articles, such as a Bramah lock, or a Chubb's lock, could not be made at all, unless machinery had been called in to produce that wonderful accuracy, through which no one of a hundred thousand locks and keys shall be exactly like another lock and key. With machinery, the manufacture of ironmongery employs large numbers of artisans who would be otherwise unemployed. There are hundreds of ingenious men at Birmingham who go into business with a capital acquired by their savings as workmen, for the purpose of manufacturing some one single article used in finishing a house, such as the knob of a lock. All the heavy work of their trade is done by machinery. The cheapness of the article creates workmen ; and the savings of the workmen accumulate capital to be expended in larger works, and to employ more workmen.

The furniture of a house, some may say—the chairs, and

tables, and bedsteads—is made nearly altogether by hand. True. But tools are machines; and further, we owe it to what men generally call machinery, that such furniture, even in the house of a very poor man, is more tasteful in its construction, and of finer material, than that possessed by a nobleman a hundred years ago. How is this? Machinery (that is ships) has brought us much finer woods than we grow ourselves; and other machinery (the sawing mill) has taught us how to render that fine wood very cheap, by economizing the use of it. At a veneering-mill, that is, a mill which cuts a mahogany log into thin plates, much more delicately and truly, and in infinitely less time, than they could be cut by the hand, two hundred and forty square feet of mahogany are cut by one circular saw in one hour. A veneer, or thin plate, is cut off a piece of mahogany, six feet six inches long, by twelve inches wide, in twenty-five seconds. What is the consequence of this? A mahogany table is made almost as cheap as a deal one; and thus the humblest family in England may have some article of mahogany, if it be only a tea-caddy. And let it not be said that deal furniture would afford as much happiness; for a desire for comfort, and even for some degree of elegance, gives a refinement to the character, and, in a certain degree, raises our self-respect. Diogenes, who is said to have lived in a tub, was a great philosopher; but it is not necessary to live in a tub to be wise and virtuous. Nor is that the likeliest plan for becoming so. The probability is, that a man will be more wise and virtuous in proportion as he strives to surround himself with the comforts and decent ornaments of his station.

It is a circumstance worthy to be borne in mind by all who seek the improvement of the people, that whatever raises not only the standard of comfort, but of taste, has direct effects of utility which might not at first be perceived. We will take the case of paper-hangings. Their very name shows that they were a substitute for the arras, or hangings, of former times, which were suspended from

the ceilings to cover the imperfections of the walls. This was the case in the houses of the rich. The poor man in his hut had no such device, but must needs "patch a hole to keep the wind away." Till 1830, what, in the language of the excise, was called stained paper, was enormously dear, for a heavy tax greatly impeded its production. When it was dear, many walls were stencilled or daubed over with a rude pattern. The paper-hangings themselves were not only dear, but offensive to the eye, from their want of harmony in colour and of beauty in design. The old papers remained on walls for half a century; and it was not till paper-hangings became a penny a yard, or even a halfpenny, that the landlord or tenant of a small house thought of re-papering. The eye at length got offended by the dirty and ugly old paper. The walls were re-covered with neat patterns. But what had offended the eye had been prejudicial to the health. The old papers, that were saturated with damp from without and bad air from within, were recipients and holders of fever. When the bedroom became neat it also became healthful. The duty on paper was  $1\frac{3}{4}d.$  per yard, when the paper-hanger used to paste together yard after yard, made by hand at the paper-mill, and stamped by block. The paper-machine which gave long rolls of paper enabled hangings to be printed by cylinder, as calico is printed. The absence of tax, and the improvement of the manufacture by machinery, have enabled every man to re-paper his filthy and noxious room for almost as little as its whitewashing or colouring will cost him.

Look, again, at the carpet. Contrast it in all its varieties, from the gorgeous Persian to the neat Kidderminster, with the rushes of our forefathers, amidst which the dogs hunted for the bones that had been thrown upon the floor. The clean rushes were a rare luxury, never thought of but upon some festive occasion. The carpet manufacture was little known in England at the beginning of the last century; as we may judge from our still calling one of the most commonly-woven English carpets by the name of "Brussels."

There are twelve thousand persons now employed in the manufacture of carpets in Great Britain. The Scotch carpet is the cheapest of the produce of the carpet-loom. One of the most beautiful inventions of man, the Jacquard apparatus (so called from the name of its inventor), is extensively used in every branch of the carpet manufacture.

Let us see what mechanical ingenuity can effect in producing the most useful and ornamental articles of domestic life from the common earth which may be had for digging. Without chemical and mechanical skill we should neither have Glass nor Pottery; and without these articles, how much lowered beneath his present station, in point of comfort and convenience, would be the humblest peasant in the land!

The cost of glass is almost wholly the wages of labour; as the materials are very abundant, and may be said to cost almost nothing; and glass is much more easily worked than any other substance.

Hard and brittle as it is, it has only to be heated, and any form that the workman pleases may be given to it. It melts; but when so hot as to be more susceptible of form than wax or clay, or anything else that we are acquainted with, it still retains a degree of toughness and capability of extension superior to that of many solids, and of every liquid; when it has become red-hot all its brittleness is gone, and a man may do with it as he pleases. He may press it into a mould; he may take a lump of it upon the end of an iron tube, and, by blowing into the tube with his mouth (keeping the glass hot all the time), he may swell it out into a hollow ball. He may mould that ball into a bottle; he may draw it out lengthways into a pipe; he may cut it open into a cup; he may open it with shears, whirl it round with the edge in the fire, and thus make it into a circular plate. He may also roll it out into sheets, and spin it into threads as fine as a cobweb. In short, so that he keeps it hot, and away from substances by which it may be destroyed, he can do with it just as he pleases. All this,

too, may be done, and is done with large quantities every day, in less time than any one would take to give an account of it. In the time that the readiest speaker and clearest describer were telling how one quart bottle is made, an ordinary set of workmen would make some dozens of bottles.

But though the materials of glass are among the cheapest of all materials, and the substance the most obedient to the hand of the workman, there is a great deal of knowledge necessary before glass can be made. It can be made profitably only at large manufactories, and those manufactories must be kept constantly at work night and day.

Glass does not exist in a natural form in many places. The sight of native crystal, probably, led men to think originally of producing a similar substance by art. The fabrication of glass is of high antiquity. The historians of China, Japan, and Tartary speak of glass manufactories existing there more than two thousand years ago. An Egyptian mummy two or three thousand years old, which was exhibited in London, was ornamented with little fragments of coloured glass. The writings of Seneca, a Roman author who lived about the time of our Saviour, and of St. Jerome, who lived five hundred years afterwards, speak of glass being used in windows. It is recorded that the Prior of the convent of Weymouth, in Dorsetshire, in the year 674, sent for French workmen to glaze the windows of his chapel. In the twelfth century the art of making glass was known in this country. Yet it is very doubtful whether glass was employed in windows, excepting those of churches and the houses of the very rich, for several centuries afterwards; and it is quite certain that the period is comparatively recent, as we have shown,\* when glass windows were used for excluding cold and admitting light in the houses of the great body of the people, or that glass vessels were to be found amongst their ordinary conveniences. The manufacture of glass in England now employs fifteen

\* Chapter viii. pp. 85 and 87.

thousand people, because the article, being cheap, is of universal use. The government has wisely taken off the duty on glass; and as the article becomes still cheaper, so will the people employed in its manufacture become more numerous.

Machinery, as we commonly understand the term, is not much employed in the manufacture of glass; but chemistry, which saves as much labour as machinery, and performs work which no machinery could accomplish, is very largely employed. The materials of which glass is made are sand, or earth, and vegetable matter, such as kelp or burnt seaweed, which yields alkali. For the finest glass, sand is brought from great distances, even from Australia. These materials are put in a state of fusion by the heat of an immense furnace. It requires a red heat of sixty hours to prepare the material of a common bottle. Nearly all glass, except glass for mirrors, is what is called blown. The machinery is very simple, consisting only of an iron pipe and the lungs of the workman; and the process is perfected in all its stages by great subdivision of labour producing extreme neatness and quickness in all persons employed in it. For instance, a wine-glass is made thus:—One man (the blower) takes up the proper quantity of glass on his pipe, and blows it to the size wanted for the bowl; then he whirls it round on a reel, and draws out the stalk. Another man (the footer) blows a smaller and thicker ball, sticks it to the end of the stalk of the blower's glass, and breaks his pipe from it. The blower opens that ball, and whirls the whole round till the foot is formed. Then a boy dips a small rod in the glass-pot, and sticks it to the very centre of the foot. The blower, still turning the glass round, takes a bit of iron, wets it in his mouth, and touches the ball at the place where he wishes the mouth of the glass to be. The glass separates, and the boy takes it to the finisher, who turns the mouth of it; and, by a peculiar swing that he gives it round his head, makes it perfectly circular, at the same time that it is so hardened as to be easily snapped

from the rod. Lastly, the boy takes it on a forked iron to the annealing furnace, where it is cooled gradually.

All these operations require the greatest nicety in the workmen ; and would take a long time in the performance, and not be very neatly done after all, if they were all done by one man. But the quickness with which they are done by the division of labour is perfectly wonderful.

The cheapness of glass for common use, which cheapness is produced by chemical knowledge and the division of labour, has set the ingenuity of man to work to give greater beauty to glass as an article of luxury. The employment of sharp-grinding wheels, put in motion by a treadle, and used in conjunction with a very nice hand, produces *cut* glass. Cut glass is now comparatively so cheap, that scarcely a family of the middle ranks is without some beautiful article of this manufacture.

But the repeal of the duty on glass, and of the tax upon windows, has had the effect of improving the architecture of our houses to a degree which no one would have thought possible who had not studied how the operation of a tax impedes production. We have now plate-glass of the largest dimensions, giving light and beauty to our shops ; and sheet-glass, nearly as effective as plate, adorning our private dwellings. Sheet-glass, in the making of which an amount of ingenuity is exercised which would have been thought impossible in the early stages of glass-making, is doing for the ordinary purposes of building what plate-glass did formerly for the rich. A portion of melted glass, weighing twelve or fourteen pounds, is, by the exercise of this skill, converted into a ball, and then into a cylinder, and then into a flat plate ; and thus two crystal palaces have been built, which have consumed as much glass, weight by weight, as was required for all the houses in one-fourth of the area of Great Britain in the beginning of the century.

There are two kinds of pottery—common potter's ware, and porcelain. The first is a pure kind of brick ; and the

second a mixture of very fine brick and glass. Almost all nations have some knowledge of pottery ; and those of the very hot countries are sometimes satisfied with dishes formed by their fingers without any tool, and dried by the heat of the sun. In England pottery of every sort, and in all countries good pottery, must be baked or burnt in a kiln of some kind or other.

Vessels for holding meat and drink are almost as indispensable as the meat and drink themselves ; and the two qualities in them that are most valuable are, that they shall be cheap, and easily cleaned. Pottery, as it is now produced in England, possesses both of these qualities in the very highest degree. A white basin, having all the useful properties of the most costly vessels, may be purchased for twopence at the door of any cottage in England. There are very few substances used in human food that have any effect upon these vessels ; and it is only rinsing them in hot water, and wiping them with a cloth, and they are clean.

The making of an earthen bowl would be to a man who made a first attempt no easy matter. Let us see how it is done so that it can be carried two or three hundred miles and sold for twopence, leaving a profit to the maker, and the wholesale and retail dealer.

The common pottery is made of pure clay and pure flint. The flint is found only in the chalk counties, and the fine clays in Devonshire and Dorsetshire ; so that, with the exception of some clay for coarse ware, the materials out of which the pottery is made have to be carried from the South of England to Staffordshire, where the potteries are situated.

The great advantage that Staffordshire possesses is abundance of coal to burn the ware and supply the engines that grind the materials.

The clay is worked in water by various machinery till it contains no single piece large enough to be visible to the eye. It is like cream in consistence. The flints are burned.

They are first ground in a mill, and then worked in water in the same manner as the clay, the large pieces being returned a second time to the mill.

When both are fine enough, one part of flint is mixed with five or six of clay; the whole is worked to a paste, after which it is kneaded either by the hands or a machine; and when the kneading is completed, it is ready for the potter.

He has a little wheel which lies horizontally. He lays a portion of clay on the centre of the wheel, puts one hand, or finger if the vessel is to be a small one, in the middle, and his other hand on the outside, and, as the wheel turns rapidly round, draws up a hollow vessel in an instant. With his hands, or with very simple tools, he brings it to the shape he wishes, cuts it from the wheel with a wire, and a boy carries it off. The potter makes vessel after vessel, as fast as they can be carried away.

The potter's wheel is an instrument of the highest antiquity. In the book of Ecclesiasticus we read—"So doth the potter, sitting at his work, and turning the wheel about with his feet, who is always carefully set at his work, and maketh all his work by number: he fashioneth the clay with his arm, and boweth down his strength before his feet; he applieth himself to lead it over, and is diligent to make clean the furnace."—(c. xxxix., v. 29, 30.) At the present day the Oriental potter stands in a pit, in which the lower machinery of his wheel is placed. He works as the potter of the ancient Hebrews.

As the potter produces the vessels they are partially dried; after which they are turned on a lathe and smoothed with a wet sponge when necessary. Only round vessels can be made on the wheel; those of other shapes are made in moulds of plaster. Handles and other solid parts are pressed in moulds, and stuck on while they and the vessels are still wet.

The vessels thus formed are first dried in a stove, and, when dry, burnt in a kiln. They are in this state called

biscuit. If they are finished white, they are glazed by another process. If they are figured, the patterns are engraved on copper, and printed on coarse paper rubbed with soft soap. The ink is made of some colour that will stand the fire, ground with earthy matter. These patterns are moistened and applied to the porous biscuit, which absorbs the colour, and the paper is washed off, leaving the pattern on the biscuit.

The employment of machinery to do all the heavy part of the work, the division of labour, by which each workman acquires wonderful dexterity in his department, and the conducting of the whole upon a large scale, give bread to a vast number of people, make the pottery cheap, and enable it to be sold at a profit in almost every market in the world. It is not ninety years since the first pottery of a good quality was extensively made in England; and before that time what was used was imported,—the common ware from Delf, in Holland (from which it acquired its name), and the porcelain from China.

The history of the manufacture of porcelain affords us two examples of persevering ingenuity—of intense devotion to one object—which have few parallels in what some may consider the higher walks of art. Palissy and Wedgwood are names that ought to be venerated by every artisan. The one bestowed upon France her manufacture of porcelain, so long the almost exclusive admiration of the wealthy and the tasteful. The other gave to England her more extensive production of earthenware, combining with great cheapness the imitation of the most beautiful forms of ancient art. The potteries of Staffordshire may be almost said to have been created by Josiah Wedgwood. In his workshops we may trace the commencement of a system of improved design which made his ware so superior to any other that had been produced in Europe for common uses. In other branches of manufacture this system found few imitators; and we were too long contented, in our textile fabrics especially, with patterns that were unequalled for :

ugliness—miserable imitations of foreign goods, or combinations of form and colour outraging every principle of art. We have seen higher things attempted in the present day; but for the greater part of a century the wares of the Staffordshire potter were the only attempts to show that taste was as valuable a quality in association with the various articles which are required for domestic use, as good materials and clean workmanship. It was long before we discovered that taste had an appreciable commercial value.

We think that, with regard to buildings and the furniture of buildings, it will be admitted that machinery, in the largest sense of the word, has increased the means of every man to procure a shelter from the elements, and to give him a multitude of conveniences within that shelter. Most will agree that a greater number of persons are profitably employed in affording this shelter and these conveniences, with tools and machines, than if they possessed no such mechanical aids to their industry.

For the number of persons engaged in the production of houses, their fittings, and their furniture, see Appendix, Class V.

---

#### QUESTIONS TO CHAPTER XIV.

1. With what amount of mechanical power, and in how short a time, could a building similar to the Great Pyramid be raised?
2. When may it be desirable to erect monuments not of direct utility?
3. Give an instance of the immense reduction of labour by mechanical aid.
4. On what does the cost of a block of stone greatly depend?
5. On what does the cost of timber greatly depend?
6. How is mechanical power employed in giving a value to timber?
7. What is the power which sets a carpenter's tools in motion?
8. What are the machines moved by the power of a carpenter's hand?
9. By what works do the Americans carry machinery into the business of carpentry?
10. What effect has the employment of machinery in the labour of the carpenter?
11. What is the cause that the price of building materials is not more reduced by the removal or mitigation of taxation?

12. What is the machinery used in brickmaking ?
13. What effect has this machinery on the labour of brickmakers and bricklayers ?
14. What is the effect of machinery on the labour employed in ironmongery ?
15. How does machinery affect household furniture ?
16. Give some instances of the sanitary effects of an improved taste ?
17. On what does the cost of glass almost wholly depend ?
18. What science is necessary in the manufacture of glass ?
19. What are the processes in the manufacture of a wine-glass ?
20. By what is the cheapness of glass produced ?
21. What are the processes in the manufacture of pottery ?
22. What has been the effect of machinery with regard to buildings and the furniture of buildings ?
23. What with regard to the labour employed on buildings, &c. ?

**CHAPTER XV.**

Dwellings of the people—Oberlin—The Highlander's candlesticks—Supply of water—London waterworks — Street-lights — Sewers — Sanitary Improvements.

IT is satisfactory to observe that the increase of houses has kept pace with the increase of population. In 1801, in Great Britain, there was a population of ten million five hundred thousand persons, and one million eight hundred thousand inhabited houses. In 1861, there were above twenty-three million one hundred and twenty-five thousand persons, and about four million one hundred and forty thousand inhabited houses. The numbers, in each case, had more than doubled.

But it is not equally satisfactory to know that the improvement in the quality of the houses in which the great body of those who labour for wages abide is not commensurate with the increase in their quantity. It is not fitting, that whilst the general progress of science is raising, as unquestionably it is raising, the average condition of the people—and that whilst education is going forward, slowly indeed, but still advancing—the bulk of those so progressing should be below their proper standard of physical comfort, from the too common want of decent houses to surround them with the sanctities of home.

In the great business of the improvement of their dwellings the working-men require leaders—not demagogues, whose business is to subvert, and not to build up—but leaders like the noble pastor, Oberlin, who converted a barren district into a fruitful, by the example of his unremitting energy. This district was cut off from the rest

of the world by the want of roads. Close at hand was Strasburg, full of all the conveniences of social life. There was no money to make roads—but there was abundant power of labour. There were rocks to be blasted, embankments to be raised, bridges to be built. The undaunted clergyman took a pickaxe, and went to work himself. He worked alone, till the people were ashamed of seeing him so work. They came at last to perceive that the thing was to be done, and that it was worth the doing. In three years the road was made. If there were an Oberlin to lead the inhabitants of every filthy street, and the family of every wretched house, to their own proper work of improvement, a terrible evil would be soon removed, which is as great an impediment to the productive powers of a country, and therefore to the happiness of its people, as the want of ready communication or any other appliance of civilization. The enormity of the evil would be appalling, if the capability of its removal in some degree were not equally certain.

Whatever a government may attempt—whatever municipalities or benevolent associations—there can be nothing so effectual in the upholding to a proper mark the domestic comfort of the working men of this country, as their firm resolve to uphold themselves.

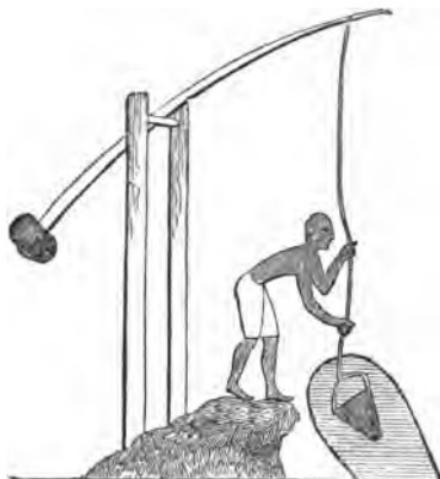
Still, unhappily, it is an undoubted fact that the most industrious men in large cities are too often unable to procure a fit dwelling, however able to pay for it and desirous to procure it. The houses have been built with no reference to such increasing wants. The idle and the diligent, the profligate and the prudent, the criminal and the honest, the diseased and the healthful, are therefore thrust into close neighbourhood. There is no escape. Is this terrible evil incapable of remedy? To discover that remedy, and apply it, is truly a national concern; for assuredly there is no capital of a country so worth preserving in the highest state of efficiency as the capital it possesses in an industrious population. There is a noble moral in a passage of Scott's romance, "The Legend of Montrose." A Highland

chief had betted with a more luxurious English baronet whom he had visited, that he had better candlesticks at home than the six silver ones which the richer man had put upon his dinner-table. The Englishman went to the chief's castle in the hills, where the owner was miserable about the issue of his bragging bet. But his brother had a device which saved the honour of the clan. The attendant announced that the dinner was ready and the candles lighted. Behind each chair for the guests stood a gigantic Highlander with his drawn sword in his right hand, and a blazing torch in his left, made of the bog-pine ; and the brother exclaimed to the startled company : "Would you dare to compare to THEM in value the richest ore that ever was dug out of the mine ? "

We may naturally pass from these considerations to a most important branch of the great subject of the expenditure of capital for public objects.

The people who live in small villages, or in scattered habitations in the country, have certainly not so many *direct* benefits from machinery as the inhabitants of towns. They have the articles at a cheap rate which machines produce, but there are not so many machines at work for them as for dense populations. From want of knowledge they may be unable to perceive the connection between a cheap coat or a cheap tool, and the machines which make them plentiful, and therefore cheap. But even they, when the saving of labour by a machine is a saving which immediately affects them, are not slow to acknowledge the benefits they derive from that best of economy. The Scriptures allude to the painful condition of the "hewers of wood" and the "drawers of water;" and certainly—in a state of society where there are no machines at all, or very rude machines—to cut down a tree and cleave it into logs, and to raise a bucket from a well, are very laborious occupations, the existence of which, to any extent, amongst a people, would mark them as remaining in a wretched con-

dition. Immediately that the people have the simplest mechanical contrivance, such as the loaded lever, to raise water from a well, which is found represented in Egyptian sculpture, and also in our own Anglo-Saxon drawings, they are advancing to the condition of raising water by machinery. The Oriental *shadoof* is a machine. In our own



Ancient Shadoof.

country, at the present day, there are not many houses, in situations where water is at hand, that have not the windlass, or, what is better, the pump, to raise this great necessary of life from the well. Some cottagers, however, have no such machines, and bitterly do they lament the want of them. We once met an old woman in a country district tottering under the weight of a bucket, which she was labouring to carry up a hill. We asked her how she and her family were off in the world. She replied, that she could do pretty well with them, for they could all work, if it were not for one thing—it was one person's labour to fetch water from the spring; but, said she, if we had a pump handy, we should not have much to complain of. This old woman very wisely had no love of labour for its

own sake ; she saw no advantage in the labour of one of her family being given for the attainment of a good which she knew might be attained by a very common invention. She wanted a machine to save that labour. Such a machine would have set at liberty a certain quantity of labour which was previously employed unprofitably ; in other words, it would have left her or her children more time for more profitable work, and then the family earnings would have been increased.

But there is another point of view in which this machine would have benefited the good woman and her family. Water is not only necessary to drink and to prepare food with, but it is necessary for cleanliness, and cleanliness is necessary for health. If there is a scarcity of water, or if it requires a great deal of labour to obtain it, (which comes to the same thing as a scarcity,) the uses of water for cleanliness will be wholly or in part neglected. If the neglect becomes a habit, which it is sure to do, disease, and that of the worst sort, cannot be prevented.

When men gather together in large bodies, and inhabit towns or cities, a plentiful supply of water is the first thing to which they direct their attention. If towns are built in situations where pure water cannot be readily obtained, the inhabitants, and especially the poorer sort, suffer even more misery than results from the want of bread or clothes. In some cities of Spain, for instance, where the people understand very little about machinery, water at particular periods of the year is as dear as wine ; and the labouring classes are consequently in a most miserable condition. In London, on the contrary, water is so plentiful that the average daily supply seems enormous. But there are reasons for thinking that the quantity ought to be increased, and the arrangements made so perfect, that there should be a perpetual stream of water through the pipes of each house, like that through the arteries from the heart. Yet, incomplete as our arrangements are, they are wondrous when compared with the water-supply of other times ; and

it is satisfactory to know that there are very few of our great towns which are not supplied as well as, and many much better than, London. There are very few large places in Great Britain where, by machinery, water is not only delivered to the kitchens and washhouses on the ground-floors, where it is most wanted, but is sent up to the very tops of the houses, to save even the comparatively little labour of fetching it from the bottom. The cost of this greatly varies in particular localities; and in most places the supply is afforded more cheaply than in the metropolis. There are natural difficulties in London, as in other vast cities, which have been chiefly created through the unexampled increase of the people. The sanitary arrangements of our great towns—the supply of water, the drainage—have followed the growth of the population and not preceded it. As the necessity has arisen for such a ministration to the absolute wants of a community, it has inevitably become a system of expedients. We are wiser now when we build upon new ground. We first construct our lines of street, with sewers, and water-pipes, and gas-pipes, and then we build our houses. What a different affair is it to manage these matters effectually when the houses have been previously built with very slight reference to such conditions of social existence!

As long ago as the year 1236, when a great want of water was felt in London, the little springs being blocked up and covered over by buildings, the ruling men of the city caused water to be brought from Tyburn, which was then a distant village, by means of pipes; and they laid a tax upon particular branches of trade to pay the expense of this great blessing to all. In succeeding times more pipes and conduits, that is, more machinery, were established for the same good purpose; and two centuries afterwards, King Henry VI. gave his aid to the same sort of works, in granting particular advantages in obtaining lead for making pipes. The reason for this aid to such works was, as the royal decree set forth, that they were

"for the common utility and decency of all the city, and *for the universal advantage*," and a very true reason this was. As this great town more and more increased, more waterworks were found necessary; till at last, in the reign of James I., which was nearly two hundred years after that of Henry VI., a most ingenious and enterprising man, and a great benefactor to his country, Hugh Myddleton, undertook to bring a river of pure water above thirty-eight miles out of its natural course, for the supply of London. He persevered in this immense undertaking, in spite of every difficulty, till he at last accomplished that great good which he had proposed of bringing wholesome water to every man's door. At the present time, the New River, which was the work of Hugh Myddleton, supplies more than seventeen millions of gallons of water every day; and though the original projector was ruined by the undertaking, in consequence of the difficulty which he had in procuring proper support, such is now the general conviction of the advantage which he procured for his fellow-citizens, and so desirous are the people to possess that advantage, that a share in the New River Company, which was at first sold at one hundred pounds, is now worth several thousand pounds.

Before the people of London had water brought to their own doors, and even into their very houses, and into every room of their houses where it is desirable to bring it, they were obliged to send for this great article of life—first, to the few springs which were found in the city and its neighbourhood, and, secondly, to the conduits and fountains, which were imperfect mechanical contrivances for bringing it.

The service-pipes to each house are more perfect mechanical contrivances; but they could not have been rendered so perfect without engines, which force the water above the level of the source from which it is taken. When the inhabitants fetched their water from the springs and conduits there was a great deal of human labour employed;

and as in every large community there are always people ready to perform labour for money, many persons obtained a living by carrying water. When the New River had been dug, and the pipes had been laid down, and the engines had been set up, it is perfectly clear that there would have been no further need for these water-carriers. When the people of London could obtain two hundred gallons of water for two-pence, they would not employ a man to fetch a single bucket from the river or fountain at the same price. They would not, for the mere love of employing human labour directly, continue to buy an article very dear, which, by mechanical aid, they could buy very cheap. If they had resolved, from any mistaken notions about machinery, to continue to employ the water-carriers, they must have been contented with one gallon of water a day instead of two hundred gallons. Or if they had consumed a larger quantity, and continued to pay the price of bringing it to them by hand, they must have denied themselves other necessaries and comforts. They must have gone without a certain portion of food, or clothing, or fuel, which they are now enabled to obtain by the saving in the article of water. To have had for each house two hundred gallons of water, and, in having this two hundred gallons of water, to have had the cleanliness and health which result from its use, would have been utterly impossible. The supply of one gallon, instead of two hundred gallons to each house, would at present amount to 310,000 gallons daily; which at a penny a gallon would cost 1291*l.* per day; or 9037*l.* per week; or 469,724*l.*, or very nearly half a million, per year. Upon the assumption that one man, without any mechanical arrangement besides his can, could carry twenty gallons a day, thus earning ten shillings a week, this would employ no fewer than 18,074 persons—a very army of water-carriers. To supply ten gallons a day to each house would cost nearly five millions a year, and would employ 180,740 persons. To supply two hundred gallons a day would require 3,614,800 persons—a number exceeding the total population of London.

There is now, certainly, no labour to be performed by water-carriers. But suppose that five hundred years ago, when there were a small number of persons who gained their living by such drudgery, they had determined to prevent the bringing of water by pipes into London; suppose also that they had succeeded, and that up to the present day we had no pipes or other mechanical aids for supplying the water, it is quite evident that if this misfortune had



Old water-carrier in London.

happened—if the welfare of the many had been retarded (for it never could have been finally stopped) by the ignorance of the few—London, as we have already shown, would not have had a twentieth part of its present population; and the population of every other town, depending as population does upon the increase of *profitable* labour, could never have gone forward. How then would the case have stood as to the amount of labour engaged in the supply of water? A few hundred, at the utmost a few thousand, carriers of water would have been employed throughout

the kingdom ; while the smelters and founders of iron of which water-pipes are made, the labourers who lay down these pipes, the founders of lead who make the service-pipes, and the plumbers who apply them ; the carriers, whether by water or land, who are engaged in bringing them to the towns, the manufacturers of the engines which raise the water, the builders of the houses in which the engines stand—these, and many other labourers and mechanics who directly and indirectly contribute to the same public advantage, could never have been called into employment. To have continued to use the power of the water-carriers would have rendered the commodity two hundred times dearer than it is supplied by mechanical power. The present cheapness of production, by mechanical power, supplies employment to an infinitely greater number of persons than could have been required by a perseverance in the rude and wasteful system which belonged to former ages of ignorance and wretchedness.

When a severe frost chokes up the small water-pipes that conduct the useful stream into each house, what anxiety and trouble is there in every thoroughfare ! The main pipes are not frozen ; and the supply is to be got in pails and pitchers from a plug in the pavement, where a temporary cock is inserted. How gladly is this device resorted to ! But imagine it to be the labour of every day, and what an amount of profitable time would be deducted from domestic employ !

When society is more perfectly organized than it is at present, and when the great body of the people understand the value of co-operation for procuring advantages that individuals cannot attain, public baths will be established in every town, and in every district of a town. The great Roman people had public baths for all ranks ; and remains of their baths still exist in this country. The great British people have only thought within these few years that public baths were a necessity. The establishment of public wash-houses, in connection with baths, having every advantage of

machinery and economical arrangements, are real blessings to the few who now use them.

It is not half a century since London was lighted with gas. Pall Mall was thus lighted in 1807, by a chartered company, to whose claims for support the majority of householders were utterly opposed. They had their old oil-lamps, which were thought absolute perfection. The noblest prospect in the world is London from Hampstead Heath on a bright winter's evening. The stars are shining in heaven, but there are thousands of earthly stars glittering in the city there spread before us: and as we look into any small space of that wondrous illumination, we can trace long lines of light losing themselves in the general splendour of the distance, and we can see dim shapes of mighty buildings afar off, showing their dark masses amidst the glowing atmosphere that hangs over the capital for miles, with the edges of flickering clouds gilded as if they were touched by the first sunlight. This is a spectacle that men look not upon, because it is common; and so we walk amidst the nightly splendours of the Strand, and forget what it was in the middle of the last century—the days of “darkness visible,” under the combined efforts of the twinkling lamp, the watchman’s lantern, and the vagabond’s link.

The last, but in many respects one of the most useful of public works in Great Britain, to which a large amount of capital has been devoted, is the construction of sewers in our cities and towns. Popular intelligence and official power have been very slowly awakened to the performance of this duty. And yet the consequences of neglect have been felt for centuries. In 1209, the monks of White Friars and of Black Friars complained to the king that the exhalations from the Fleet River overcame the pleasant odour of the frankincense which burned on their altars, and occasioned the deaths of the brethren. This was the polluted stream that in time came to be known as Fleet Ditch, which Pope described as

"The king of dykes, than whom no sluice of mud  
With deeper sable blots the silver flood."

Fleet Ditch became such a nuisance that it was partly filled up by Act of Parliament soon after these lines were written. The Londoners had then their reservoirs of filth, called laystalls, in various parts near the river; and the pestilent accumulations spread disease all over the city. The system of sewers was begun in 1756, and from that time to the present several hundreds of miles of sewers were constructed. But, alas, the Thames itself became "the king of dykes," and it was slowly discovered that the metropolis, healthy as it is, would never attain the sanitary state of which it is capable till the whole system of the outfall of the sewers was changed. The change, which is almost completed, has involved the expenditure of millions. It is satisfactory to know that in towns of smaller population, the work of purification is going on rapidly. Public opinion has gone so strongly in the direction of a thorough reformation, that the duty can no longer be neglected. Every thousand pounds of public capital so expended is an addition to one of the best accumulations of national wealth.

Upon the most important subject of the health of towns, the author of "Knowledge is Power" asks the indulgence of his readers, in quoting from his own book "Passages of a Working Life."

"There is probably no such striking example of the rapidity with which an entirely new code of laws has been received into the public mind, and successfully established in defiance of local and personal interests, as that exhibited by the Sanitary Legislation of the last twenty years. Statutes, however, would have been passed in vain, had not the facts and principles, upon which they were based, been driven into the popular understanding by men who, despite of vested interests and deep-rooted prejudices, were bent upon advancing the welfare of the greatest number, by attacking some of the causes of disease and destitution in

their strongholds and privileged hiding-places. To cleanse the Augean stables of London and of four or five hundred provincial towns, was a labour that Hercules might have shrunk from; for Hercules did his work by strength of muscle, whilst the sanitary reformers applied themselves to their task with the power of reason and the experience of science. Wherever we go, the results are visible, except to those who have eyes and no eyes. In 1842, Mr. Chadwick published his Report on Interments. Horrible graveyards, revolting to the senses, were to be found in populous places that in the last generation were verdant fields, and in the narrow streets and courts of the city, where its hundred churches seemed to have little use beyond that of gathering in and around them the means of swift destruction to the living. Nearly all the old burial-places of the metropolis have now been closed. It is in the interest of the greatest number that they have been closed. For the enforcement and preservation of these general interests, eight statutes have been passed during the last twelve years, which give a power to Burial Boards to close existing grounds and form new ones, and to keep the closed burial-grounds in proper order. It would have been impossible that this portion of our sanitary laws should have been worked out by the people themselves, at a large expense and often in opposition to personal feeling, had not the supreme principle of a great public good been paramount to all other considerations.

"The carrying out of the Public Health Acts, in their various ramifications, has entirely depended upon the decisions of those who had to sustain the expense. The Local Boards of Health knew well that they must encounter very heavy expenses. The report of a surveyor was a preliminary step, for the consideration of a community whether it would resolutely encounter the addition of a considerable burden to the direct parochial rates, or go on under the old system of indirect taxation in the shape of lingering or acute disease, premature death, the destitution of families.

Upon purely economical principles, the decision was right when a community decided that it was cheaper to encounter the direct taxation involved in an ample supply of pure water; in drainage; in paving and surface cleansing; in providing public baths and washhouses; and in establishing parks and pleasure grounds.

"To the watering-places on every coast the idle and the busy resort in the pursuit of health. Than some of these twenty years ago, there were no fouler or more pestilential places. If these resorts of luxury were abandoned to ignorance and neglect, what would be the case with great ports, such as Bristol, Portsmouth, and Plymouth? But the evils in such communities were small, compared with the practices and miseries of a great mining and manufacturing population, such as that of Merthyr Tydfil. The fortunate dwellers in houses where there is a full and constant supply of water from public works scarcely know the value of this great blessing. Bad drainage was a common evil; but here the cottages of the thousands of workmen could only be supplied from the distant springs—not by machinery, not from conduits, but by the personal labour of the poor female drudges of every household. The following description by a clergyman of the district seems to carry us back to past ages of uncivilization:

"During winter there are from six to eight spouts, some half a mile, some a mile, distant from the houses, but in summer they are often reduced to three, the remainder being dried up. At these water-spouts ("pyshtylls," as they call it in Welsh) I have seen fifty, eighty, and as many as a hundred people waiting for their turn; the rule is that each should be supplied according to the time of arriving. The women have told me they have waited six, eight, and ten hours at a time, for their turn; and some then obliged to go away without any water at all. They have been known to wait up the whole of the night. In the case of women having a young family, they are left at home at these times to take care of themselves. Instances

have occurred of children being burned to death while their mothers are waiting at the spouts. They have no other supply of water whatever fit to drink in summer time, and have no alternative but to wait.' Surely it was time that something should have been done for the happiness of the greatest number."

---

## QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XV.

1. What was the increase of houses in the first sixty years of the present century ?
2. What was the increase of the population ?
3. Give an instance of the power of individual energy ?
4. What are the indirect benefits of machinery ?
5. Give an instance of the benefits of raising water by machinery ?
6. What are the evil effects of a scarcity of water ?
7. What is the daily average of water supply to each house in London ?
8. What are the natural impediments to the water supply in London ?
9. What were the first water-works in London ?
10. By what means only could the mechanical contrivances for the supply of water be brought to perfection ?
11. What is the amount of water supplied by machinery in comparison with that which could be supplied by human labour ?
12. What would have been the result if the supply of water to London by mechanical aid had been prevented ?
13. Had the water carriers not been superseded by mechanical contrivances would the amount of labour engaged in the supply of water have been greater or less ?
14. When was London first lighted by gas ?
15. When was the system of sewers first begun ?

## *CHAPTER XVI.*

Early intercourse with foreign nations—Progress of the cotton manufacture—Hand-spinning—Arkwright—Crompton—Power-loom—Cartwright—Especial benefits of machinery in this manufacture—Cotton manufacture.

THERE was a time when the people of England were very inferior to those of the Low Countries, of France, and of Germany, in various productions of manufacturing industry. We first gave an impulse to our woollen trade, which for several centuries was the great staple of the country, by procuring foreign workmen to teach our people their craft. Before that period the nations on the Continent had a proverb against us. They said, “The stranger buys of the Englishman the skin of the fox for a groat, and sells him the tail again for a shilling.” The proverb meant that we had not skill to convert the raw material into an article of use, and that we paid a large price for the labour and ingenuity which made our native material available to ourselves.

But still our intercourse, such as it was then, with “the stranger” was better than no intercourse. We gave the rough and stinking fox’s skin for a groat, and we got the nicely dressed tippet for a shilling. The next best thing to dressing the skin ourselves was to pay other people for dressing it. Without foreign communication we should not have got that article of clothing at all.

All nations that have made any considerable advance in civilization have been commercial nations. The arts of life are very imperfectly understood in countries which have little communication with the rest of the world, and consequently the inhabitants are poor and wretched;—their con-

dition is not bettered by the exchange with other countries, either of goods or of knowledge. They have the fox's skin, but they do not know how to convert it into value, by being furriers themselves, or by communication with "stranger" furriers.

The people of the East, amongst whom a certain degree of civilization has existed from high antiquity, were not only the growers of many productions which were unsuited to the climate and soil of Europe, but they were the manufacturers also. Cotton, for instance, was cultivated from time immemorial in Hindustan, in China, in Persia, and in Egypt. Cotton was a material easily grown and collected; and the patient industry of the people by whom it was cultivated, their simple habits, and their few wants, enabled them to send into Europe their manufactured stuffs of a fine and durable quality, under every disadvantage of land-carriage, even from the time of the ancient Greeks. Before the discovery, however, of the passage to India by the Cape of Good Hope, cotton goods in Europe were articles of great price and luxury. M. Say well observes that, although cotton stuffs were cheaper than silk (which was formerly sold for its weight in gold), they were still articles which could only be purchased by the most opulent; and that, if a Grecian lady could awake from her sleep of two thousand years, her astonishment would be unbounded to see a simple country girl clothed with a gown of printed cotton, a muslin kerchief, and a coloured shawl.

When India was open to the ships of Europe, the Portuguese, the Dutch, and the English sold cotton goods in every market in considerable quantities. These stuffs bore their Indian names of calicoes and muslins; and whether bleached or dyed, were equally valued as amongst the most useful and ornamental articles of European dress.

In the seventeenth century France began to manufacture into stuffs the *raw* cotton imported from India, as Italy had done a century before. A cruel act of despotism drove the best French workmen, who were Protestants, into

England; and we learned the manufacture. The same act of despotism, the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, caused the settlement of silk-manufacturers in Spitalfields. We did not make any considerable progress in the art, nor did we use the material of cotton exclusively in making up the goods. The warp, or longitudinal threads of the cloth, were of flax, the weft only was of cotton ; for we could not twist it hard enough by hand to serve both purposes. This weft was spun entirely by hand with a distaff and spindle—the same process in which the women of England had been engaged for centuries ; and which we see represented in ancient drawings. Our manufacture, in spite of all these disadvantages, continued to increase ; so that about 1760, although there were fifty thousand spindles at work in Lancashire alone, the weaver found the greatest difficulty in procuring a sufficient supply of thread. Neither weaving



Distaff.

nor spinning was then carried on in large factories. They were domestic occupations. The women of a family worked at the distaff or the hand-wheel, and there were two opera

tions necessary in this department; roving, or coarse spinning, reduced the carded cotton to the thickness of a quill, and the spinner afterwards drew out and twisted the roving into weft fine enough for the weaver. The spinsters of England were carrying on the same operation as the spinsters of India. In the middle of the last century, according to Mr. Guest, a writer on the cotton-manufacture, very few weavers could procure weft enough to keep themselves constantly employed. "It was no uncommon thing," he says, "for a weaver to walk three or four miles in a morning, and call on five or six spinners, before he could collect weft to serve him for the remainder of the day; and when he wished to weave a piece in a shorter time than usual, a new ribbon or gown was necessary to quicken the exertions of the spinner."

That the manufacture should have flourished in England at all under these difficulties is honourable to the industry of our country; for the machinery used in weaving was also of the rudest sort, so that, if the web was more than three feet wide, the labour of two men was necessary to throw the shuttle. English cotton goods, of course, were very dear, and there was little variety in them. The cloth made of flax and cotton was called fustian; for which article Manchester was famous, as well as for laces. We still received the calicoes and printed cottons from India.

In a country like ours, where men have learned to think, and where ingenuity therefore is at work, a deficiency in material or in labour to meet the demand of a market is sure to call forth invention. It is about a century ago since it was perceived that spinning by machinery might give the supply which human labour was inadequate to produce, because doubtless the remuneration for that labour was very small. The work of the distaff, as it was carried on at that period, in districts partly agricultural and partly commercial, was, generally, an employment for the spare hours of the young women, and the easy industry of the old. It was a labour that was to assist in maintaining the

family,—not a complete means for their maintenance. The supply of yarn was therefore insufficient, and ingenious men applied themselves to remedy that insufficiency. Spinning-mills were built at Northampton in 1733, in which, it is said, although we have no precise account of it, that an apparatus for spinning was erected. A Mr. Lawrence Earnshaw, of Mottram, in Cheshire, is recorded to have invented a machine, in 1753, to spin and reel cotton at one operation; which he showed to his neighbours and then destroyed it, through the generous apprehension that he might deprive the poor of bread. We must admire the motive of this good man, although we are now enabled to show that his judgment was mistaken. Richard Arkwright, a barber of Preston, invented, in 1769, the principal part of the machinery for spinning cotton, and by so doing he was the means of accomplishing the enormous results detailed in the following summary. "We find that there were in Great Britain, in 1860, some 2650 cotton factories, employing a population of about 440,000 persons, of whom 90 per cent. were adults, and 56 per cent. females. A power equal to that of 300,000 horses, of which 18,500 was water-power, drove the machinery which quick eyes and active fingers guided and governed. Among other offices performed by this giant force was the twirling of more than thirty million spindles, at rates varying from 4000 to 6000 revolutions per minute. Each of these spindles could consume 9½ ounces of cotton-wool per week; their required food for the year, therefore, exceeded 1,050,000,000 pounds of cotton. The actual consumption for the year, inclusive of waste, amounted to 1,083,000,000 pounds, and the total quantity imported to 1,390,000,000 pounds. Three hundred and fifty thousand power-looms threw their shuttles with unerring regularity, impelled by the strength of these steam and water horses, and besides supplying the household requirements of this kingdom, which in the article of cotton manufactures then amounted to 24,000,000*l.* in annual value, and 180,000,000 pounds in weight—this

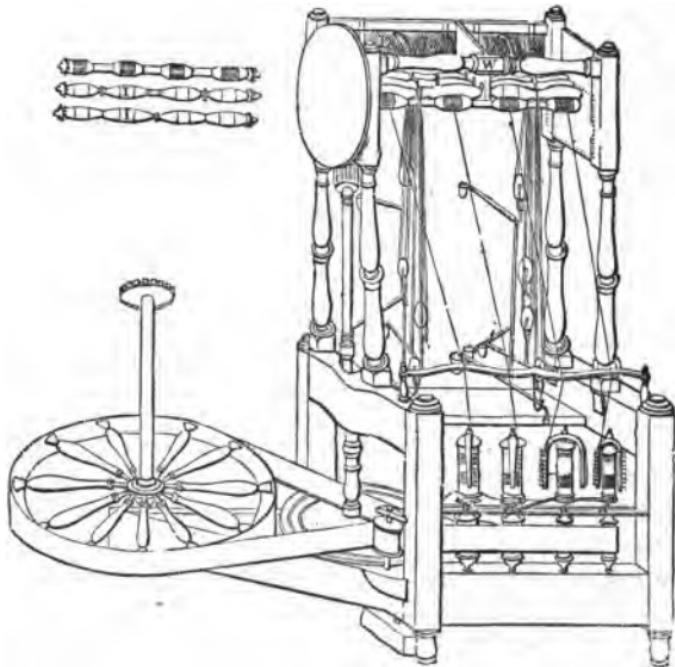
population, these spindles, and these looms, being paid, established, supported, and provisioned by manufacturers possessed of fixed capital to the amount of 65,000,000*l.*, produced for exportation more than 2,776,000,000 yards of cotton cloth, besides 197,000,000 pounds of cotton twist and yarn. In addition to this they manufactured and exported hosiery and small wares valued at 1,800,000*l.*, and the total declared value of the cotton exports for the year exceeded 52,000,000*l.* sterling. The productions of the British cotton manufacture for 1860, exceeded 76,000,000*l.* in value, or nearly 6,000,000*l.* more than the gross revenue of the kingdom for the same period, and of this stupendous trade Lancashire engrossed nearly 75 per cent.”\*

And how did Arkwright effect this great revolution? He asked himself whether it was not possible, instead of a wheel which spins a single thread of cotton at a time, and by means of which the spinner could obtain in twenty-four hours about two ounces of thread,—whether it might not be possible to spin the same material upon a great number of wheels, from which many hundreds of threads might issue at the same moment. The difficulty was in giving to these numerous wheels, spinning so many threads, the peculiar action of two hands when they pinch, at a little distance from each other, a lock of cotton, rendering it finer as it is drawn out. It was necessary, also, at the same time, to imitate the action of the spindle, which twisted together the filaments at the moment they had attained the necessary degree of fineness. It would be extremely difficult, if not impossible, to give an adequate idea, by words, of the complex machinery by which Arkwright accomplished his object. Since Arkwright’s time prodigious improvements have been made in the machinery for cotton-spinning; but the principle remains the same, namely, to enable rollers to do the work of human fingers, with much greater precision, and incomparably cheaper. We will

\* “The Cotton Famine,” by R. Arthur Arnold, a paper read at the meeting of the National Association for the Promotion of Social Science, in 1864.

attempt briefly to describe this chief portion of the great invention.

We must suppose that, by the previous operation of carding, the cotton-wool has been so combed and prepared as to be formed into a long untwisted line of about the thickness of a man's finger. This line so formed (after it has been introduced into the spinning machine) is called a *roving*, the old name in hand-spinning.



*Arkwright's original spinning-machine.*

In order to convert this roving into a thread, it is necessary that the fibres, which are for the most part curled up, and which lie in all directions, should be stretched out and laid lengthwise, side by side; that they should be pressed together so as to give them a more compact form; and that they should be twisted, so as to unite them all firmly

together. In the original method of spinning by the distaff, those operations were performed by the finger and thumb, and they were afterwards effected with greater rapidity, but less perfectly, by means of the long wheel and spindle. For the same purpose, Arkwright employed two pairs of small rollers, the one pair being placed at a little distance in front of the other. The lower roller in each pair is furrowed or fluted lengthwise, and the upper one is covered with leather; so that, as they revolve in contact with each other, they take fast hold of the cotton which passes between them. Both pairs of rollers are turned by machinery, which is so contrived that the second pair shall turn round with much more swiftness than the first. Now suppose that a roving is put between the first pair of rollers, the immediate effect is merely to press it together into a more compact form. But the roving has but just passed through the first pair of rollers, when it is received between the second pair; and as the rollers of the second pair revolve with greater velocity than those of the first, they draw the roving forwards with greater rapidity than it is given out by the first pair. Consequently, the roving will be lengthened in passing from one pair to the other; and the fibres of which it is composed will be drawn out and laid lengthwise side by side. The increase of length will be exactly in proportion to the increased velocity of the second pair of rollers.

Two or more rovings are generally united in this operation. Thus, suppose that two rovings are introduced together between the first pair of rollers, and that the second pair of rollers moves with twice the velocity of the first, the new roving thus formed by the union of the two will then be of exactly twice the length of either of the original ones. It will therefore contain exactly the same quantity of cotton per yard. But its parts will be very differently arranged, and its fibres will be drawn out longitudinally, and will be thus much better fitted for forming a thread. This operation of doubling and drawing

is repeated as often as is found necessary, and the requisite degree of twist is given by a machine similar to the spindle and fly of the common flax-wheel.

The spinning-mule, invented by Samuel Crompton, carried the mechanism of the cotton-factory many steps in advance. Long after Crompton, came the self-acting mule. It is a carriage some twenty or thirty feet long, travelling to and fro, and drawing out the most delicate threads through hundreds of spindles, whirling at a rate which scarcely permits the eye to trace their motion. Mr. Whitworth says,—“So great are the improvements effected in spinning machinery, that one man can attend to a mule containing 1088 spindles, each spinning 3 hanks, or 3264 hanks in the aggregate per day. In Hindustan, where they still spin by hand, it would be extravagant to expect a spinner to accomplish one hank per day; so that in the United States [and in Great Britain also] we find the same amount of manual labour, by improved machinery, doing more than 3000 times the work.”

Of the rapidity with which some portions of the machinery operate, we may form an idea from the fact that the very finest thread which is used in making lace is passed through the strong flame of a lamp, which burns off the fibres without burning the thread itself. The velocity with which the thread moves is so great, that we cannot perceive any motion at all. The line of thread, passing off a wheel through the flame, looks as if were perfectly at rest; and it appears a miracle that it is not burnt.

The invention of Arkwright—the substitution of rollers for fingers—changed the commerce of the world. The machinery by which a man, or woman, or even child, could produce two hundred threads where one was produced before, caused a cheapness of production much greater than that of India, where human labour is scarcely worth anything. But the fabric of cotton was also infinitely improved by the machinery. The hand of the spinner was unequal to its operations. It sometimes produced a fine

thread, and sometimes a coarse one; and therefore the quality of the cloth could not be relied upon. The yarn which is spun by machinery is sorted with the greatest exactness, and numbered according to its quality. This circumstance alone, which could only result from machinery, has a direct tendency to diminish the cost of production. Machinery not only adds to human power, and economizes human time, but it works up the most common materials into articles of value, and equalizes the use of valuable materials. Thus, in linen of which the thread is spun by the hand, a thick thread and a thin thread will be found side by side; and, therefore, not only is material wasted, but the fabric is less durable, because it wears unequally.

These circumstances—the diminished cost of cotton-goods, and the added value to the quality—have rendered it impossible for the cheap labour of India to come into the market against the machinery of Europe. The trade in Indian cotton-goods is gone for ever. Not even the caprices of fashion can have an excuse for purchasing the dearer commodity. We make it cheaper, and we make it better. The trade in cotton, as it exists in the present day, is the great triumph of human ingenuity. We bring the raw material from the country of the people who grow it, on the other side of our globe; we manufacture it by our machines into articles which we used to buy from them ready-made; and taking back those articles to their own markets, encumbered with the cost of transport for fourteen thousand miles, we sell the cotton to these very people cheaper than they can produce it themselves, and they buy it therefore with eagerness.

At the date of our first edition of this book, the low price of cotton yarns was a matter of satisfaction to all who rejoiced in the increase of comforts amongst the great body of commoners. We said then, that nearly twenty years after Arkwright had begun to spin by machinery, that is in 1786, the price of a particular sort of cotton-yarn

much used in the manufacture of calico was thirty-eight shillings a pound. That same yarn in 1832 was two shillings and eleven pence a pound. In 1814, the selling price of a piece of calico distinguished by the trade at 7*2½* was twenty-eight shillings; in 1844, it was six shillings and nine pence. If cotton-goods were worn only by the few rich, as they were worn in ancient times, and even in the latter half of the last century, that difference of price would not be a great object; but the price is a very important object when every man, woman, and child in the United Kingdom has to pay it. There are no very certain data for the produce of our looms, for, happily, no tax exists upon the great necessities of life which they produce. But it has been calculated that the home consumption of cotton-cloth is equal to twenty-six yards for every individual of the population; and taking the total number at twenty-seven millions, the quantity required would be seven hundred million yards. At fivepence a yard, the seven hundred million yards of cloth amount to above fourteen million pounds sterling. At half a crown a yard, which we will take as the average price about forty years ago, they would amount to eighty-four millions of pounds sterling. At twelve or fourteen times the present price, or six shillings a yard, which proportion we get by knowing the price of yarn seventy years ago and at the present day, the cost of seven hundred million yards of cotton-cloth would be one hundred and seventy-five millions of pounds sterling. It is perfectly clear that no such sum of money could be paid for cotton-goods, and that in fact, instead of between fourteen and fifteen millions being spent in this article of clothing by persons of all classes, in consequence of the cheapness of the commodity, we should go back to very nearly the same consumption that existed before Arkwright's invention, that is, to the consumption of the year 1750, when the whole amount of the cotton manufacture of the kingdom did not exceed the annual value of two hundred thousand pounds. At that rate of value, the

quantity of cloth manufactured could not have been equal to one five-hundredth part of that which is now manufactured for home consumption. Where one person a century ago consumed one yard, the consumption per head has risen to about twenty-six yards. This vast difference in the comforts of every family, by the ability which they now possess of easily acquiring warm and healthful clothing, is a clear gain to all society, and to every one as a portion of society. It is more especially a gain to the females and the children of families, whose condition is always degraded when clothing is scanty. The power of procuring cheap clothing for themselves, and for their children, has a tendency to raise the condition of females more than any other addition to their stock of comfort. It cultivates habits of cleanliness and decency; and those are little acquainted with the human character who can doubt whether cleanliness and decency are not only great aids to virtue, but virtues themselves. John Wesley said, that cleanliness was next to godliness. There is little self-respect amidst dirt and rags, and without self-respect there can be no foundation for those qualities which most contribute to the good of society. The power of procuring useful clothing at a cheap price has raised the condition of women amongst us, and the influence of the condition of woman upon the welfare of a community can never be too highly estimated.

We have suffered these calculations of the cost of cotton fabrics to remain unaltered, for it may be hoped that the effects of the great calamity called "The Cotton Famine" are passing away, and that we are returning to a more healthful condition as regards this great branch of national industry.

The creation of employment amongst ourselves by the cheapness of cotton-goods produced by machinery, is not to be considered as a mere change from the labour of India to the labour of England. It is a creation of employment, operating just in the same manner as the machinery did for

printing books. The Indian, it is true, no longer sends us his calicoes and his coloured stuffs ; we make them ourselves. But he sent us ten years ago fifty times the amount of raw cotton that he sent when the machinery was first set up. The quantity that he now sends us, since the failure of the cotton supply from the United States, is so large that it has been the main cause of the renewing prosperity of our cotton districts. The workman on the banks of the Ganges is no longer weaving calicoes for us in his loom of reeds under the shadow of a palm-tree ; but he is making enormous additions to the industrial prosperity of that vast country over which the queen of England is the supreme ruler, and whose government is now doing its best to promote the interests of a hundred and fifty millions of subjects, by leading them onward in the march of civilization.

The change that has been produced upon the labour of India by the machinery employed for spinning and weaving cotton, has a parallel in the altered condition of the hand-loom weavers in Great Britain. In 1785, Dr. Cartwright produced his first *power loom*. It was a rude machine compared with the refinements that have successively carried on his principle. Every resistance was made to the introduction of this new power. The mill-owners were slow to perceive its advantages ; the first mills in which these looms were introduced were burnt. The hand-loom weavers worked at a machine which little varied from that with which their Flemish instructors had worked three centuries before. But no prejudice and no violence could prevent the progress of the new machine. The object for which machines are established, and the object which they do effect, is cheapness of production. Machines either save material, or diminish labour, or both. "Which is the cheapest," said the committee to Joseph Foster, "a piece of goods made by a power-loom, or a piece of goods made by a hand-loom?" He answered, "A power-loom is the cheapest."\* This

\* See p. 104.

answer was decisive. The hand-loom weavers continued to struggle with the greater productive power of the power-loom; but the struggle is over. It would have been terminated long ago if the miserable wages which the hand-loom weaver obtained had not been ekinged out by parochial contributions. It was the duty of society to break the fall of the workmen who were thrust out of their place by the invention; but had society attempted to interpose between the new machines and the old, so as to have kept the old workers to their less profitable employment, there would have been far more derangements of labour to mitigate. Upon the introduction of the spinning machinery there was great temporary distress of the hand-spinners, with rioting and destruction of spinning-mills. If these modes of resistance to invention had gone on to prevent altogether the manufacture of cotton-thread by the spinning machinery, the consumption of cotton-cloth would have been little increased, and the number of persons engaged in the manufacture would have been twenty, thirty, or even forty times less than the present number. But there would have been another result. Would the great body of the people of Europe have chosen to wear for many years *dear* cloth instead of *cheap* cloth, that a few thousand spinners might have been kept at their ancient wheels in Lancashire? Capital can easily shift its place, and invention follows where capital goes before. The people of France, and Germany, and America, would have employed the cheap machine instead of the dear one; and the people of England would have had cheap cloth instead of dear cloth from thence. We cannot build a wall of brass round our islands; and the thin walls of prohibitive duties are very easily broken through. A profit of from twenty to thirty per cent. will pour in any given quantity of smuggled goods that a nation living under prohibitive laws can demand. Bonaparte, in the height of his power, passed the celebrated Berlin decree for the exclusion of all English produce from the continent of Europe. But our merchants laughed at

him. The whole coast of France, and Holland, and Italy, became one immense receiving-place for smuggled goods. If he had lined the whole coast with all the six hundred thousand soldiers that he marched to Russia, instead of a few custom-house officers, he could not have stopped the introduction of English produce. It was against the nature of things that the people who had been accustomed to cheap goods should buy dear ones ; or that they should go without any article, whether of necessity or luxury, whose use had become general. Mark, therefore, if the cotton-spinners of Lancashire had triumphed over Arkwright's machinery, there would not have been a single man, woman, or child of those spinners employed *at all*, within twenty years after that most fatal triumph. The manufacture of cotton would have gone to other countries ; cotton-spinning in England would have been at an end. The same thing would have happened if the power-loom, fifty years ago, had been put down by combination ; other countries would have used the invention which we should have been foolish enough to reject.

In the cotton manufacture, which from its immense amount possesses the means of rewarding the smallest improvement, invention has been at work, and most successfully, to make machines that make machines that make the cotton thread. There is a part of the machinery used in cotton-spinning called a reed. It consists of a number of pieces of wire, set side by side in a frame, resembling, as far as such things admit of comparison, a comb with two backs. These reeds are of various lengths and degrees of fineness ; but they all consist of cross pieces of wire, fastened at regular intervals between longitudinal pieces of split cane, into which they are tied with waxed thread. A machine now does the work of reed-making. The materials enter the machine in the shape of two or three yards of cane, and many yards of wire and thread ; and the machine cuts the wire, places each small piece with unfailing regularity between the canes, twists the thread round the cane

with a knot that cannot slip, every time a piece of wire is put in, and does several yards of this extraordinary work in less time than we have taken to write the description. There is another machine for making a part of the machine for cotton-spinning, even more wonderful. The cotton-wool is combed by circular cards of every degree of fineness; and the card-making machine, receiving only a supply of leather and wire, does its own work without the aid of hands. It punches the leather—cuts the wire—passes it through the leather—clinches it behind—and gives it the proper form of the tooth in front—producing a complete card of several feet in circumference in a wonderfully short time. All men feel the benefit of such inventions, because they lessen the cost of production. The necessity for them always precedes their use. There were not reed-makers and card-makers enough in England to supply the demands of the cotton machinery; so invention went to work to see how machines could make machines; and the consequent diminished cost of machinery has diminished the price of clothing.

We cannot close this chapter without adverting to the blessings in disguise which the failure of the raw material of the cotton manufacture has produced. For three years there was much suffering, unexampled privation, in the sudden transition from a period of long prosperity to one of general misfortune. The mills were wholly or partially stopped; the work-people were idle. From 1862 the pressure of want had been mitigated by the charitable agency of numerous committees who dispersed two millions sterling with the discrimination of true benevolence. At the crisis of the calamity there were nearly half a million of persons receiving assistance from these committees, and from boards of guardians. In 1863, when there were forty-five thousand men and boys out of employment in the cotton districts, the Public Works Act was passed, and a million and three quarters have been expended in employing the operatives upon labours of public utility. The

concluding remarks of Mr. R. A. Arnold are most consolatory :—“ I am proud to have borne a very humble share of duty in the national calamity. The time is not far distant when we shall look only to the benefits derived from it ; when we shall remember only the noble conduct of those who suffered in the charity of those who gave, and the examples of management and governance which it has recorded. It will have proved that England is not, and cannot be, dependent upon a single branch of industry ; it will have repaired the insecure foundation of the cotton trade ; it has evoked kindlier feelings between class and class, and forcibly taught our duty towards our neighbour.”

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XVI.

1. How was native material formerly made available for use in England ?
2. By what people was cotton first grown and manufactured ?
3. What discovery opened the cotton trade between India and Europe ?
4. What brought the cotton and the silk manufacturers into England ?
5. What were the processes of the cotton manufacture in England in 1760 ?
6. What was the great impediment to the operations of the weaver ?
7. What was the revolution effected by Arkwright’s invention of the spinning machine ?
8. Describe the principle of this machine.
9. What change in the cotton manufacture has been effected by Crompton’s spinning-mule and the subsequent self-acting mule ?
10. What improvement did the use of machinery produce in the fabric of cotton ?
11. What effect has the introduction of machinery in Europe had on the cotton trade of India ?
12. What are the moral effects of the decrease in the price of cotton-goods resulting from the introduction of machinery ?
13. What was the effect on the employment of labour of the introduction of machinery into the cotton manufacture ?
14. What was the change effected in the labour of India ?
15. When, and by whom, was the first power-loom produced ?
16. Was it a benefit, or otherwise, that it should supersede the hand-loom ?
17. If the resistance to invention had prevented the establishment of the spinning-machine and the power-loom, what would have been the effects on the cotton and silk trades, and on the employment of labour ?

18. What was the effect of Bonaparte's decree for the exclusion of English produce from the continent?
19. What are the machines to make machines connected with the cotton manufacture?
20. What has been the effect of the consequent diminished cost of machinery?

**CHAPTER XVII.**

The woollen manufacture—Divisions of employment—Early history—Prohibitory laws—Alpaca wool-shoddy—Middle-age legislation—Sumptuary laws—The silk manufacture—Ribbon-weaving—The linen manufacture—Cloth-printing—Bleaching.

THOSE who have not taken the trouble to witness, or to inquire into, the processes by which they are surrounded with the conveniences and comforts of civilized life, can have no idea of the vast variety of ways in which invention is at work to lessen the cost of production. The people of India, who spin their cotton wholly by hand, and weave their cloth in a rude loom, would doubtless be astonished when they first saw the effects of machinery, in the calico which is returned to their own shores, made from the material brought from their own shores, cheaper than they themselves could make it. But their indolent habits would not permit them to inquire how machinery produced this wonder. There are many amongst us who only know that the wool grows upon the sheep's back, and that it is converted into a coat by labour and machinery. They do not estimate the prodigious power of thought—the patient labour—the unceasing watchfulness—the frequent disappointment—the uncertain profit—which many have had to encounter in bringing this machinery to perfection, and in organizing the modes of its working, in connection with labour. Further, their knowledge of history may have been confined to learning by rote the dates when kings began to reign, with the names of the battles they fought or the rebels they executed. Of the progress of commerce and the arts, they may have been taught little. The records

of wool constitute a real part of the history of England ; and form, in our opinion, a subject of far more permanent importance than the scandalous annals of the wives of Henry VIII., or the mistresses of Charles II.

Let us first take a broad view of the more prominent facts that belong to our woollen manufacture ; and then proceed to notice those of other textile fabrics.

The reader will remember that when the fur-traders refused to advance to John Tanner a supply of blankets for his winter consumption, he applied himself to make garments out of moose-skins. The skin was ready manufactured to his hands when he had killed and stripped the moose ; but still the blanket brought from England across the Atlantic was to him a cheaper and a better article of clothing than the moose-skin which he had at hand ; and he felt it a privation when the trader refused it to him upon the accustomed credit. It never occurred to him to think of manufacturing a blanket ; although he was in some respects a manufacturer. He was a manufacturer of sugar, amongst the various trades which he followed. He used to travel about the country till he had found a grove of maple-trees ; and here he would sit down for a month or two till he had extracted sugar from the maples. Why did he not attempt to make blankets ? He had not that Accumulated Knowledge, and he did not work with that *Division of Labour*, which are essential to the manufacture of blankets —both of which principles are developing to their highest perfection when capital enables the manufacture of woollen-cloth, or any other article, to be carried forward upon a large scale.

We will endeavour to trace what accumulations of skill, and what divisions of employment, were necessary to enable Tanner to clothe himself with a piece of woollen-cloth. We shall not stop to inquire whether the skill has produced the division of employment, or the division of employment has produced the skill. It is sufficient for us to show, that the two principles are in joint operation,

unitely carrying forward the business of production in the most profitable manner. It is enough for us to know, that where there is no skill there is no division of employment, and where there is no division of employment there is no skill. Skill and division of employment are inseparably wedded. If they could be separated, they would in their separation, cease to work profitably. They are kept together by the constant energy of capital, devising the most profitable direction for labour.

Before a blanket can be made, we must have the material for making a blanket. Tanner had not the material, because he was not a cultivator. Before wool can be grown there must be, as we have shown, appropriation of land. When this appropriation takes place, the owner of the land either cultivates it himself, which is the earliest stage in the division of agricultural employment,—or he obtains a portion of the produce in the shape of corn or cattle, or in a money payment. Hence a tenantry. But the tenant, to manufacture wool at the greatest advantage, must possess capital, and carry forward the principle of the division of employment by hiring labourers. We use the word *manufacture* of wool advisedly; for all farming processes are manufacturing processes, and invariably reduce themselves to change of form, as all commercial processes reduce themselves to change of place. If the capital of the farmer is sufficient to enable him to farm upon a large scale, he divides his labourers; and one becomes a shepherd, one a ploughman,—one sows the ground, and one washes and shears the sheep, more skilfully than another. If he has a considerable farm, he divides his land, also, upon the same principle, and has pasture, and arable, and rotation of crops. By these divisions he is enabled to manufacture wool cheaper than the farmer upon a small scale, who employs one man to do everything, and has not a proper proportion of pasture and arable, or a due rotation of crops. At every division of employment skill must be called forth in a higher perfection than when two or more employments

Q

were joined together; and the chief director of the skill, the capitalist himself or farmer, must require more skill to make all the parts which compose his manufactory work together harmoniously.

But we have new divisions of employment to trace before the wool can be got to the manufacturer. These employments are created by what may be called the *local* division of labour. It is convenient to rear the sheep upon the mountains of Wales, because there the short and thymy pastures are fitted for the growth of wool. It is convenient to manufacture the wool into cloth at Leeds, because coals are there at hand to give power to the steam-engines, with which the manufacture is carried on. The farmer in Wales, and the manufacturer of cloth in Leeds, must be brought into connection. In the infancy of commerce one or both of them would make a journey to establish this connection; but the cost of that journey would add to the cost of the wool, and therefore lessen the consumption of woollen cloth. The division of employment goes on to the creation of a wool-factor, or dealer in wool, who either purchases directly from the grower, or sells to the manufacturer for a commission from the grower. The grower, therefore, sends the wool direct to the factor, whose business it is to find out what manufacturer is in want of wool. If the factor did not exist, the manufacturer would have to find out, by a great deal of personal exertion, what farmer had wool to sell; or the farmer would have to find out, with the same exertion, what manufacturer wanted to buy wool. The factor receives a commission, which the seller and buyer ultimately unite in paying. They co-operate to establish a wool-factor, just as we all co-operate to establish a postman; and just as the postman, who delivers a number of letters to a great many individuals, does that service at little more cost to all than each individual would pay for the delivery of a single letter, so does the wool-factor exchange the wool between the grower and the manufacturer at little more cost to a large number of the

growers who employ him than each would be obliged to pay in expenses and loss of time to travel from Wales to Leeds to sell his wool.

We have, however, a great many more divisions of employment to follow out before the wool is conveyed from Wales to Leeds or Bradford. If the packs are taken on shipboard, and carried down the Mersey to Liverpool, we have all the variety of occupations, involving different degrees of skill, which make up the life of a mariner; if they go forward upon the railroad to Manchester, we have all the higher degrees of skill involved in their transport which belong to the business of an engineer; or if they finally reach their destination by canal, we have another division of labour that adjusts itself to the management of boats in canals. But the ship, the railroad, the canal, which are created by the necessity of transporting commodities from place to place, have been formed after the most laborious exercise of the highest science, working with the greatest mechanical skill; and they exist only through the energy of prodigious accumulations of capital; the growth of centuries of patient and painful labour and economy.

We have at length the wool in a manufactory at Leeds or Bradford. The first class of persons who prepare the wool are the sorters and pickers. It is their business to separate the fine from the coarse locks, so that each may be suited to different fabrics. There is judgment required, which could not exist without division of labour; and the business, too, must be done rapidly, or the cost of sorting and picking would outweigh the advantage. The second principal operation is scouring. Here the men are constantly employed in washing the wool, to free it from all impurities. It is evident that the same man could not profitably pass from the business of sorting to that of scouring, and back again,—from dry work to wet, and from wet to dry. When the wool is out of the hands of the scourers it comes into those of the dyers, who colour it

with the various chemical agents, applied to the manufacture. The carders next receive it, who tear it with machines till it attains the requisite fineness. From the carders it passes to the slubbers, who form it into tough loose threads; and thence to spinners, who make the threads finer and stronger. There are subdivisions of employment which are not essential for us to notice, to give an idea of the great division of employment, and the consequent accumulation of peculiar skill, required to prepare wool to be made into yarn, to be made into woollen cloth.

The next stages in the manufacture are the spinning, the warping, the sizing, and the weaving. These are all distinct operations, and are all carried forward with the most elaborate machinery, adapted to the division of labour which it enforces, and by which it is enforced.

But there is a great deal still to be done before the cloth is fit to be worn. The cloth, now woven, has to be scoured, as the wool was. There is a subsequent process called burling, at which females are constantly employed. The boiling and milling come next, in which the cloth is again exposed to the action of water, and beaten so as to give it toughness and consistency. Dressers, called giggers, next take it in hand, who also work with machinery upon the wet cloth. It has then to be dried in houses where the temperature is sometimes as high as 130 degrees, and where the men work almost naked. It is evident that the boilers and dressers could not profitably work in the dry-houses; and that there must be division of employment to prevent those sudden transitions which would destroy the human frame much more quickly than a regular exposure to cold or heat, to damp or dryness. The cloth must be next cropped or cut upon the face, to remove the shreds of wool which deform the surface in every direction. When cut, it has to be brushed dry by machinery, to get out the crop-pings which remain in its texture. This done, it is dyed in the shape of cloth, as it was formerly dyed in the shape

of wool. Then comes a variety of processes to increase the delicacy of the fabric:—singeing, by passing the cloth within a burning distance of red-hot cylinders; frizzing, to raise a nap upon the cloth; glossing, by carrying over it heavy heated plates of iron; pressing, in which operation of the press red-hot plates are also employed; and drawing, in which men, with fine needles, draw up minute holes in the cloth when it has passed through the last operation. Then comes the packing; and after all these processes it must be bought by a wholesale dealer, and again by a retailer, before it reaches the consumer. Between the growth of the fleece of wool, and the completion of a coat by a skilful tailor,—who, it is affirmed, puts five-and-twenty thousand stitches into it,—what an infinite division of employments! what inventions of science! what exercises of ingenuity! what unwearyed application! what painful, and too often unhealthy labour! And yet if men are to be clothed well and cheaply, all these manifold processes are not in vain; and the individual injury in some branches of the employ is not to be compared to the suffering that would ensue if cloth were not made at all, or if it were made at such a cost that the most wealthy only could afford to wear it. But for the accumulation of knowledge, and the division of employments, engaged in the manufacture of cloth, and set in operation by large capital, we should each be obliged to be contented with a blanket such as John Tanner desired, and very few indeed would even obtain that blanket: for if skill and division of labour were not to go on in one branch, they would not go on in another, and then we should have nothing to give in exchange for the blanket. The individual injury to health, also, produced by the division of labour, is not so great, upon the average, as if there were no division. All the returns of human life in this country show an extremely little difference in the effect upon life, even of what we consider the most unhealthy trades; and this proceeds from that extraordinary power of the human body to adapt itself to a

habit, however apparently injurious, which is one of the most beautiful evidences of the compensating principle which prevails throughout the moral world.

The wool manufacture of Great Britain employs a quarter of a million persons, in the various processes connected with the production of cloth, worsted, flannel, blankets, and carpets. What a contrast to all this variety of labour is the history of the earlier stages of the manufacture of woollen cloth! It is unnecessary to go back to the time of Henry III., when the production of wool was in such an imperfect state through flocks of sheep being scattered over immense tracts of waste land, that a manor in Surrey was held under the crown by the tenure of gathering wool for the Queen. According to the record, Peter de Baldewyn was to gather the wool from the thorns that had torn it from the sheep's backs; and if he did not choose to gather it he was to forfeit twenty shillings.\* In the time of Edward III., according to Fuller, in his "Church History," the English clothiers were wholly unskilful; "knowing no more what to do with their wool than the sheep which wear it, as to any artificial and curious drapery, their best cloth being no better than frieze, such their coarseness for want of skill in the making." When the Flemish clothiers came into England, the manufacture improved, in spite of the regulating power of the state, which was perpetually interfering with material, quality, and wages. In time wool became the chief commodity of England. The wool-sack of the House of Lords was typical of this staple industry, and of the mode also in which the majesty of legislation sat heavy upon the produce. To encourage the manufacture nothing was to be woven but wool. From the cradle to the grave all were to be wrapt in wool. The genius of prohibition prevented the exchange of wool with other manufactured commodities; and, therefore, to keep up rents, Narcissa was "odious in woollen," and a Holland shirt—for British linen did not exist—was a rare com-

\* Blount's 'Ancient Tenures,' ed. 1784, p. 183.

mmodity, cheap at “eight shillings an ell,” as in the days of Dame Quickly.

This was the state of things at the end of the seventeenth century, and somewhat later. The manufacturers clamoured against the exportation of wool : and the agriculturists at the same time resisted the importation of Irish and Scotch cattle. The parliament listened to both sets of clamourers. It said to the people :—You of trade shall not be ruined by the land selling wool to foreigners—there shall be no competition ; you shall buy the wool at the lowest price. And then parliament turned round to the complaining grazier, and said,—the cloth-maker and his men shall not ruin you by buying meat cheap—no Irish cattle or Scotch sheep shall come here to lower your prices. From 1664 to 1824 the exportation of wool was strictly prohibited. The importation was sometimes prevented by high duties—sometimes encouraged by low. The manufacture was constantly struggling with these attempts of the state to hold a balance between what were so universally considered as conflicting interests. In 1844 the whole system was abandoned. “When the prohibition against the export of wool was removed, the manufacturers of the West Riding saw what French ingenuity could do with the long-treasured combing wool of England. They did not sit down in despair ; but very soon produced stuffs that might compete with the most beautiful of the French. When I was at Leeds in 1828, this emulation was doing for the woollen manufacture what it was doing for the silk. Then, the wool of Australia was almost unknown. No one could have dreamt that from a colonial empire, which few knew otherwise than as the Botany Bay of Convicts, would come a supply of wool, not only vast in quantity, but of so silky a quality as to change the whole character of the finer fabrics. When South America had sent us the wool of the Alpaca, manufactories sprang up at Bradford upon a grander scale than even modern Leeds could rival in its gigantic flax-mills. No one could have believed, in 1828, that woollen rags,

then chiefly thrown upon the dunghill to rot for manure, could, by a judicious combination with wool, be made to produce useful articles of clothing, which, if wool alone were used, would be beyond the means of the great mass of the working community. Shoddy, the commercial name for woollen rags, has given to millions warm and cheap winter garments and light and pleasant summer ones. If legislators, in the desire to imitate the benevolence of their predecessors in preserving the staple of manufacturers, should prohibit the use of shoddy, we are told that one-third of the woollen mills in the kingdom would be closed, and distress brought upon the West Riding of Yorkshire as great as that produced in Lancashire from the want of cotton.”\*

The employment of wool in the manufacture of broad-cloth and flannel was, a few years ago, almost the entire business of the woollen factories. The novel uses to which wool is now applied, and the almost innumerable varieties of articles of clothing which are produced from long wool and short wool—from combinations of alpaca wool and coarse wool, of wool with cotton, of wool with silk—together with the introduction of brilliant dyes and tasteful designs, formerly unknown—have established vast seats of manufacture which are almost peculiar to our country, and have converted, in a few years, humble villages into great cities. The finest Paisley shawls rival the elaborate handicraft of Hindustan; and, what is of more importance, the humblest female may purchase a tasteful article of dress at a price which a few years ago would have been thought fabulous. The wonderful variety of patterns which we see in these and other productions of modern skill are effected by the Jacquard apparatus, in which the pattern depends upon the disposition of holes pierced in separate bits of pasteboard.

If there be one thing more remarkable than another in the visible condition of the people of Great Britain, it is the

\* ‘*Passages of a Working Life,*’ by Charles Knight.

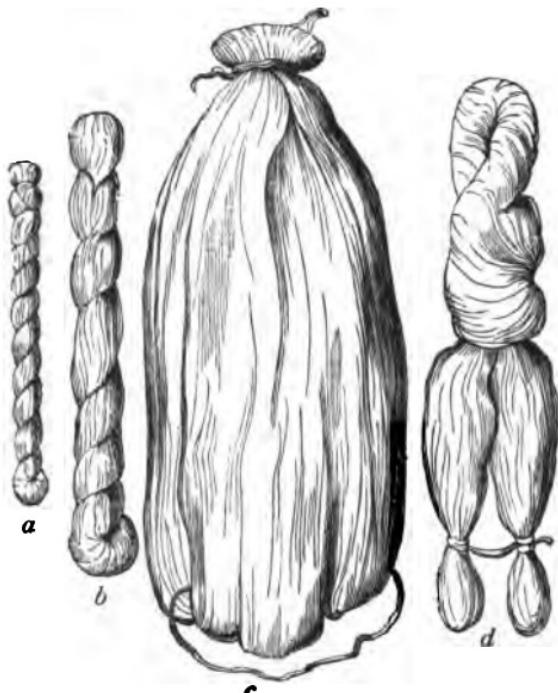
universality of useful, elegant, and cheap clothing. There is very small distinction in the ordinary coat and trousers of the peer and the best dress of the artizan ; and not a great deal more in the gown and shawl of the high-born lady and those of the handmaid of her toilet. Perhaps the absence of mere finery, and the taste which is an accompaniment of superior education, constitute the chief difference in the dress of various ranks. This feature of the present times is a part of our social history.

For several centuries the domestic trade of the country was hemmed round and fettered by laws against extravagance in dress, which had always been a favourite subject for the experimentalizing of barbarous legislation. An act of 1463, recites that the Commons pray their Lord the king to remember that in the times of his noble progenitors, ordinances and statutes were made for the apparel and array of the commons, as well of men as of women, so that none of them should use or wear any inordinate or excessive apparel, but only according to their degrees. However, we find that all these ordinances had been utterly fruitless. The parliament makes new ordinances. The nobles, according to these, may wear whatever they please ; knights and their wives were to wear no cloth of gold, or fur of sables ; no person under the state of a lord to wear any purple silk ; no esquires or gentlemen and their wives any silk at all ; no persons not having possessions of the yearly value of forty pounds, any fur ; and, what is cruel indeed, no widow but such as hath possessions of the value of forty pounds shall wear any fur, any gold or silver girdle, or any kerchief that had cost more than three shillings and four pence ; persons not having forty shillings a-year were denied the enjoyment of fustian and scarlet cloth ; the yeoman was to have no stuffing in his doublet ; nor servants in husbandry, broadcloth of a higher price than two shillings a yard. The length of gowns, jackets, and cloaks, was prescribed by the same statute ; and the unhappy tailor who exceeded the length by the breadth of his nail, was to

be mulcted in the same penalties as those who flaunted in skirts of more than needful longitude. The men and women of the mystery and workmanship of silk prefer their piteous complaint to parliament, that silk-work ready wrought is brought into the realm. If it had occurred to them to petition that the gentlemen and their wives might be permitted to wear satin, as well as the lords, their piteous complaint of want of occupation might have been more easily redressed than by foreign prohibition. Sump-tuary laws have long been abolished; but to them succeeded the laws of custom, which prescribed one sort of dress to one condition of people and another to another. We cannot doubt which state gives most employment to manufacturers, the law of exclusiveness or the law of universality. If the labourer and artificer were still restricted, by enactment or by custom, to the wearing of cloth of a certain price per yard, we may be quite sure that the manufacture of the finer cloths would be in no flourishing condition; and if the servant-maid could not put on her Sunday gown of silk, we may be equally clear that the silk-trade would continue to be the small thing that it was half a century ago, when it had the full benefit of restriction, instead of being, as it is now, one of the great staple trades of the country.

When a boy who keeps silk-worms upon mulberry leaves puts a spinning worm into a little paper bag, and finally obtains an oval ball of silk,—he does, upon a small scale, what is done in the silk-growing countries upon a large scale. When he winds off his cocoon of silk upon a little reel, he is engaged in the first process of silk making. There must be myriads of silk-worms reared to produce the millions of pounds of raw silk that Great Britain manufactures. The school-boy, from three or four silk-worms, can obtain a little skein of silk, which he carefully puts between the leaves of a book, and looks at it again and again, in delight at its glossy beauty. Perhaps he does not take the trouble to think how many such skeins would be required to pro-

duce a pair of silk stockings. As the school-boy puts his skein into a book, so the silk-producers of India, Italy, Persia, and Turkey, send us their hanks of silk, which we call by various names, made up as shown in the following woodcut.



Hanks of silk. a, Bengal; b, Italian; c, Persian; d, Broussa.

In Egypt, a silk-producing country, a woman has a simple machine for preparing the hanks of silk for the purposes of commerce. She winds the silk upon a reel. She has no moving power but that of her hand and arm. In England a woman also attends to a winding machine, by which the silk is transferred to bobbins for the purpose of being spun to various degrees of fineness. She has no labour to perform, beyond the providing a supply of material to be wound, removing a bobbin when it is filled, placing an empty one in its place, and occasionally piecing a broken

thread. She is doing what the machine cannot do—adjusting her operations to many varying circumstances. The machine is moved by the steam-engine; but the steam-engine, the reels, and the bobbins would work unavailingly, without the guidance of the mind that waits upon and watches them.

The peculiarity in the manufacture of silk-twist, or thread, as distinguished from that of cotton, or flax, or wool, is that it is produced naturally in one uninterrupted length. The object of the machinery of a silk-mill is, not to combine short fibres in a continuous thread by spinning, but to wind and twist, so as to unite many slight threads already formed into one thread of sufficient strength for the purpose of weaving, or of sewing. The subsequent processes are the same as with the fibrous substances. The machinery by which these processes are carried on has been improved, by successive degrees, since Thomas Lombe erected the first silk-mill at Derby, in the beginning of the 18th century. He obtained a patent which expired in 1732; and parliament, refusing to renew his patent, granted him a compensation, upon the condition that he should deposit an exact model of his machinery in the Tower of London. That model was shown to the visitors of the Tower in the present century; and, by comparison with the vast array of spindles in a modern silk-mill, would seem as inefficient as the flail compared with the thrashing machine.

Ribbon-weaving is a branch of the silk manufacture, in which our country is rapidly attaining an excellence as regards beauty of design, which may fairly compete with the best productions of the French looms.

Thomas Firmin, a philanthropic writer, who published ‘Proposals for the Employment of the Poor,’ in 1681, says, “It is a thing greatly to be wished that we could make linen cloth here as cheap as they send it us from abroad.” He thought the poor might then be employed; but he despairingly adds, “if that cannot be done, nor any other.

way found out to employ our poor people, we had much better lose something by the labour of our poor than lose all their labour ;" and so he proposes to give those who were idle flax and hemp to spin in spacious workhouses. The notion was a benevolent one ; and it was the favourite scheme for half a century, to destroy idleness and beggary in England, by setting up manufactories at the public cost. Defoe saw the fallacy of the principle, and resisted it with his strong common sense : " Suppose now a workhouse for the employment of poor children sets them to spinning of worsted. For every skein of worsted these poor children spin, there must be a skein the less spun by some poor person or family that spun it before." Defoe saw that there could be no profitable increase of labour without increase of consumption ; and he argues that if the Czar of Muscovy would order his people to wear stockings, and we could supply them, the poor might then be set to work. The increase of consumption, all over the world, is produced by the inventions which diminish the cost of production.

Having thus noticed the leading processes of the manufacture of cotton, of wool, of silk, of linen, we may conclude this chapter with a brief mention of the art that gives to many of the fabrics produced their chief beauty—the art of printing cloth in colours. This art applies to the finest as well as the commonest productions of the loom ; and the science of the British dyer, the beauty of his patterns, and the perfection of his machinery, have now given us an eminence in this department of industry which can only be preserved by constant efforts towards perfection of design and durable brilliancy of colour.

There is a striking, although natural parallel, between printing a piece of cloth and printing a sheet of a book, or a newspaper. Block-printing is the impress of the pattern by hand ; as block-books were made four centuries ago. We have no block-books now ; for machinery has banished that tedious process. But block-printing is used for costly shawls and velvets, which require to have many colours

produced by repeated impress from a large number of blocks, each carrying a different colour. Except for expensive fabrics, this mode is superseded by block-printing with a sort of press, in which several blocks are set in a frame. Here again is somewhat of a similarity to the operation of the book-press. Lastly, we have cylinder-printing resembling the rapid working of the book-printing machine, each producing the same cheapness. As the pattern has to be obtained from several cylinders, each having its own colour, there is great nicety in the operation; and the most beautiful mechanism is necessary for feeding the cylinder with colour; moving the cloth to meet the revolving cylinder; and giving to the cylinder its power of impression. But those who witness the operation see little of the ultimate effect to be obtained in the subsequent processes of dyeing. Fast colours are produced by the use in the pattern of substances called mordants; which may be colourless themselves, but receive the colour of the dye-bath, which colour is only fixed in the parts touched by the mordant, and is washed out from the parts not touched. When what is called a substantive colour is at once impressed upon the white cloth, much of the beauty is also derived from subsequent processes. The chemist, the machinist, the designer, and the engraver—science and art—set the calico printing works in activity; and the carrying on these complicated processes can only be profitably done upon a large scale. In the earlier days of our cotton manufacture there are small print-works in the neighbourhood of London, where the imperfect machinery was turned by water-power. The steam-engine of one Lancashire factory now produces more printed cottons and muslins than all the rivers of southern England in the last century. The calico-printers comprise many thousand persons. But no direct enumeration can be made of the employments that are required merely to produce the dyes with which the calico-printer works. The mineral and vegetable kingdoms, and even the animal kingdom, combine their natural productions in the colours of a lady's dress.

The sulphur-miner of Sicily, the salt worker of Cheshire, the hewer of wood in the Brazils, the negro in the indigo plantations of the East and West Indies, the cultivator of madder in France, and the gatherer of the cochineal insect in Mexico, are all labourers for the print-works of England and Scotland. The discoveries of science, in combination with the experience of practice, has set all this industry in motion, and has given a value to innumerable productions of nature which would otherwise be useless and unemployed. But these demands of manufactures do more—they create modes of cultivation which are important sources of national prosperity. Jean Althen, a Persian of great family, bred up in every luxury, became a slave in Anatolia, when Kouli-Khan overthrew the Persian empire. For fourteen years he worked in the cotton and madder-fields. He then escaped to France, carrying with him some madder-seeds. Long did he labour in vain to attract the attention of the government of Louis XV. to his plans. At length, having spent all the fortune which he had acquired by marriage with a French heiress, he obtained the patronage of the Marquis de Caumont, in his attempts to introduce the cultivation of madder into the department of Vaucluse. His life was closing in comparative indigence when a new branch of industry was developed in his adopted country. The district in which he created a new industry has increased a hundredfold in value. The debt of gratitude was paid by a tablet to his memory, erected sixty years after he was insensible to human rewards. We starve our benefactors when they are living; and satisfy our consciences by votive monuments. Althen's daughter died as poor as her father. The tablet was erected at Avignon when the family was extinct.

There is a process connected with the production of clothing which we must briefly refer to, as one of the signal examples of the axiom of our title—‘Knowledge is Power.’

Let us suppose that chemistry had not discovered and

organised the modes in which bleaching is performed ; and that the thousands of millions of yards of calico and linen which we weave in this country had still to be bleached, as bleaching was accomplished in the last century. We knew nothing about the matter, and our linen was then sent over to Holland to go through this operation. The Dutch steeped the bundles of cloth in ley made by water poured upon wood ashes—then soaked them in buttermilk—and finally spread them upon the grass for several months. These were all natural agencies which discharged the colouring matter without any chemical science. It was at length found out that sulphuric acid would do the same work in one day which the buttermilk did in six weeks ; but the sun and the air had still to be the chief bleaching powers. A French chemist then found out that a new gas, chlorine, would supersede the necessity for spreading out the linen for several months ; and so the acres of bleaching ground which we were using in England and Scotland—for we had left off sending the brown and yellow cloth to Holland—were free for cultivation. But the chlorine was poisonous to the workmen, and imparted a filthy odour to the cloth. Chemistry again went to work, and finally obtained the chloride of lime, which is the universal bleaching powder of modern manufactures. What used to be the work of eight months is now accomplished in an hour or two ; and so a bag of dingy raw cotton may be in New York on the first day of the month, and be converted into the whitest calico before the month is at an end.

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XVII.

1. What two principles are necessarily called into operation for the manufacture of a blanket ?
2. By what means are skill and division of employment kept together ?
3. What is necessary before wool can be grown ?
4. What is the earliest stage in the division of agricultural employment ?
5. How is the principle of the division of employment carried beyond this first stage ?

6. What are the divisions of labour in extensive farming operations?
7. What is called forth by such a division of labour?
8. What constitutes the local division of labour?
9. How are the grower and the manufacturer of wool brought into connection?
10. What benefits result from the establishment of a wool factor?
11. What divisions of employment are involved in the transport of wool from the grower to the manufacturer?
12. What are the principal divisions of labour in the manufacture of wool into cloth?
13. What are the subsequent processes to make the cloth fit for wear?
14. What benefits result from all this division of labour?
15. What was the state of the wool manufacture in its earlier stages?
16. What was the effect on the wool trade of the abandonment of prohibition?
17. What impulse was given to the woollen manufacture by the introduction of a new material, and by the working up of what was considered useless?
18. Give some examples of sumptuary laws.
19. What is the effect on manufactures of sumptuary laws and laws of custom in dress?
20. What is the peculiarity in the manufacture of silk as distinguished from that of cotton or wool?
21. When, and by whom, was the first silk mill erected?
22. What would be the result of an increase of labour without a proportionate increase of consumption?
23. By what is the increase of consumption produced?
24. What are the various processes in the printing of cloth?
25. What are the variety of employments in connection with cloth printing?
26. What improvements has science made in the processes of bleaching?

**CHAPTER XVIII.**

Hosiery manufacture—The stocking-frame—The circular hosiery-machine—  
Hats—Gloves—Boots and shoes—Sewing-machine—Straw-plait—Artificial  
flowers—Fans—Lace—Bobbin-net machine—Pins—Needles—Buttons—  
Toys—Lucifer-matches—Envelopes.

BEFORE the invention of the first stocking-machine, in the year 1589, by William Lee, a clergyman, none but the very rich wore stockings, and many of the most wealthy went without stockings at all, that part of dress being sewn together by the tailor, or their legs being covered with bandages of cloth. The covering for the leg was called a “nether-stock,” or lower stocking. Philip Stubbes, a tremendous disclaimer against every species of luxury, thus describes the expensive stockings of his time, 1585:—

“ Then have they nether-stocks to these hosen, not of cloth (though never so fine), for that is thought too base, but of jarnsey, worsted, crewell, silk, thread, and such like, or else at the least of the finest yarn that can be got, and so curiously knit with open seam down the leg, with quirks and clocks about the ankles, and sometime, haply, interlaced with gold or silver threads, as is wonderful to behold. And to such impudent insolency and shameful outrage it is now grown, that every one, almost, though otherwise very poor, having scarce forty shillings of wages by the year, will not stick to have two or three pair of these silk nether-stocks, or else of the finest yarn that may be got, though the price of them be a ryall, or twenty shillings, or more, as commonly it is; for how can they be less, when as the very knitting of them is worth a noble or a ryall, and some much more? The time hath been when

one might have clothed his body well for less than a pair of these nether-stocks will cost."

It is difficult to understand how those who had only forty shillings a year wages could expend twenty shillings upon a pair of knit stockings. It is quite clear they were for the rich only ; and that very few persons were employed in knitting and embroidering stockings.

William Lee struggled to make stockings cheap. He made a pair of stockings by the frame, in the presence of King James I. ; but such was the prejudice of those times, that he could get no encouragement for his invention. His invention was discountenanced, upon the plea that it would deprive the industrious poor of their subsistence. He went to France, where he met with no better success, and died at last of a broken heart. The great then *could* discountenance an invention, because its application was limited to themselves. *They* only wore stockings : the poor who made them had none to wear. Stockings were not cheap enough for the poor to wear, and therefore they went without. Of the millions of people now in this country, how few are without stockings ! What a miserable exception to the comfort of the rest of the English people does it appear when we see a beggar in the streets without stockings ! We consider such a person to be in the lowest stage of want and suffering. Two centuries ago, not one person in a thousand wore stockings ;—one century ago, not one person in five hundred wore them ;—now, not one person in a thousand is without them. Who made this great change in the condition of the people of England, and, indeed, of the people of almost all civilized countries ? William Lee—who died at Paris of a broken heart. And why did he die of grief and penury ? Because the people of his own days were too ignorant to accept the blessings he had prepared for them.

We ask with confidence, had the terror of the stocking-frame any real foundation ? Were any people thrown out of employment by the stocking-frame ?

“The knitters in the sun,  
And the free maids who weave their thread with bones,”

as Shakspere describes the country lasses of his day, had to change their employment ; but there was far more employment for the makers of stockings, for then every one began to wear stockings.

Suppose that the ignorance and prejudice which prevailed at the time of James I. upon the subject of machinery had continued to the present day ; and that not only the first stocking-frame of William Lee had never been used, but that all machines employed in the manufacture of hosiery had never been thought of ; and they could not have been thought of if the first machines had been put down. The greater number of us, in that case, would have been without stockings.

But there would have been a greater evil than even this. We might all have found substitutes for stockings, or have gone without them. But the progress of ingenuity would have been stopped. The inventive principle would have been destroyed.

We have not reached the end of our career of improvement. Civilization is not destined to run a backward race. William Lee's stocking-frame worked well for two centuries and a half. One of the most beautiful contrivances of our time has now greatly superseded it. The circular hosiery machine—more properly called a machine for manufacturing “looped fabrics,” as well as a rotary machine, have been thus described by Mr. Walter Felkin, of Nottingham ; who has also, from his intimate local knowledge, been enabled to show their effect upon the condition of the workers :—

“Since 1844, the demand for hosiery has exceeded the supply ; and thus a gradual but most important improvement has taken place throughout the trade. But the years 1861-2 have been exceptional, from the dearth of cotton wool ; depriving us also of the United States market, where previously we had a most important outlet for our goods. The hours of labour have been lessened, and the rate of

wages had risen from 50 to 100 per cent. since 1844, according to the classes of goods made. By an invention originated by Mr. Brunel, but improved and made more useful since, a circular head, garnished with hooks at its circumference, is used to produce a looped sack—therefore without a seam. It works with almost incredible speed. One of these will turn off, using eight feeders to deliver the yarn, 350 rounds, or a yard in length, of medium quality per minute of a head twelve inches round; or 150 dozens of women's hose in a week. Several of these heads can be managed by one person. The quantity of yarn used and number of dozens produced are immense. The prices at which they are sold is according to weight, but very low indeed. They are cut into shape by scissors, and are sewn up by hand or by stitching machines. Instead of ruining the trade, as was feared, they have proved to be pioneers of the use of stockings in lands where they were previously not known or not worn; and have helped to raise wages through the trade. Women overlooking these "roundabouts" earn 12s. to 20s. a week with ease. The men employed about them gain 20s. to 35s. weekly. There are 1500 sets (each averaging ten to twelve heads) in the trade, making hose, shirts, drawers, &c. They are worked in factories, and by steam. That is the case also with the "rotaries," which are forty inches and upwards in width, making goods in a straight line from side to side, and producing four, six, or eight hose at once. Of these there are probably 1500 at work, at which the men get 20s. to 30s. a week wages. Those are making hose principally. The 'circulars' and 'rotaries' are believed to have increased five per cent. per annum in number for some years."\*

As the nether-stocks of our ancestors were for the great and wealthy, so were their Hats. Old Stubbes writes, "Sometimes they use them sharp on the crown, pearking up like the spear or shaft of a steeple, standing a quarter of a yard above the crown of their heads, some more, some

\* Jury Reports, Exhibition 1862.

less, as please the fantasies of their inconstant minds. Other some be flat and broad on the crown, like the battlements of a house. Another sort have round crowns, sometimes with one kind of band, sometimes with another, now black, now white, now russet, now red, now green, now yellow, now this, now that, never content with one colour or fashion two days to an end. And thus in vanity they spend the Lord his treasure, consuming their golden years and silver days in wickedness and sin. And as the fashions be rare and strange, so is the stuff whereof their hats be made divers also; for some are of silk, some of velvet, some of taffeta, some of sarsenet, some of wool, and, which is more curious, some of a certain kind of fine hair; these they call beaver hats, of 20, 30, or 40 shillings price, fetched from beyond the seas, from whence a great sort of other vanities do come besides." Here, then, we see that the beaver hat was in those days an article of great price. The commonalty had their "plain statute caps" of wool. In our time the beaver hat was the common wear of the middle classes until the last few years, when the cheaper silk hat became almost universal. Much of this silk material is prepared in our own factories. Hats have therefore become intimately associated with the material produced by the loom.

The manufacture of Gloves is connected, in a very large department, with the hosiery manufactory. The use of thread gloves and cotton gloves has had the effect, in some degree, of lessening the consumption of leather gloves. The importation of leather gloves and mitts was prohibited until 1825. We now import several million pairs annually: and the home manufacture, instead of being ruined, as was predicted, was never more prosperous. The French gloves, once so superior to our own, have improved the English, by the natural force of competition; and the manufacturers not only purchase better leather than formerly, but the cottage-workwomen that labour in the glove districts have become neater and more careful sewers. The consumption

of gloves has ceased to be exclusively for the rich. The perfumed and embroidered glove of the sixteenth century is no longer required. The use of gloves has become universal amongst both sexes of the middle classes. The female domestic would think it unbecoming to go to church without her gloves ; and the well-dressed artisan holds it nothing effeminate to use a covering for his hands, which his forefathers thought a distinguishing appurtenance of the high-born and luxurious.

The term manufacture, as applied to the boot and shoe trade, belongs to recent times. The only notion of a shoemaker, whether in London or in the country, was that his entire handicraft was confined to individual customers of either sex ; that he undertook to fit every foot, which task he endeavoured to accomplish by careful admeasurement ; that he employed a few men and women, who worked either in his shop or in their houses ; that he would occasionally have a *misfit* or two on his hands, but that he kept no stock ready for chance customers. Yet in those days, when the particular last for the individual foot made the shoemaker's prosperity depend on small returns with large profits, there were two places where shoemaking was the staple trade—Stafford and Northampton. The cordwainers of Northampton were famous centuries ago. The greatest impulse in these days to the shoe trade of Northampton and Northamptonshire is the rapid increase of the population of the country, the profitable intercourse with its colonies, and the existence of shoe-shops in every street of London, in every provincial town, and in almost every village. The greater portion of the shoes and boots worn throughout the queen's dominions are ready-made.

Boot and shoe making is the staple trade of Northampton—the trade which maintains the fine old town in a more flourishing condition than would belong to it as the centre of a great agricultural district. “Squires and spires,” the old characteristics of the county, still hold their proper rank ; but the last is the symbol of its commercial pros-

perity. No one who goes round one of the great shoe-factories of Northampton can fail to be struck with the extent of this trade. Here are to be seen vast stores of boots and shoes of every variety. Heaps of soldiers' shoes are here ready to be delivered upon government contracts. Women's shoes and boots of every description of workmanship are here to be found ; from the plainest strong boot for an English winter, to the light boot of embroidered morocco for the fair ones who take some exercise under East Indian skies. The thick-soled hightows for the walk over the stubble or the ascent of the mountain, are here on manifold shelves, whose number is matched by the varnished boots for the soft tread of the drawing-room. The examination of these stores led the writer to desire some knowledge how they are produced so abundantly and so cheaply. He saw the first process of cutting out the leather, and watched the next process of putting together all the materials necessary for producing a complete boot or shoe, to be taken away to be completed by domestic manufacture. The union of the sole to the upper leather is the work of the legion of shoemakers who dwell in the town and neighbourhood. The upper leather is now very generally sewn by the sewing machine, either in a factory by young women or by the "shoemaker's wife," at her own home. The sewing-machine in operation has now become familiar to many persons through its almost universal use. A recent paper in the *Times* on Sewing-machines, has probably startled a considerable number of those who look with alarm upon every abridgment of manual labour. The writer says, "While Hood was composing 'The Song of the Shirt,' and painting with the tints of despair the sempstress, slaving in her garret, a mechanic, almost equally poverty-stricken, was working out, in an American garret, the means of her emancipation." Elias Howe, a native of Massachusetts, was unquestionably the inventor of the Sewing-machine, whatever improvements may have been made upon it. It is asserted in the article to which

I refer, that the Sewing-machine has everywhere improved, instead of lowering, the wages of needlewomen. Nearly all the shirt-making and collar-making of London is now done by the machine, at wages four times as great as could be earned by Hood's sempstress. The largest operations in this branch of industry are carried on in workshops. The demand for workers is so great, that it furnishes a proof that machinery has the inevitable tendency to create increased employment, however its first introduction may derange the ordinary operations of labour. Of course the common organization of Trades' Unions was called out to resist the introduction of the sewing-machine. This is only one of those temporary obstacles to the general use of any labour-saving machine, which at first appear difficult to overcome, but very soon pass away into the obsolete mass of vulgar errors.

When the writer visited Northampton in 1860, and saw the sewing-machine in its application to what may be called factory-work, he was informed by a dealer in the machines, that a few provident shoemakers were purchasing them for the domestic employment of their families, by which one female of their household would be able to earn more than was formerly earned by the wife and two or three daughters. But there was something far beyond this pecuniary advantage. The wife would be at liberty, by working a few hours at the machine, to have leisure for her domestic duties, and would thus obviate the reproach attached to too many shoemakers' wives, that the dirty home, the slatternly habits, and the neglected children, drove the husband to the public-house. The article in the *Times*, which is the evident result of careful observation, shows what salutary effects the sewing-machine is now producing. In proof of the benefit which the trade of Northampton has received from the machine, it is stated that the work of the boot and shoe maker is there better remunerated than at any other place. "In the town of Northampton and the surrounding villages the machines are in the hands

of the workmen, and in every cottage their cheerful click is to be heard." The writer very justly says, "The employment of home-labour versus factory-labour is a large question, involving considerations, moral, sanitary, and industrial; but it is thought by many that the balance of advantage to all parties where the use of the sewing-machine is concerned, is in favour of the home-labour."\*

The straw-plait is a domestic manufacture, chiefly carried on in the midland and eastern counties, but straw bonnets and hats are chiefly made up in factories at Luton and other places. The art of straw-plaiting has been greatly improved amongst us of late years; but the Italian straw, being of a finer nature, is in extensive demand for the higher priced bonnets.

The beautiful production of artificial flowers has, in very recent years, been much increased in England. France, with its superior taste, long supplied us with these ornaments, which had the brilliancy of natural flowers without their perishableness. The fan-makers of England are few in number. In France this is a large branch of manufacture. In the July Report on the Exhibition of Industry in 1851, there is a notice of the fan-trade of Paris, which is curious as showing the joint influences upon cheapness of machinery, and of the multiplication of works of art by engraving. The fan-makers of Paris in 1847 employed five hundred and seventy-five workpeople—the number of the sexes being pretty equally divided. "The men were for the most part copperplate engravers and printers, lithographic draughtsmen and printers, painters, and colourers; the women were mounters, illuminators, painters, colourers, and overlookers. In twenty years it appears that the produce in fans had increased in value nearly threefold, whilst the number of workpeople had diminished one-half. This change is attributed to the employment of machinery, especially of the fly press, in stamping out and embossing the ribs, and the extensive employment of

\* Abridged from 'Passages of a Working Life,' vol. iii.

chromo-lithography, an art not practised at the former period. By these means the French have been enabled greatly to increase their exports by the production of cheap fans, to compete with those made by the Chinese."

Dekker, in his 'Gull's Hornbook,' printed in 1609, advises the gallant of his day to exhibit a "wrought handkerchief." A "handkerchief, spotted with strawberries," was Othello's first gift to Desdemona. It was an embroidered handkerchief, such as is produced in the present day at Cairo by the Egyptian ladies in their private apartments. The embroidered shirts of the time of Elizabeth are thus noticed by Stubbes:—

"These shirts (sometimes it happeneth) are wrought throughout with needlework of silk, and such like, and curiously stitched with open seam, and many other knacks besides, more than I can describe; in so much as I have heard of shirts that have cost, some ten shillings, some twenty, some forty, some five pound, some twenty nobles, and (which is horrible to hear) some ten pound apiece."

The embroidery-frame was in time superseded by the lace-pillow, which is stated to have been first used in Saxony in the sixteenth century. The production of lace extended to Belgium and France; and we are still familiar with the names of Brussels, Mechlin, Lisle, Valenciennes, and Alençon lace. Until the present century no lace was heard of but pillow-lace—a domestic manufacture, of which Honiton was the most famous seat. A stocking-weaver of Nottingham adapted his stocking-frame to the making of lace about 1770: and the bobbin-frame was invented in 1809. It was never extensively used till the expiration of the patent; and the produce of this machine was kept at so high a price by the patentees that it interfered little with the labour of the lace-makers in the cottages of the midland counties.

But a time was coming when as much bobbin-net as the patentees of the first frame charged five pounds for would be sold for half-a-crown; and when, as a necessary conse-

quence of this cheapness, lace-making as a domestic employment would wholly cease, or be confined to the production of an expensive article, supposed to be superior to machine-made lace. That the old hand-labour could compete with the machine was an impossibility. Lace of an ordinary figured pattern used to be made on the pillow at the rate of about three meshes per minute. A bobbin-net machine will produce similar lace at the rate of twenty-four thousand meshes per minute, one person only being required to wait upon the machine. Those who have watched the cottage lace-maker, working with her bobbins and pins, were unable, without long observation, to understand the principle upon which she intertwined the threads. But to explain the more rapid working of the bobbin-net machine would require such a minute acquaintance with all its parts as belongs to the business of the practical machinist, and which words are inadequate to exhibit.

There is an article employed in dress which is at once so necessary and so beautiful that the highest lady in the land uses it, and yet so cheap that the poorest peasant's wife is enabled to procure it. The quality of the article is as perfect as art can make it; and yet, from the enormous quantities consumed by the great mass of the people, it is made so cheap that the poor can purchase the best kind, as well as the rich. It is an article of universal use. United with machinery, many hundreds, and even thousands, are employed in making it. But if the machinery were to stop, and the article were made by human hands alone, it would become so dear that the richest only could afford to use it; and it would become at the same time so rough in its appearance that those very rich would be ashamed of using it. The article we mean is a Pin.

It is not necessary for us to describe the machinery used in pin-making, to make the reader comprehend its effects. A pin is made of brass. We have seen how metal is obtained from ore by machinery, and therefore we will not go over that ground. But suppose the most skilful work-

man has a lump of brass ready by his side, to make it into pins with common tools,—with a hammer and with a file. He beats it upon an anvil, till it becomes nearly thin enough for his purpose. A very fine hammer, and a very fine touch, must he have to produce a pin of any sort,—even a large corking-pin! But the pin made by machinery is a perfect cylinder. To make a metal, or even a wooden cylinder, of a considerable size, with files and polishing, is an operation so difficult that it is never attempted; but with a lathe and a sliding rest it is done every hour by a great many workmen. How much more difficult would it be to make a perfect cylinder the size of a pin! A pin hammered out by hand would present a number of rough edges that would tear the clothes, as well as hold them together. It would not be much more useful or ornamental than the skewer of bone with which the woman of the Sandwich Islands fastens her mats. But the wire of which pins are made acquires a perfectly cylindrical form by the simplest machinery. It is forcibly drawn through the circular holes of a steel plate; and the hole being smaller and smaller each time it is drawn through, it is at length reduced to the size required.

The head of a pin is a more difficult thing to make even than the body. It is formed of a small piece of wire twisted round so as to fit upon the other wire. It is said that by a machine fifty thousand heads can be made in an hour. We should think that a man would be very skilful to make fifty in an hour by hand, in the roughest manner; if so, the machine does the work of a thousand men. The machine, however, does not do all the work. The head is attached to the body of a pin by the fingers of a child, while another machine rivets it on. The operations of cutting and pointing the pins are also done by machinery; and they are polished by a chemical process.

It is by these processes—by these combinations of human labour with mechanical power—that it occurs that fifty pins can be bought for one halfpenny, and that therefore four or

five thousand pins may be consumed in a year by the most economical housewife, at a much less price than fifty pins of a rude make cost two or three centuries ago. A woman's allowance was formerly called her *pin-money*,—a proof that the pins were a sufficiently dear article to make a large item in her expenses. If pins now were to cost a half-penny apiece instead of being fifty for a halfpenny, the greater number of females would adopt other modes of fastening their dress, which would probably be less neat and convenient than pins. No such circumstance could happen while the machinery of pin-making was in use.

Needles are not so cheap as pins, because the material of which they are made is more expensive, and the processes cannot be executed so fully by machinery. But without machinery how could that most beautiful article, a *fine* needle, be sold at the rate of six for a penny?

As in the case of pins, machinery is at work at the first formation of the material. Without the tilt-hammer, which beats out the bar of steel, first at the rate of ten strokes a minute, and lastly at that of five hundred, how could that bar be prepared for needle-making at anything like a reasonable price? In all the processes of needle-making, labour is saved by contrivance and machinery. What human touch, without a machine, would be accurate enough to make the eye of the finest needle, through which the most delicate silk is with difficulty passed? There are two needles to be formed out of one piece of wire; in the previous preparation of which the eyes are marked. The workman, holding in his hand several wires, drops one at a time on the bed-iron of the machine, adjusts it to the die, brings down the upper die upon it by the action of the foot, and allows it to fall into a little dish when done. This he does with such rapidity that one stamper can stamp four thousand wires, equivalent to eight thousand needles, in an hour.

Needles are made in such large quantities, that it is even important to save the time of the child who lays them all

one way when they are completed. Mr. Babbage, who is equally distinguished for his profound science and his mechanical ingenuity, has described this process as an example of one of the simplest contrivances which can come under the denomination of a tool. "It is necessary to separate the needles into two parcels, in order that their points may be all in one direction. This is usually done by women and children. The needles are placed sideways in a heap, on a table, in front of each operator. From five to ten are rolled towards this person by the forefinger of the left hand; this separates them a very small space from each other, and each in its turn is pushed lengthways to the right or to the left, according as its eye is on the right or the left hand. This is the usual process, and in it every needle passes individually under the finger of the operator. A small alteration expedites the process considerably; the child puts on the forefinger of its right hand a small cloth cap or finger-stall, and, rolling from the heap from six to twelve needles, it keeps them down by the forefinger of the left hand; whilst it presses the forefinger of the right hand gently against the ends of the needles, those which have their points towards the right hand stick into the finger-stall; and the child, removing the finger of the left hand, allows the needles sticking into the cloth to be slightly raised, and then pushes them towards the left side. Those needles which had their eyes on the right hand do not stick into the finger cover, and are pushed to the heap on the right side previous to the repetition of the process. By means of this simple contrivance, each movement of the finger, from one side to the other, carries five or six needles to their proper heap; whereas, in the former method, frequently only one was moved, and rarely more than two or three were transported at one movement to their place."

A large number of people are employed, at Birmingham chiefly, in the manufacture of buttons. In the manufacture of a single button there is great division of labour amongst piercers, cutters, stampers, gilders, and burnishers. The

shank of a button is made by a very complicated machinery as a distinct class of manufacture, and the button-makers buy the shanks.

The application of machinery, or of peculiar scientific modes of working, to such apparently trifling articles as pins, needles, buttons, and trinkets, may appear of little importance. But let it be remembered, that the manufacture of such articles furnishes employment to many thousands of our fellow-countrymen ; and, enabling us to supply other nations with these products, affords us the means of receiving articles of more intrinsic value in exchange. No article of ready attainment, and therefore of general consumption, whether it be a labourer's spade or a child's marble, is unimportant in a commercial point of view. The wooden figures of horses and sheep that may be bought for twopence in the toy-shops furnish employment to cut them, during the long winter nights, to a large portion of the peasantry of the Tyrol. The Swiss peasant cuts a piece of white wood into a boy or a cottage, as he is tending his herd on the side of a mountain. These become considerable articles of export. In the town of Sonneberg, near the forest of Thuringia, four thousand inhabitants are principally employed in the toy-trade, and also find employment for the neighbouring villagers. Mr. Osler, of Birmingham, some years ago, addressing a Committee of the House of Commons upon the subject of his beads and trinkets, said,—“On my first journey to London, a respectable-looking man in the city asked me if I could supply him with dolls' eyes ; and I was foolish enough to feel half offended. I thought it derogatory to my new dignity as a manufacturer to make dolls' eyes. He took me into a room quite as wide and perhaps twice the length of this (one of the large rooms for Committees in the House of Commons), and we had just room to walk between stacks, from the floor to the ceiling, of parts of dolls. He said, ‘These are only the legs and arms ; the trunks are below.’ But I saw enough to convince me that he wanted a great many eyes ; and as the article

appeared quite in my own line of business, I said I would take an order by way of experiment ; and he showed me several specimens. I copied the order. He ordered various quantities and of various sizes and qualities. On returning to the Tavistock Hotel, I found that the order amounted to upwards of five hundred pounds."

Mr. Osler tells this story to show the importance of trifles. The making of dolls' eyes afforded subsistence to many ingenious workmen in glass toys ; and in the same way the most minute and apparently insignificant article of general use, when rendered cheap by chemical science or machinery, produces a return of many thousand pounds, and sets in motion labour and labourers. Without the science and the machinery, which render the article cheap, the labourers would have had *no* employ, for the article would not have been consumed. What a pretty article is a common tobacco-pipe, of which millions are used ! It is made cheap and beautiful in a mould—a machine for copying pipes. If the pipe were made without the mould, and other contrivances, it would cost at least a shilling instead of a halfpenny :—the tobacco-smoker would go without his pipe and the pipe-maker without his employment.

Amongst articles of great demand that have become of importance, though apparently insignificant, in our own day, there is nothing more worthy of notice than the lucifer match. About thirty years ago chemistry abolished the tinder-box ; and the burnt rag that made the tinder went to make paper. Slowly did the invention spread. The use of the lucifer-match is now so established that very large factories carry on the work of lucifer-match making instead of their preparation in sheds of suburban gardens.

It is a law of this manufacture that the demand is greater in the summer than in the winter. The increased summer demand for the lucifer-matches shows that the great consumption is among the masses—the labouring population—those who make up the vast majority of the contributors to duties of customs and excise. In the houses

of the wealthy there is always fire; in the houses of the poor, fire in summer is a needless hourly expense. Then comes the lucifer-match to supply the want—to light the candle to look in the dark cupboard—to light the afternoon fire to boil the kettle. It is now unnecessary to run to the neighbour for a light, or, as a desperate resource, to work at the tinder-box. The lucifer matches sometimes fail, but they cost little, and so they are freely used, even by the poorest. Their value was sufficiently shown when an officer in camp at Balaklava wrote home that no want was greater than that of the ready means of procuring fire and light, and that he should hold a box of lucifer-matches cheap at half-a-crown.

We may notice one other article of almost universal use, which is of very recent introduction—the envelope. It is a labour-saving contrivance for the writer of letters. The use of the envelope has been mainly created by the penny postage.

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XVIII.

1. When, and by whom, was the first stocking-machine invented?
2. What was the fate of the inventor?
3. What was the cause that the invention was discountenanced?
4. What change in the condition of the people of England was produced by this invention?
5. What invention has superseded Lee's stocking frame?
6. What effect have these machines had upon the employment of labour?
7. What has been the effect of foreign competition on our home manufacture of gloves?
8. What has been the effect of the introduction of the sewing-machine?
9. What change has taken place in the French manufacture of fans?
10. When was lace first made by machinery?
11. What change has the bobbin-net machine produced in the lace-making trade?
12. What is the effect of machinery in the manufacture of pins?
13. What are the processes in pin-making?
14. What are the processes in the manufacture of needles?

15. Give an instance of a labour-saving contrivance in the making of needles?
16. What are some of the principal divisions of labour in button-making?
17. What advantages accrue from the application of machinery to all these branches of industry?
18. Give some examples of the commercial importance of the toy trade.
19. How have science and machinery been the means of procuring this importance?

**CHAPTER XIX.**

Labour-saving contrivances—The nick in types—Tags of laces—Casting shot—Candle-dipping—Tiring a wheel—Globe-making—Domestic aids to labour—Aids to mental labour—Effects of severe bodily labour on health and duration of life.

WE drew attention in the last chapter to a particular process in needle-making—the sorter's sheath—to show that great saving of labour may be effected by what is not popularly called machinery. In modern times, wherever work is carried on upon a large scale, the division of labour is applied; by which one man attending to one thing learns to perform that one thing more perfectly than if he had attended to many things. He thus saves a considerable portion of the whole amount of labour. Every skilful workman has individually some mode of working peculiar to himself, by which he lessens his labour. An expert blacksmith, for instance, will not strike one more blow upon the anvil than is necessary to produce the effect he desires. A compositor, or printer, who arranges the types, is a swift workman when he makes no unnecessary movement of his arms or fingers in lifting a single type into what is called his composing-stick, where the types are arranged in lines. There is a very simple contrivance to lessen the labour of the compositor, by preventing him putting the type into his composing-stick the wrong side outwards. It is a nick, or two or three nicks, on the side of the type which corresponds with the lower side of the face of the letter. By this nick or nicks he is enabled to see by one glance of his eye on which side the letter is first to be grasped, and then to be arranged. If the nick

were not there he would have to look at the face of every letter before he could properly place it. This is a labour-saving contrivance ; and if the labour were not thus saved, two compositors would certainly be required to do the work of one ; and the natural and inevitable effect would be that, as the funds for the payment of the compositors' labours would not be increased, the wages of each compositor would be diminished by one-half. The new labour that would be required would enter into competition with the old labour, and depreciate its value, because each individual labourer had lost one-half of his efficiency.

Contrivances to economize labour, such as that of the needle-sorter's sheath, and the nicks in the type of the compositor, are constantly occurring in manufactures. The tags of laces, which are made of thin tin, are sometimes bent into their requisite form by the same movement of the arm that cuts them. A piece of steel, adapted to the side of the shears, gives them at once their proper shape. The writer can remember that when he was a boy, and was fitted with a pair of laced boots, he used to wait with patience in the shoemaker's shop, whilst he clumsily bent a piece of tin into the form of a tag and then as clumsily hammered it round the lace. In a silk manufactory boot-laces are now prepared with tags made by machinery. One machine cuts and hollows the tags much more efficiently than the shears mentioned above ; and at another machine, worked by a boy, the tags are fitted to the laces with a rapidity which is acquired by continued practice.

If the small shot which is used by sportsmen were each cast in a mould, the price would be enormous ; but by pouring the melted lead, of which the shot is made, through a sort of cullender, placed at the top of a tower, high enough for the lead to cool in its passage through the air, before it reaches the ground, the shot is formed in a spherical or round shape by the mere act of passing through the atmosphere. Some of the shots thus formed are not perfectly spherical—they are pear-shaped. If the selection of

the perfect from the imperfect shots were made by the eye, or the touch, the process would be very tedious and insufficient, and the price of the article much increased. The simplest contrivance in the world divides the bad from the good. The shots are poured down an inclined plane, and, without any trouble of selection, the spherical ones run straight to the bottom, while the pear-shaped ones tumble off on one side or the other of the plane.

In speaking of such contrivances we are constantly passing over the narrow line which separates them from what we popularly term machinery. Let us take an example of the readiness with which a small aid to manual labour gradually becomes perfected into a machine, requiring little impulse from human action. The dippers of candles have gradually, in small establishments, made several improvements in their art for the purpose of diminishing labour. They used to hold the rods between their fingers, dipping three at a time; they next connected six or eight rods together by a piece of wood at each end, having holes to receive the rods; and they now suspend the rods so arranged upon a sort of balance, rising and falling with a pulley and a weight, so as to relieve the arms of the workman almost entirely, while the work is done more quickly and with more precision. But in large candle-factories the principle is carried much further. The wicks, having been cut by machinery of the requisite length, instead of being cut one at a time, are arranged upon a rod. For the sort of candle called "twelves," or twelve to a pound, twenty-four wicks are suspended on one of these rods. Thirty rods are connected together in a frame, which thus holds seven hundred and twenty wicks. Attached to the machine are thirty-six of these frames. The whole number of wicks is therefore twenty-five thousand nine hundred and twenty. The machine, as it revolves, dips one frame into a vessel of melted tallow; and so on till the thirty-six frames have each been once dipped,—and the process is continued till the candles are fully formed. One man and a boy com-

plete this number of candles in a working-day of ten hours.

Walking by a wheelwright's shop in some quiet village, did our readers ever see the operation of "tiring" a wheel? The wood-work of the wheel is entirely formed; but the joints of the felloes are imperfectly fitted together. They used to be drawn close by separate straps of iron applied with great labour. The wheel rests upon some raised bricks. Out from the forge rush three or four men bearing a red-hot iron hoop. It is laid upon the outer rim of the wood-work, burning its way as it is hammered down with the united force of the wheelwrights. When it is nearly fitted, floods of water are thrown upon it, till it no longer burns. The knowledge of the simple fact that the iron shrinks as it cools, and thus knits the whole wheel into a firm body, taught the wheelwright how to accomplish the difficult task of giving the last strength to his wheel with the least possible labour.

The manufacture of a globe offers an example of the production of a most beautiful piece of work by the often repeated application of a series of processes, each requiring very little labour. A globe is not a ball of wood; but a hollow sphere of papers and plaster. The mould, if we may so express it, of a globe is turned out of a piece of wood. This sphere need not be mathematically accurate. It is for rough work, and flaws and cracks are of little consequence. This wooden ball has an axis, a piece of iron wire at each pole. And here we may remark, that, at every stage of the process, the revolution of a sphere upon its axis, under the hands of the workman, is the one great principle which renders every operation one of comparative ease and simplicity. The labour would be enormously multiplied if the same class of operations had to be performed upon a cube. The solid mould, then, of the embryo globe is placed on its axis in a wooden frame. In a very short time a boy will form a pasteboard globe upon its surface. He first covers it entirely with strips of strong paper,

thoroughly wet, which are in a tub of water at his side. The slight inequalities produced by the overlapping of the strips are immaterial. The saturated paper is not suffered to dry; but is immediately covered over with a layer of pasted paper, also cut in long narrow slips. A third layer of similarly pasted paper—brown paper and white being used alternately—is applied; and then, a fourth, a fifth, and a sixth. Here the pasting process ends for globes of moderate size. For the large ones it is carried further. This wet pasteboard ball has now to be dried—placed upon its axis in a rack. If we were determined to follow the progress of this individual ball through all its stages, we should have to wait a fortnight before it advanced another step. But in a large factory there are many scores of globes all rolling onward to perfection; and thus we may witness the next operation performed upon a pasteboard sphere that began to exist some weeks earlier, and is now hard to the core.

The wooden ball, with its solid paper covering, is placed on its axis. A sharp cutting instrument fixed on a bench is brought into contact with the surface of the sphere, which is made to revolve. In less time than we write the pasteboard ball is cut in half. There is no adhesion to the wooden mould, for the first coating of paper was simply *wetted*. Two bowls of thick card now lie before us, with a small hole in each, made by the axis of the wooden ball. But a junction is very soon effected. Within every globe there is a piece of wood—we may liken it to a round ruler—of the exact length of the inner surface of the sphere from pole to pole. A thick wire runs through this wood, and originally projected some two or three inches at each end. This stick is placed upright in a vice. The semi-globe is nailed to one end of the stick, upon which it rests, when the wire is passed through its centre. It is now reversed, and the edges of the card rapidly covered with glue. The edges of the other semi-globe are instantly brought into contact, the other end of the wire passing

through its centre in the same way, and a similar nailing to the stick taking place. We have now a paper globe, with its own axis, which will be its companion for the whole term of its existence.

The paper globe is next placed on its axis in a frame, of which one side is a semicircular piece of metal;—the horizon of a globe cut in half would show its form. A tub of white composition, a compound of whiting, glue, and oil, is on the bench. The workman dips his hand into this “gruel thick and slab,” and rapidly applies it to the paper sphere with tolerable evenness; but as it revolves, the semicircle of metal clears off the superfluous portions. The ball of paper is now a ball of plaster externally. Time again enters largely into the manufacture. The first coating must thoroughly dry before the next is applied, and so again till the process has been repeated four or five times. Thus, when we visit a globe workshop, we are at first surprised at the number of white balls, from three inches in diameter to three feet, which occupy a large space. They are all steadily advancing towards completion; and as they advance to the dignity of perfect spheres, increased pains are taken in the application of the plaster. At last they are polished. Their surface is as fine and hard as ivory. But beautiful as they are, they may, like many other beautiful things, want a due equipoise. They must be perfectly balanced. They must move upon their poles with the utmost exactness. A few shot, let in here and there, correct all irregularities. And now the paper and plaster sphere is to be endued with intelligence. The sphere is marked with lines of direction for the purpose of covering it with engraved slips. We have now a globe with a plain map. An artist colours it by hand.

We have given these examples of several modes of production, in which knowledge and skill have diminished labour, for the purpose of showing that not only machinery and scientific applications are constantly tending to the same end, but that the mere practice of the mechanical arts

necessarily leads to labour-saving inventions. Every one of us who thinks at all is constantly endeavouring to diminish his individual labour by the use of some little contrivance which experience has suggested. Men who carry water in buckets, in places where water is scarce, put a circular piece of wood to float on the water, which prevents its spilling, and consequently lessens the labour. A boy who makes paper bags in a grocer's shop, so arranges them that he pastes the edges of twenty at a time, to diminish the labour. The porters of Amsterdam, who draw heavy goods upon a sort of sledge, every now and then throw a greased rope under the sledge to diminish its friction, and therefore to lessen the labour of dragging it. Other porters, in the same city, have a little barrel containing water, attached to each side of the sledge, out of which the water slowly drips like the water upon a stone-cutter's saw, to diminish the friction.

In the domestic arrangements of a well-regulated household, whether of a poor man or of a rich man, one of the chief cares is to save labour. Every contrivance to save labour that ingenuity can suggest is eagerly adopted when a country becomes highly civilized. In former times, in our own country, when such contrivances were little known, and materials as well as time were constantly wasted in every direction, a great Baron was surrounded with a hundred menial servants ; but he had certainly less real and useful labour performed for him than a tradesman of the present day obtains from three servants. Are there fewer servants now employed than in those times of barbarous state? Certainly not. The middle classes amongst us can get a great deal done for them in the way of domestic service, at a small expense, because servants are assisted by manifold contrivances which do much of the work for them. The contrivances render the article of service cheaper, and therefore there are more servants. The work being done by fewer servants, in consequence of the contrivances, the servants themselves are better

paid than if there was no cost saved by the contrivance.

The common jack by which meat is roasted is described by Mr. Babbage as "a contrivance to enable the cook in a few minutes to exert a force (in winding up the jack) which the machine retails out during the succeeding hour in turning the loaded spit, thus enabling her to bestow her undivided attention on her other duties." We have seen, years ago, in farm houses, a man employed to turn a spit with a handle; dogs have been used to run in a wheel for the same purpose, and hence a particular breed so used are called "turnspits." When some ingenious servant-girl discovered that, if she put a skewer through the meat and hung it before the fire by a skein of worsted, it would turn with very little attention, she made an approach to the principle of the bottle-jack. All these contrivances diminish labour, and ensure regularity of movement;—and therefore they are valuable contrivances.

A bell which is pulled in one room and rings in another, and which therefore establishes a ready communication between the most distant parts of a house, is a contrivance to save labour. In a large family the total want of bells would add a fourth at least to the labour of servants. Where three servants are kept now, four servants would be required to be kept then. Would the destruction of all the bells therefore add one-fourth to the demand for servants? Certainly not. The funds employed in paying for service would not be increased a single farthing; and therefore, by the destruction of bells, all the families of the kingdom would have some work left undone, to make up for the additional labour required through the want of this useful contrivance; or all the servants in the kingdom would be much more hardly worked.

In some parts of India the natives have a very rude contrivance to mark the progress of time. A thin metal cup, with a small hole in its bottom, is put to float in a vessel of water: and as the water rises through the hole the cup

sinks in a given time—in twenty-four minutes. A servant is set to watch the sinking of the cup, and when this happens he strikes upon a bell. Half a century ago, almost every cottage in England had its hour-glass—an imperfect instrument for registering the progress of time, because it only indicated its course between hour and hour; and an instrument which required a very watchful attention, and some labour, to be of any use at all. The universal use of watches or clocks, in India, would wholly displace the labour of the servants who note the progress of time by the filling of the cup; and the same cause has displaced, amongst us, the equally unprofitable labour employed in turning the hour-glass, and watching its movement. Almost every house in England has now a clock or watch of some sort; and every house in India would have the same, if the natives were more enlightened, and were not engaged in so many modes of unprofitable labour to keep them poor. His profitable labour has given the English mechanic the means of getting a watch. Machinery, used in every possible way, has made this watch cheap. The labour formerly employed in turning the hour-glass, or in running to look at the church clock, is transferred to the making of watches. The user of the watch obtains an accurate register of time, which teaches him to know the value of that most precious possession, and to economize it; and the producers of the watch have abundant employment in the universal demand for this valuable machine.

A watch or clock is an instrument for assisting an operation of the mind. Without some instrument for registering time, the mind could very imperfectly attain the end which the watch attains, not requiring any mental labour. The observation of the progress of time, by the situation of the sun in the day, or of particular stars at night, is a labour requiring great attention, and various sorts of accurate knowledge. It is therefore never attempted, except when men have no machines for registering time. In the same manner the labours of the mind

have been saved, in a thousand ways, by other contrivances of science.

The foot-rule of the carpenter not only gives him the standard of a foot measure, which he could not exactly ascertain by any experience, or any mental process, but it is also a scale of the proportions of an inch, or several inches, to a foot, and of the parts of an inch to an inch. What a quantity of calculations, and of dividing by compasses, does this little instrument save the carpenter, besides ensuring a much greater degree of accuracy in all his operations ! The common rules of arithmetic, which almost every boy in England now learns, are parts of a great invention for saving mental labour. The higher branches of mathematics, of which science arithmetic is a portion, are also inventions for saving labour, and for doing what could never be done without these inventions. There are instruments, and very curious ones, for lessening the labour of all arithmetical calculations ; and tables, that is, the results of certain calculations, which are of practical use, are constructed for the same purpose. When we buy a joint of meat, we often see the butcher turn to a little book, before he tells us how much a certain number of pounds and ounces amount to, at a certain price per pound. This book is his 'Ready Reckoner,' and a very useful book it is to him ; for it enables him to dispatch his customers in half the time than he would otherwise require, and thus to save himself a great deal of labour, and a great deal of inaccuracy. The inventions for saving mental labour, in calculations of arithmetic, have been carried so far, that Mr. Babbage had almost perfected a calculating machine, which not only did its work of calculation without the possibility of error, but absolutely was to arrange printing types of figures, in a frame, so that no error could be produced in copying the calculations before they are printed. We mention this curious machine, to show how far science may go in diminishing mental labour, and ensuring accuracy. The want of government

funds prevented its completion. But another calculating machine, of a less complete character, is now used in the office of the Registrar-General. (See Companion to the Almanac, 1866.)

To all who read this book it is no difficulty to count a hundred; and most know the relation which a hundred bears to a thousand, and a thousand bears to a million. Most are able, also, to read off those numbers, or parts of those numbers, when they see them marked down in figures. There are many uncivilized people in the world who cannot count twenty. They have no idea whatever of numbers, beyond perhaps as far as the number of their fingers, or their fingers and their toes. How have we obtained this great superiority over these poor savages? Because science has been at work, for many centuries, to diminish the amount of our mental labour, by teaching us the easiest modes of calculation. And how did we learn these modes? We learnt them from our school-masters.

If any follow up the false reasoning which has led some to think that whatever diminishes labour diminishes the number of labourers, they might conclude, that, as there is less mental work to be done, because science has diminished the labour of that work, there would, therefore, be fewer mental workmen. Thank God, the greater facilities that have been given to the cultivation of the mind, the greater is the number of those who exert themselves in that cultivation. The effects of saving unprofitable labour are the same in all cases. The use of machinery in aid of *bodily* labour has set that bodily labour to a thousand new employments; and has raised the character of the employments, by transferring the lowest of the drudgery to wheels and pistons. The use of science in the assistance of *mental* labour has conducted that labour to infinitely more numerous fields of exertion; and has elevated all intellectual pursuits, by making their commoner processes the play of childhood, instead of the toil of manhood.

We cannot doubt that any invention which gives assistance to the thinking powers of mankind, and, therefore, by dispensing with much mental drudgery, leads the mind forward to nobler exertions, is a benefit to all. It is not more than four hundred years ago, that the use of Arabic numerals, or figures, began to be generally known in this country. The first date in those numerals said to exist in England, is upon a brass plate in Ware church, 1454. The same date in Roman numerals, which were in use before the Arabic ones, would be expressed by eight letters, **MCCCCCLIV**. The introduction of figures, therefore, was an immense saving of time in the commonest operations of arithmetic. How puzzled we should be, and what a quantity of labour we should lose, if we were compelled to reckon earnings and marketings by the long mode of notation, instead of the short one! This book is easily read, because it is written in words composed of twenty-four letters. In China, where there are no letters in use, every word in the language is expressed by a different character. Few people in China write or read; and those who do acquire very little knowledge, except the mere knowledge of writing and reading. All the time of their learned men is occupied in acquiring the means of knowledge, and not knowledge itself; and the bulk of the people get very little knowledge at all. It would be just the same thing if there were no machines or engines for diminishing manual labour. Those who had any property would occupy all their time, and the time of their immediate dependants, in raising food and making clothes for themselves, and the rest of the people would go without any food or clothes at all; or rather, which comes to the same thing, there would be no "rest of the people;" the lord and his vassals would have all the produce;—there would be half a million of people in the United Kingdom instead of thirty millions.

When a boy has got hold of what we call the rudiments of learning, he has possessed himself of the most useful tools and machines which exist in the world. He has ob-

tained the means of doing that with extreme ease, which, without these tools, is done only with extreme labour. He has earned the time which, if rightly employed, will elevate his mind, and therefore improve his condition. Just so it is with all tools and machines for diminishing bodily exertion. They give us the means of doing that with comparative ease, which, without them, can only be done with extreme drudgery. They set at liberty a great quantity of mere animal power, which, having then leisure to unite with mental power, produces ingenious and skilful workmen in every trade. But they do more than this. They diminish human suffering—they improve the health—they increase the term of life—they render all occupations less painful and laborious;—and, by doing all this, they elevate man in the scale of existence.

A late Pasha of Egypt, in one of those fits of caprice which it is the nature of tyrants to exhibit, ordered, a few years ago, that the male population of a district should be set to clear out one of the ancient canals which was then filled up with mud. The people had no tools, and the Pasha gave them no tools; but the work was required to be done. So to work the poor wretches went, to the number of fifty thousand. They had to plunge up to their necks in the filthiest slime, and to bale it out with their hands, and their hands alone. They were fed, it is true, during the operation; but their food was of a quality proportioned to the little *profitable* labour which they performed. They were fed on horse-beans and water. In the course of one year, more than thirty thousand of these unhappy people perished. If the tyrant, instead of giving labour to fifty thousand people, had possessed the means of setting up steam-engines to pump out the water, and scoop out the mud,—or if he had provided the pump, which is called Archimedes' screw, and was invented by that philosopher for the very purpose of draining land in Egypt,—or if the people had even had scoops and shovels, instead of being degraded, like beasts, to the employment of their unassisted

hands,—the work might have been done at a fiftieth of the cost, even of the miserable pittance of horse-beans and water; and the money that was saved by the tools and machines, might have gone to furnish *profitable* labour to the thousands who perished amidst the misery and degradation of their *unprofitable* labour.

Some may say that this is a case which does not apply to us; because we are free men, and cannot be compelled to perish, up to our necks in mud, upon a pittance of horse-beans, doled out by a tyrant. Exactly so. But what has made us free? Knowledge. Knowledge,—which, in raising the moral and intellectual character of every Englishman, has raised up barriers to oppression which no power can ever break down. Knowledge,—which has set ingenuous men thinking in every way how to increase the profitable labour of the nation, and therefore to increase the comforts of every man in the nation.

The people of England have gone on increasing very rapidly during the last fifty years; and the average length of life has also gone on increasing in the same remarkable manner. Men who have attended to subjects of political economy have always been desirous to procure accurate returns of the average duration of life at particular places, and they could pretty well estimate the condition of the people from these returns. Savages, it is well known, are not long livers; that is, although there may be a few old people, the majority of savages die very young. Why is this? Many of the savage nations that we know have much finer climates than our own; but then, on the other hand, they sustain privations which the poorest man amongst us never feel. Their supply of food is uncertain; they want clothing; they are badly sheltered from the weather, or not sheltered at all; they undergo very severe labour when they are labouring. From all these causes savages die young. Is it not reasonable, therefore, to infer that, if in any particular country the average duration of life goes on increasing, that is, if fewer people, in a given number

and a given time, die now than formerly, the condition of that people is improved—that they have more of the necessities and comforts of life, and labour less severely to procure them? Now let us see how the people of England stand in this respect. The average mortality in a year about a century ago was reckoned to be one in thirty, and now it is about one in forty-six. This result is, doubtless, produced in some degree by improvement in the science of medicine, and particularly by the use of vaccination. But making every allowance for these benefits, the fact furnishes the most undeniable truth, that the people of England are much better fed, clothed, and lodged than they were a century ago, and that the labour which they perform is far less severe.

The effect of continued violent bodily exertion upon the duration of life might be illustrated by many instances; we shall mention one. The late Mr. Edgeworth, in his *Memoirs*, repeatedly speaks of a boatman whom he knew at Lyons, as an old man. "His hair," says Mr. Edgeworth, "was grey, his face wrinkled, his back bent, and all his limbs and features had the appearance of those of a man of sixty; yet his real age was but twenty-seven years. He told me that he was the oldest boatman on the Rhone, that his younger brothers had been worn out before they were twenty-five years old; such were the effects of the hardships to which they were subject from the nature of their employment." That employment was, by intense bodily exertion, and with the daily chance of being upset, to pull a boat across one of the most rapid rivers in the world,—

"The swift and arrowy Rhone,"

as one of our poets calls it. How much happier would these boatmen have been during their lives, and how much longer would they have lived, could their labour have been relieved by some mechanical contrivance! and without doubt, the same contrivance would have doubled the number of boatmen, by causing the passage to be more used.

As it was, they were few in number, they lived only a few years, and the only gratification of those few years was an inordinate stimulus of brandy. This is the case in all trades where immense efforts of bodily power are required. The exertion itself wears out the people, and the dram, which gives a momentary impulse to the exertion, wears them out still more. The coal-heavers of London, healthy as they look, are but a short-lived people. The heavy loads which they carry, and the quantity of liquor which they drink, both together make sad havoc with them.

Violent bodily labour, in which the muscular power of the body is unequally applied, generally produces some peculiar disease. Nearly all the pressmen who were accustomed to print newspapers of a large size, by hand, were ruptured. The printing-machine now does the same description of work.

What is the effect upon the condition of pressmen generally by the introduction of the printing-machine to do the heaviest labour of printing? That the trade of a pressman is daily becoming one more of *skill* than of *drudgery*. At the same time that the printing-machine was invented, one of the principles of that machine, that of inking the types with a roller instead of two large cushions, called balls, was introduced into hand-printing. The pressmen were delighted with this improvement. "Ay," said they, "this saves our labour; we are relieved from the hard work of distributing the ink upon the balls." What the roller did for the individual pressman, the machine, which can only be beneficially applied to rapid and to very heavy printing, does for the great body of pressmen. It removes a certain portion of the drudgery, which degraded the occupation, and rendered it painful and injurious to health. We have seen two pressmen working a daily paper against time: it was always necessary, before the introduction of the machines, to put an immense quantity of bodily energy into the labour of working a newspaper, that it might be published at the proper hour. Time, in this case, was

driving the pressman as fast as the rapid stream drove the boatmen of the Rhone; and the speed with which they worked was killing them as quickly.

---

## QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XIX.

1. Give some instances of labour-saving contrivances ?
2. What is the reason that division of employment is a saving of labour ?
3. What are the processes in the making of shot ?
4. How is machinery applied to candle-dipping ?
5. What is the operation of tiring a wheel ?
6. What are the processes in the manufacture of a globe ?
7. What effect have labour-saving contrivances on the payment of labour ?
8. Give some instances of domestic aids to labour.
9. Mention some aids to mental labour.
10. What effect have aids to mental labour on the number of mental labourers ?
11. What are the most useful tools and machines in the world ?
12. Give an instance of the unprofitable nature of labour without any mechanical aid.
13. What is the effect of improved civilization on the duration of life ?
14. Give some instances of the bad effect of continued violent bodily exertion.
15. What is the effect of the printing machine on the condition of the pressmen ?

## CHAPTER XX.

Influence of knowledge in the direction of labour and capital—Astronomy—Chronometer—Mariner's compass—Scientific travellers—New materials of manufactures—India-rubber—Gutta-percha—Palm-oil—Geology—Inventions that diminish risk—Science raising up new employments—Electricity—Galvanism—Photography—Mental labourers—Enlightened public sentiment.

LORD BACON, the great master of practical wisdom, has said that “the effort to extend the dominion of man over nature is the most healthy and most noble of all ambitions.” “The empire of man,” he adds, “over material things has for its only foundation the sciences and the arts.”\* A great deal of the knowledge which constitutes this dominion has been the property of society, handed down from the earliest ages. No one can tell, for instance, how the art of leavening bread was introduced amongst mankind; and yet this process, now so familiar to all, contributes as much, if not more, than any other art to the wholesome and agreeable preparation of our food. Leavening bread is a branch of chemistry, and, like that process, many other processes of chemistry have been the common property of civilized man from time immemorial. Within a few centuries, however, science has applied its discoveries to the perfection of the arts; and in proportion as capital has been at hand to encourage science, has the progress of the application been certain and rapid. The old alchemists, or hunters after the philosopher's stone, sought to create capital by their discoveries. They could not make gold, but they discovered certain principles which have done as much

\* We have taken this sentence as a motto which may point to the general scope of this volume.

for the creation of utility in a few hundred years as the rude manual labour of all mankind during the same period. Let it not be supposed that we wish to depreciate manual labour. We only wish to show that labour is incomparably more prolific when directed by science. Mahomet Bey, the ruler of Tunis, was dethroned by his subjects. He had the reputation of possessing the philosopher's stone, or the art of turning common metals into gold. The Dey of Algiers restored him to his throne upon condition that the secret should be communicated to him. Mahomet, with great pomp and solemnity, sent the Dey of Algiers a plough. This was so far well. He intimated that to compel production by labour is to make a nation rich. But had he been able to transmit some of the science which now controls and guides the operations of the plough—the chemical knowledge which teaches the proper application of manures to soils—the rotation of crops introduced by the turnip-husbandry, which renders it unnecessary that the ground should ever be idle,—he would have gone farther towards communicating the real philosopher's stone.

The indirect influence, too, of a general advance in knowledge upon the particular advance of any branch of labour, is undeniable;—for the inquiring spirit of an age spreads itself on all sides, and improvement is carried into the most obscure recesses, the darkest chinks and corners of a nation. It has been wisely and beautifully said, “We cannot reasonably expect that a piece of woollen cloth will be wrought to perfection in a nation which is ignorant of astronomy, or where ethics are neglected.”\* The positive influence of science in the direction of labour is chiefly exhibited in the operations of mechanics and chemistry applied to the arts, in the shape of machines for saving materials and labour, and of processes for attaining the same economy. We have described the effects of some of these manifold inventions in the improvement of the condition both of producers and consumers. But there are many

\* Hume's Essays.

particulars in which knowledge has laboured, and is still labouring, for the advance of the physical and moral condition of us all, which may have escaped attention; because these labours operate remotely and indirectly, though not without the highest ultimate certainty and efficiency, in aiding the great business of production. These are the influences of science upon labour, not so direct as the mechanical skill which has contrived the steam-engine, or so indirect as the operation of ethics upon the manufacture of a piece of woollen cloth; but which confer a certain and in some instances enormous benefit upon production, by the operation of causes which, upon a superficial view, appear to be only matters of laborious but unprofitable speculation. If we succeed in pointing out the extent and importance of those aids which production derives from the labours of men who have not been ordinarily classed amongst "working men," but who have been truly the hardest and most profitable workers which society has ever possessed, we shall show what an intimate union subsists amongst those classes of society who appear the most separated, and that these men really labour with all others most effectually in the advancement of the great interests of mankind.

When Hume thought that a nation would be behind in the manufacture of cloth that had not studied astronomy, he perhaps did not mean to go the length of saying, that the study of astronomy has a real influence in making cloth cheaper, in lessening the cost of production, and in therefore increasing the number of consumers. But look at the direct influence of astronomy upon navigation. A seaman, by the guidance of principles laid down by the great minds that have directed their mathematical powers to the study of astronomy—such minds as those of Newton and La Place—measures the moon's apparent distance from a particular star. He turns to a page in the 'Nautical Almanac,' and, by a calculation directed principally by this table, can determine whereabout he is upon the broad ocean, although he may not have seen land for three months.

Sir John Herschel, who unites to the greatest scientific reputation the rare desire to make the vast possessions of the world of science accessible to all, has given, in his ‘Discourses on the Study of Natural Philosophy,’ an instance of the accuracy of such lunar observations, in an account of a voyage of eight thousand miles, by Captain Basil Hall, who, without a single landmark during eighty-nine days, ran his ship into the harbour of Rio as accurately, and with as little deviation, as a coachman drives his stage into an inn-yard. But navigation not only depends upon lunar distances, but upon an instrument which shall keep perfect time under every change of temperature produced by variety of climate. That instrument is a chronometer. Every one who possesses a watch, however good, must have experienced the effects of heat or cold upon its accuracy, in making it go faster or slower—perhaps a minute in a week. Now, if there were not an instrument that would measure time so exactly that between London and New York not a minute, or large fraction of a minute, would be lost or gained, the voyage would be one of difficulty and uncertainty. A Yorkshire joiner, John Harrison, at the beginning of the last century, found out the principle of the chronometer, which consists in the union in the balance-spring of two metals, one which contracts under increased temperature, and one which expands; and on the contrary under diminished temperature. Harrison worked for fifty years at his discovery; and he obtained a parliamentary reward of 20,000*l.*

The English chronometers are set by what is called Greenwich time. At the Greenwich Observatory a ball falls from a staff exactly at one o’clock; and by the application of electricity, a similar ball falls at the same instant at Charing Cross. The beautiful instruments that are constantly at work, and the laborious calculations which are daily proceeding, at the Observatory, are essentially necessary for the maintenance of a commerce that embraces the whole habitable globe.

But what has this, it may be said, to do with the price of clothing? Exactly this: part of the price arises from the cost of transport. If there were no "lunar distances" in the 'Nautical Almanac,' or chronometers, the voyage from New York to Liverpool might require three months instead of a fortnight. But go a step farther back in the influence of science upon navigation. There was a time when ships could hardly venture to leave the shore. In the days of our Anglo-Saxon ancestors, a merchant who went three times over sea with his own craft, was entitled to rank as a thegn, or nobleman. Long after this early period of England's navigation, voyages across the Atlantic could never have been attempted. That was before the invention of the mariner's compass; but even after that invention, when astronomy was not scientifically applied to navigation, long voyages were considered in the highest degree dangerous. The crews both of Vasco de Gama, who discovered the passage to India, and of Columbus, principally consisted of criminals, who were pardoned on condition of undertaking a service of such peril. The discovery of magnetism, however, changed the whole principle of navigation, and raised seamanship to a science. If the mariner's compass had not been invented, America could never have been discovered; and if America, and the passage to India by the Cape of Good Hope, had never been discovered, cotton would never have been brought to England; and if cotton had never been brought to England, we should have been as badly off for clothing as the people of the middle ages, and the million of working men and women, manufacturers of cotton, and dealers in cotton goods, would have been without employment.

Astronomy, therefore, and navigation, both sciences the results of long ages of patient inquiry, have opened a communication between the uttermost ends of the earth; and therefore have had a slow but certain effect upon the production of wealth, and the consequent diffusion of all the necessities, comforts, and conveniences of civilized life.

The connection between manufactures and science, practical commerce and abstract speculation, is so intimate, that it might be traced in a thousand striking instances. Columbus, the discoverer of America, satisfied his mind that the earth was round ; and when he had got this abstract idea firmly in his head, he next became satisfied that he should find a new continent by sailing in a westerly course. The abstract notion which filled the mind of Columbus that the earth was a sphere, ultimately changed the condition of every living being in the Old World that then existed or has since existed. In the year 1488, the first geographical maps and charts that had been seen in England were brought hither by the brother of Christopher Columbus. If these maps had not been constructed by the unceasing labours of men in their closets, Columbus would never have thought of discovering "the unknown land" which occupied his whole soul. If the scanty knowledge of geography which existed in the time of Columbus had not received immense additions from the subsequent labours of other students of geography, England would not have twenty-seven thousand merchant ships ready to trade wherever men have anything to exchange,—that is, wherever men are enabled to give of their abundance for our abundance, each being immensely benefited by the intercourse. A map now appears a common thing, but it is impossible to overrate the extent of the accumulated observations that go to make up a map. An almanac seems a common thing, but it is impossible to overrate the prodigious accumulations of science that go to make up an almanac. With these accumulations, it is now no very difficult matter to construct a map or an almanac. But if society could be deprived of the accumulations, and we had to re-create and remodel everything for the formation of our map and our almanac, it would perhaps require many centuries before these accumulations could be built up again ; and all the arts of life would go backward, for want of the guidance of the principles of which the map and the almanac are the interpreters for popular use.

There never was a time when man had so complete possession of the planet which he inhabits as the present. Much of the globe has yet to be explored ; but how much is familiar to us that was comparatively unknown even at the beginning of the present century. How thoroughly during that period have we acclimated many of the plants of distant lands, which are now the common beauties of our gardens and greenhouses. There are thousands of timber-trees coming to rapid maturity in our parks and pleasure-grounds which thirty years ago grew only in the solitudes of California and Australia. One enterprising man, James Douglas, whose father was a working mason at Sccone, bestowed upon this country, about thirty years ago, two hundred new species of plants which are now of common culture, and he gave us a tree of the pine-tribe, called after his name, which will in all probability become one of the most valuable of our timbers, from its strength, its rapid growth, and its enormous size. What impelled James Douglas, and hundreds of other travellers of a similar character, to encounter the perils of travel in desert regions, but the abstract love of science, which made them naturalists in their closets before they were explorers and discoverers ? We are familiar with the name of Linnæus and the Linnæan system of botany ; and some may think that this great naturalist was not doing much for knowledge when he classified and arranged what we call the vegetable kingdom. When very young, Linnæus underwent many hardships in travelling through Lapland, in search of plants. So far, some may say, he was well employed. He was equally well employed when he made such an inventory, to use a familiar term, of all the known plants of his time, as would enable succeeding naturalists to know a distinct species from an accidental variety, and to give a precision to all future botanical investigation. Other naturalists have produced other systems, which may be more simple and convenient ; but the impulse which Linnæus gave to botanical discovery, and thence to the increase of the

vegetable wealth of Europe, can never be too highly appreciated.

In every branch of natural history the study of the science, in its manifold forms of classification, is constantly leading to the most valuable discoveries connected with our means of existence. Some twenty years ago all the timber of the Hartz Forest in Germany was destroyed by a species of beetle, which, gnawing completely round the bark, prevented the sap from rising. This destructive animal made its appearance in England ; and science very soon discovered the cause of the evil, and provided for its removal. If there had been no knowledge of natural history here, not a tree would have been left in our woods : and what then would have been the cost of timber ? The naturalist is now carrying his investigations, with the aid of the microscope, into the lowest departments of animal life. He finds the causes of blight and mildew, and knows the species of the minutest insect that mars the hopes of the farmer and the gardener. The chemist steps in ; and the ravager is destroyed or rendered less noxious.

It is to the scientific travellers that we owe the successive introduction of new materials of manufactures. Of the enormous extent in which such new materials affect production, we may form some adequate notion from the mention of three—India-rubber, Gutta percha, and Palm-oil.

In 1853 we imported 1,940,000 lbs. of caoutchouc or India-rubber. The gum of a Brazilian tree, discovered by some scientific Frenchmen in 1735, had been employed for nearly a century for no higher purpose than rubbing out pencil-marks. After 1820 the mode of applying the substance for the production of waterproof garments was discovered. But even in 1830 we only imported 50,000 lbs. Since then caoutchouc has become one of our great materials of manufacture, applied, not only to clothing, but to useful articles of every description. Its great property of elasticity has rendered it available in numberless instances beyond

those of making cloth waterproof and air-tight. When we discovered how to make India-rubber soluble by spirit, we obtained our waterproof clothes, our air-cushions, and water-beds. When machinery drew out the lump of gum into the finest threads, and connected them with cotton, flax, silk, or worsted, in a braiding machine, we became provided with every species of elastic web that can render dress at once tight and easy. But chemistry has carried the use of India-rubber further than the spirit which dissolves it, or the machinery which splits it into minute threads. Chemistry has combined it with sulphur, and thus added in a remarkable degree to its strength and its elasticity. It has made it independent of temperature. It has doubled its utility. "Vulcanized India-rubber" is one of the most valuable of recent inventions.

It is a striking characteristic of our age, and particularly as compared with the period when India-rubber was first sent to Europe, that the application of gutta percha to the arts immediately followed the discovery of the substance. In 1842, Dr. Montgomerie was observing a wood-cutter at Singapore at his ordinary labour. Looking at the man's axe he saw that the handle was not of wood, but of some material that he had not previously known. The woodman told Dr. Montgomerie that, hard as the handle was, it became quite soft in boiling water, and could be moulded into any form, when it would again become hard. It was a gum from a tree growing in various islands of the Eastern Archipelago, called *pertsha*. Specimens were immediately sent to the Society of Arts; and the inquiring surgeon to the Presidency at Singapore received the Society's gold-medal. In 1842-3, Mr. Lobb, visiting these islands to collect botanical specimens, also discovered the same tree, and the gum which issues from it.

In twenty years the wonderful utility of this new material has been established in very various applications. But the gum would have remained comparatively useless but for the inventive spirit which has subdued every difficulty of a

new manufacture. The substance is now applied to the humblest as well as the highest purposes. It is a clothes' line defying the weather; it is a buffer for a railway carriage. It is a stopping for a hollow tooth; it is a sheathing for the wire that conveys the electric spark across the Channel. It is a cricket-ball; it is a life-boat in the Arctic seas. It is a noiseless curtain-ring; it is a sanitary water-pipe. It resists the action of many chemical substances, and is thus largely employed for vessels in bleaching and dyeing factories; it is capable of being moulded into the most beautiful forms, and thus becomes one of the most efficient materials for multiplying works of ornamental art. The collection of gutta percha has given a new stimulus to the feeble industry of the inhabitants of Java and Sumatra and Borneo, and a new direction to the commerce of Singapore. It has brought the people of the Indian Archipelago into more direct contact with European civilization.

What the use of gutta percha is doing for the Malays, the use of palm-oil is doing for the Africans. A great commerce in palm-oil and cocoa-nut oil has sprung up on the African coasts, in which statesmen and philanthropists see the coming destruction of the slave-trade. What has created an enormous manufacture of one of the most improved articles of domestic utility? Knowledge. The palm-oil candles have been brought to their present perfection by chemical and mechanical appliances, working with the most complete division of labour, carried through by the nicest economy resulting from great administrative skill. "Price's Candle Company" is a factory, or rather a number of factories, in which, in the exact proportion that the health, the comfort, and the intelligence of the workers is maintained in the highest efficiency, the profits of the capitalist are increased. The superior quality of the products of the oil-candle factories is the result of chemistry. A French chemist discovered that fats, such as oil, were composed of three inflammable acids—two of which,

called stearic and margaric, are solid; and one called oleic, fluid. Another substance called glycerine is also present. The oil is now freed from the oleic acid and the glycerine, which interfere with its power of producing light, and the two solid acids are crystallized. What are called stearine and composite candles are thus produced, at a cost which is really less than that of the old tallow-candles, when we consider that they burn longer and with greater brilliancy, besides being freed from a disagreeable smell and from a tendency to gutter. Candles from animal fat have also been greatly improved by chemical appliances in the preparation of the tallow. The glycerine, which injured the light-producing power of a candle, is now itself a most valuable product.

Science, we thus see, connects distant regions, and renders the world one great commercial market. Science is, therefore, a chief instrument in the production of commercial wealth. But we have a world beneath our feet which science has only just now begun to explore. We want fuel and metallic ore to be raised from the bowels of the earth; and, till within a very few years, we used to dig at random when we desired to dig a mine, or confided the outlay of thousands of pounds to be used in digging, to some quack whose pretensions to knowledge were even more deceptive than a reliance upon chance. The science of geology, almost within the last quarter of a century, has been able, upon certain principles, to determine where coal especially can be found, by knowing in what strata of earth coal is formed; and thus the expense of digging through earth to search for coal, when science would at once pronounce that no coal was there, has been altogether withdrawn from the amount of capital to be expended in the raising of coal. That this saving has not been small, we may know from the fact, that eighty thousand pounds were expended fruitlessly in digging for coal at Bexhill, in Sussex, not many years ago, which expense geology would have instantly prevented, and have thus accumulated

capital, and given a profitable stimulus to labour, by saving their waste. But geological science has not only prevented the expensive search for coal where it does not exist, but has shown that it does exist where, a few years ago, it was held impossible to find it. The practical men, as they are called, maintained that coal could not be found beneath the magnesian limestone. A scientific geologist, Dr. William Smith, held a contrary opinion ; and the result of his abstract conviction is, that the great Hetton collieries have been called into action, which supply a vast amount of coal to the London market, found beneath this dreaded barrier of magnesian limestone. Geology—however scanty its facts at present are, compared with what they will be when miners have been accustomed to look at their operations from the scientific point of view—geology can tell pretty accurately in which strata of the earth the various metals are likely to be found ; and knowing, to some extent, the strata of different countries, can judge of the probability of finding the precious metals as well as the more common. Sir Roderick Murchison, in 1844, expressed his belief, in a public address, that gold existed in the great Eastern Chain of Australia. In 1849, an iron-worker in Australia, reading this opinion, searched for gold, and found it. The discovery was neglected, till an enterprising man came from California, and completed the realization of the scientific prediction. The gold-diggings of Australia are producing, by their attraction to emigrants, changes in the amount and value of labour in the United Kingdom, which may materially affect the condition of every worker in the parent-land ; and they have given an immense impulse to our home industry.

Whatever diminishes the risk to life or health, in any mechanical operation, or any exertion of bodily labour, lessens the cost of production, by diminishing the premium which is charged by the producers to cover the risk. The safety-lamp of Sir Humphry Davy, by diminishing the waste of human life employed in raising coals, diminished

the price of coals. The contrivance is a very simple one, though it was no doubt the result of anxious and patient thought. It is a common oil-lamp, in which the flame is surrounded with a fine wire gauze. The flame cannot pass through the gauze; and thus if the destructive gas of a coal-mine enters the gauze and ignites, the flame cannot pass again out of the gauze, and ignite the surrounding gas. Sometimes the inner flame burns with a terrible blue light. It is the symptom of danger. If the lamp were an open flame the fire-damp would shake the pit with one dreadful explosion. The safety-lamp yields a feeble light; and thus, unfortunately, the miner sometimes exposes the flame, and perishes. The magnetic mask, which prevents iron-filings escaping down the throats of grinders and polishers, and thus prevents the consumption of the lungs, to which these trades are peculiarly obnoxious, would diminish the price of steel goods, if the workmen did not prefer receiving the premium in the shape of higher wages, to the health and long life which they would get, without the premium, by the use of the mask. This is not wisdom on the part of the workmen. But whether they are wise or not, the natural and inevitable influence of the discovery, sooner or later, to lessen the cost of production in that trade, by lessening the risk of the labourers, must be established. The lightning conductor of Franklin, which is used very generally on the Continent, and almost universally in shipping, diminishes the risk of property, in the same way that the safety-lamp diminishes the risk of life; and, by this diminution, the rate of insurance is lessened, and the cost of production therefore lessened.

We have given many examples of labour-saving processes produced by science. We may regard it as a compensating principle that science is constantly raising up new employments. In 1798, Galvani, an Italian physician, accidentally discovered that the muscles of a dead frog were convulsed by the body coming in contact with two metals. Soon after, Volta, another Italian physician, produced electric

currents by a combination of metals in what was called the voltaic-pile. Who could have imagined that the patient working-out of the scientific principle that was evolved in the movement of Galvani's dead frog, should have raised up new branches of human industry, of the most extensive and varied utility? Galvanic batteries used to be considered amongst the toys of science. They now send an instantaneous message from London to Paris; and fill our houses with the most beautiful articles of metallic manufacture, electro-plate. About twenty-five years ago it was discovered that a piece of metal might receive a fine permanent coating of another metal by the agency of galvanism. The discovery created a strong interest in men of science, and many small experiments were tried to fix a coating of copper to some other metal. Manufacturing enterprise saw the value of the discovery, which has been simply described in a popular work:—

"Diluted sulphuric acid is poured into a porous vessel; this is placed in a larger vessel containing a solution of sulphate of copper; a piece of zinc is placed in the former, and a piece of silver or of copper in the latter, and both pieces are connected by a wire. Then does the wondrous agent, electricity, begin its work; a current sets in from the zinc to the acid, thence through the porous vessel to the sulphate, thence to the silver or copper, and thence to the conducting wire back again to the zinc; and so on in an endless circuit. But electricity never makes such a circuit without disturbing the chemical relations of the bodies through which it passes; the zinc, the silver or copper, the sulphuric acid, the oxygen, and the hydrogen—all are so far affected that the zinc becomes eaten away, while a beautiful deposit of metallic copper, derived from the decomposition of the sulphate, appears on the surface of the silver or copper. Copper is not the only metal which can be thus precipitated; gold, silver, platinum, and other metals may be similarly treated."\*

\* 'Curiosities of Industry.' By George Dodd.

When experiment had proved that every imaginable form of cheap metal could be coated with silver or gold, by the agency of electro-chemistry, an immediate demand was created for designers, modellers, and moulders. Vases of the most beautiful forms were to be produced in metal which should have the properties of solid silver without its costliness. The common metal vase is dipped into a tank containing a solution of silver. It is placed in connection with the wires of the galvanic battery. Atom after atom of the silver in solution clings to the vase, which soon comes out perfectly silvered. The burnisher completes its beauty. It is the same with a solution of gold. The pride of riches may boast the value of the solid plate, which tempts the thieves to "break in and steal." The nobler gratification of taste may secure the beauty without the expense or risk of loss.

But the great principle thus brought into practical use is carried farther in the realms of art. It becomes a copying process. It can multiply copies of the most minute engraving without in the slightest degree deteriorating the beauty of the engraver's work. The copy is as good as the original.

The same principle of depositing one metal upon another in minute atoms has produced galvanized tinned-iron—iron which will not rust upon exposure to weather, and thus applicable to many purposes of building—and iron which can be applied to many objects of utility with greater advantage than tin-plate.

There are few houses now without their daguerreotype portraits of some member of the family. This is a portrait copied from the human face by a sunbeam. The name daguerreotype is derived from the Frenchman Daguerre, who announced his discovery at the time when our countryman, Mr. Fox Talbot, was engaged in working out the same wonderful problem. The miniature painter has been superseded by the artist in photography; but where one miniature was executed for those who could pay a high

price, millions of photographs are sent through the world at the cost of a shilling.

Every scientific discovery, such as photography, is a step in advance of preceding discovery. If Newton had not discovered the fundamental properties of light, in the seventeenth century, we should, in all likelihood, have had no photography in the nineteenth. Abstract science is the parent of practical art.

It has been said by an American writer, who has published several treatises well calculated to give the workman an elevated idea of his rights and duties, that the "man who will go into a cotton-mill,—who will observe the parts of the machinery, and the various processes of the fabric, till he reaches the hydraulic press, with which it is made into a bale, and the canal or railroad by which it is sent to market, may find every branch of trade, and every department of science, literally crossed, intertwined, interwoven with every other, like the woof and the warp of the article manufactured."\* This crossing and intertwining of the abstract and practical sciences, the mechanic skill and the manual labour, which are so striking in the manufacture of a piece of calico, prevail throughout every department of industry in a highly civilized community. Every one who labours at all profitably labours for the production of utility, and sets in motion the labour of others. Look at the labour of the medical profession. In the fourteenth century, John de Gaddesden treated a son of Edward II. for the small-pox by wrapping him up in scarlet cloth, and hanging scarlet curtains round his bed ; and, as a remedy for epilepsy, the same physician carried his patients to church to hear mass. The medical art was so little understood in those days, that the professors of medicine had made no impression upon the understanding of the people ; and they consequently trusted not to medicine, but to vain charms, which superstitions the ignorance of the prac-

\* 'Everett's Working Man's Party.' Printed in the American Library of Useful Knowledge, 1831.

titioners themselves kept alive. The surgical practitioners of Europe, at the beginning of the sixteenth century, put their unhappy patients to the most dreadful torture by their mode of treating wounds and broken limbs. When they amputated a leg or an arm they applied the actual cautery, or red-hot iron, to stop the effusion of blood. Ambrose Paré, one of the most eminent of the French surgeons of that period, who accompanied the army to the siege of Turin in 1536, thus describes the mode in which he found his surgical brethren dealing with gunshot wounds :

" I was then very raw and inexperienced, having never seen the treatment of gunshot wounds. It is true that I had read in the Treatise of Jean de Vigo on wounds in general, that those inflicted by fire-arms partake of a poisonous nature on account of the powder, and that they should be treated with hot oil of elder, mixed with a little theriacum. Seeing, therefore, that such an application must needs put the patient to extreme pain, to assure myself before I should make use of this boiling oil, I desired to see how it was employed by the other surgeons. I found their method was to apply it at the first dressing, as hot as possible, within the wound, with tents and setons ; and this I made bold to do likewise. At length my oil failed me, and I was fain to substitute a digestive, made of the yolk of eggs, rose oil, and turpentine. At night I could not rest in my bed in peace, fearing that I should find the wounded, in whose cases I had been compelled to abstain from using this cautery, dead of poison : this apprehension made me rise very early in the morning to visit them ; but beyond all my hopes, I found those to whom I had applied the digestive suffering little pain, and their wounds free from inflammation ; and they had been refreshed by sleep in the night. On the contrary, I found those to whom the aforesaid oil had been applied, feverish, in great pain, and with swelling and inflammation round their wounds. I resolved, therefore, that I would never burn unfortunate sufferers from gunshot in that

cruel manner again." Francis I., king of France, having a persuasion that, because the Jews were the most skilful physicians of that day, the virtue was in the Jew, and not in the science which he professed, sent to Charles V. of Spain for a Jewish physician; but finding that the man who arrived had been converted to Christianity, he refused to employ him, thinking the virtue of healing had therefore departed from him. A statute of Henry VIII says, "For as much as the science and cunning of physic and surgery is daily within this realm exercised by a great multitude of ignorant persons, of whom the greater part have no insight in the same, nor in any other kind of learning: some, also, con no letters on the book, so far forth that common artificers, as smiths, and weavers, and women, boldly and accustomably, take upon them great cures, in which they partly use sorcery and witchcraft, partly apply such medicines to the disease as be very noxious, and nothing meet, to the high displeasure of God, great infamy to the faculty, and the grievous damage and destruction of diverse of the king's people." When such ignorance prevailed, diseases of the slightest kind must have been very often fatal; and the power of all men to labour profitably must have been greatly diminished by the ravages of sickness. These ravages are now checked by medical science and medical labour.

But even within our own times how greatly has general ignorance retarded the exertions of medical science to diminish suffering and to reduce the amount of mortality! The prejudices against vaccination have rendered it extremely difficult to eradicate small-pox, however certain the result of the great discovery of Jenner. According to the present law, all children *must* be vaccinated, and, if necessary, at the public expense. Such a law would have been very difficult of execution twenty years ago. The people had then seen the scarred faces from small-pox disappearing amongst them. They had learnt that, at the beginning of this century, vaccination, or the puncture of the skin with

matter originally obtained from the cow, was rooting out the small-pox, which used to destroy, not more than a hundred years ago, thirty-six thousand persons annually in this kingdom. But yet they had prejudices. No medical man would practise inoculation—a great blessing in its day—because the disease was thus kept amongst us. But still many ignorant persons did not avail themselves of the law passed fourteen years ago, under which their children *might* be vaccinated at the public cost. The undoubted testimony of the whole medical profession proves that vaccination in almost all cases prevents small-pox, and in all cases mitigates its evil. But that testimony further proves that, if vaccination were universal, small-pox would wholly disappear; and that is the reason why vaccination is now compulsory.

But we may regard the influences of knowledge upon the direction and aid of profitable labour, even from a higher point of view. The sciences and arts cannot be carried forward except in a country where the laws of God are respected, where justice is upheld, where intellect generally is cultivated, and taste is diffused. The religious and moral teacher, therefore, who lifts the mind to a contemplation of the duties of man, as they are founded upon a belief in the providence of an all-wise and all-powerful Creator, is a profitable labourer. The instructor of the young, who dedicates his time to advancing the formation of right principles, and the acquirement of sound knowledge, by his pupils, is a profitable labourer. The writer who applies his understanding to the discovery and dissemination of moral and political truth, is a profitable labourer. The interpreter and administrator of the laws, who upholds the reign of order and security, defending the innocent, punishing the guilty, and vindicating the rights of all from outrage and oppression, is a profitable labourer. These labourers, it may be said, are still direct producers of utility, but that those who address themselves to the imagination—the poets, the novelists, the painters, and the musicians—in every

polished society, are unprofitable labourers. One word is sufficient for an answer. These men advance the general intellect of a country, and they therefore indirectly advance the production of articles of necessity. We have already shown how the study of the higher mathematics, upon which astronomy is founded, has an influence upon the production of a piece of woollen cloth; and we beg our readers to bear this connection in mind when they hear it said, as they sometimes may, that an abstract student, or an elegant writer, is not a producer,—is, in fact, an idler. The most illustrious writers of every country, the great poets,

“High actions and high passions best describing,”

have, next to the inspirations of religion, lifted mankind, more than any other class of intellectual workmen, to their noblest pursuits of knowledge and virtue. Even those who especially devote themselves to give pleasure and amusement, call into action some of the highest and purest sources of enjoyment. They lead the mind to seek its recreations in more ennobling pursuits than those of sensuality; their arts connect themselves by a thousand associations with all that is beautiful in the natural world; they are as useful for the promotion of pure and innocent delight as the flowers that gladden us by their beauty and fragrance by the side of the corn that nourishes us. An entire community of poets and artists would be as unprofitable as if an entire country were dedicated to the cultivation of violets and roses; but the poets and the artists may, as the roses and the violets, furnish the graces and the ornaments of life, without injury, and indeed with positive benefit, to the classes who more especially dedicate themselves to what is somewhat exclusively called the production of utility. The right direction of the talents which are dedicated to art and literature is all that is required from those who address themselves to these pursuits. He, therefore, who beguiles a vacant hour of its tediousness, by some effort of intellect which captivates the imagination without

poisoning the morals,—and he who by the exercise of his art produces forms of beauty which awaken in the mind that principle of taste which, more than any other faculty, requires cultivation,—have each bestowed benefits upon the world which may be accurately enough measured even by the severe limitations of political economy;—they are profitable labourers and benefactors of their species.

The positive influence of the labours of the poet and the artist upon the advance of other labour might be easily shown. In their productions, especially, supply goes before demand, and creates demand. It has been calculated by an American writer, that the number of workmen who have been set in action—paper-makers, printers, binders—by the writings of Sir Walter Scott alone, in all countries, would, if gathered together, form a community that would fill a large town. The Potteries of Etruria, in Staffordshire, could not have existed unless Mr. Wedgwood had introduced into our manufacture of china the forms of Grecian art, bequeathed to us by the taste of two thousand years ago, and thus created a demand which has furnished profitable labour to thousands. There are several thousand musical instrument makers in Great Britain. What has given their industry its chief impulse? The divine art of Handel, Mozart, Beethoven, Weber, Rossini, Mendelsohn. If these great composers, and many others, had not raised music into something higher and more capable of producing enjoyment than the rude melodies of uncivilized tribes, there would have been no trade in pianofortes.

We have entered into these details principally to show that there are other and higher producers in society than the mere manual labourers. It was an ignorant fashion amongst the mental labourers of other days to despise the class of the physical labourers. They have learnt to know their value; and there should be a reciprocal knowledge. Both classes are working-classes. No one can say that the mental labourers are not workers. They are, we may truly affirm, taken as a class, the hardest workers in the commu-

nity. No one ever reached eminence in these pursuits without unwearied industry : the most eminent have been universally despisers of ease and sloth, and have felt their highest pleasures in the absorbing devotion of their entire minds to the duties of their high calling. They have wooed Knowledge as a mistress that could not be won without years of unwearied assiduity. The most eminent, too, have been practical men, despising no inquiry, however trifling it might appear to common eyes, and shrinking from no occupation, however tedious, as long as it was connected with their higher duties.

There is no higher duty than that of endeavouring so to lead public opinion, as that the general mind of the community shall be directed to noble and unselfish ends. The poet, the historian, the essayist, the novelist, have the responsibility of keeping alive the love of freedom, the hatred of oppression, the cultivation of Christian charity. There never was a truly great nation that had a low literature. It is the glory of our nation that its literature is amongst its best possessions ; and that the general scope and tendency of that literature are calculated to raise and cherish an enlightened public sentiment. Whatever be the amount of national wealth—however various the comforts and luxuries which private riches may command—it is quite certain that without that courage and intelligence which make a people free and keep them so, the public and private accumulations are comparatively worthless. There is a beautiful Eastern story which may better illustrate this position than any lengthened argument.\*

"It is related that a man of the pilgrims slept a long sleep, and then awoke, and saw no trace of the other pilgrims. So he arose and walked on ; but he wandered from the way, and he proceeded until he saw a tent, and an old woman at its door, and he found by her a dog asleep. He approached the tent, saluted the old woman, and begged

\* Note in Mr. Lane's admirable translation of the 'Thousand and One Nights,' original edition, vol. ii. p. 635.

of her some food ; whereupon she said to him, Go to yon valley, and catch as many serpents as will suffice thee, that I may broil some of them for thee. The man replied, I dare not catch serpents, and I never ate them. The old woman therefore said, I will go with thee, and catch some of them, and fear thou not. Then she went with him, and the dog followed her, and she caught as many of the serpents as would suffice, and proceeded to broil some of them. The pilgrim could not refrain from eating ; for he feared hunger and emaciation : so he ate of those serpents. And after this, being thirsty, he demanded of the old woman some water to drink ; and she said to him, Go to the spring, and drink of it. Accordingly he went to the spring ; but he found its water bitter ; yet he could not refrain from drinking of it, notwithstanding its exceeding bitterness, on account of the violence of his thirst. He therefore drank, and then returned to the old woman, and said to her, I wonder at thee, O thou old woman, and at thy residing in this place, and thy feeding thyself with this food, and thy drinking of this water.—How then, said the old woman, is your country ? He answered her, Verily, in our country are spacious and ample houses, and ripe and delicious fruits, and abundant sweet waters, and excellent viands, and fat meats, and numerous sheep, and everything good, and blessings of which the like exist not save in the Paradise that God (whose name be exalted !) hath described to his just servants.—All this, replied the old woman, I have heard ; but tell me, have you any Sultan who ruleth over you, and oppresseth in his rule while ye are under his authority, and who, if any one of you committeth an offence, taketh his wealth, and destroyeth him, and who, if he desire, turneth you out from your houses, and eradicateth you utterly ? The man answered her, That doth sometimes happen. And the old woman rejoined, If so, by Allah, that dainty food and elegant life, and those delightful comforts, with oppression and tyranny, are penetrating poison ; and our food with safety is a salutary antidote.”

## QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XX.

1. What is the foundation of the empire of man over material things?
2. How is the positive influence of science in the direction of labour chiefly exhibited?
3. What are the indirect influences of science on labour?
4. What are the benefits which astronomy has conferred upon navigation?
5. On what other scientific principle does navigation depend?
6. How does the application of science to navigation affect the price of commodities?
7. What discovery first raised seamanship to a science?
8. Give an instance of the intimate connection between abstract speculation and practical commerce.
9. Mention two apparently common things which are the results of accumulations of science.
10. Give instances of practical benefits resulting from an abstract line of the science of natural history.
11. What have been the progressive applications of science to India-rubber?
12. Mention some of the uses to which science has applied gutta percha?
13. What are the moral benefits resulting from the discovery of gutta percha?
14. What are the moral benefits likely to result from the trade in palm-oil?
15. What are the practical benefits of the science of geology?
16. How do inventions that diminish risk lessen the cost of production?
17. Mention a few such inventions.
18. Give instances of new employments raised up by the discoveries of science.
19. Give some instances of the extreme ignorance in former times with regard to medicine and surgery.
20. Give an instance of such ignorance in our own times.
21. Give some instances of the less direct influences of knowledge upon profitable labour.
22. What are the indirect aids to the advancement of utility rendered by poets, novelists, painters, musicians?
23. What is the positive influence of such labourers upon the advance of other labour?
24. Give an illustration of the fact that without freedom the accumulations of wealth are comparatively worthless.

**CHAPTER XXI.**

Invention of printing—Effects of that art—A daily newspaper—News-writing of former periods—Changes in the character of newspapers—Steam conveyance—Electric telegraph—Organization of a London newspaper-office—The printing-machine—Newspapers in Great Britain—The paper-machine—Book-binding—Paper-duty.

THE art of printing offers one of the readiest and most forcible illustrations of the advantages that have been bestowed upon the world by scientific discovery and by mechanical power. Although there is, happily, little occasion now to combat any wide-spread hostility to machinery, the argument for its use derived from printing may be very briefly stated.

It is about four hundred years since the art of printing books was invented. Before that time all books were written by the hand. There were many persons employed to copy out books, but they were very dear, although the copiers had small wages. A Bible was sold for thirty pounds in the money of that day, which was equal to a great deal more of our money. Of course, very few people had Bibles or any other books. A mode was invented of imitating the written books by cutting the letters on wood, and taking off copies from the wooden blocks by rubbing the sheet on the back. Soon after, the idea was carried farther by casting metal types or letters, which could be arranged in words, and sentences, and pages, and volumes; and then a machine, called a printing-press, upon the principle of a screw, was made to stamp impressions of these types so arranged. There was an end, then, at once to the trade of the pen-and-ink copiers; because the copiers in types, who could press off several hundred books while the

writers were producing one, drove them out of the market. A single printer could do the work of at least two hundred writers. At first sight this seems a hardship, for a hundred and ninety-nine people might have been, and probably were, thrown out of their accustomed employment. But what was the consequence in a year or two? Where one written book was sold, a thousand printed books were required. The old books were multiplied in all countries, and new books were composed by men of talent and learning, because they could then find numerous readers. The printing-press did the work more neatly and more correctly than the writer, and it did it infinitely cheaper. What then? The writers of books had to turn their hands to some other trade, it is true; but type-founders, paper-makers, printers, and bookbinders, were set to work, by the new art or machine, to at least a hundred times greater number of persons than the old way of making books employed.

But there is a far more important mode of viewing this matter than any consideration resulting out of the increased employment that the art of printing unquestionably has created. If printing, which is a cheap and rapid process, could by possibility be superseded by writing, which is an expensive and a slow operation, no book, no newspaper, could be produced for the use of the people. Knowledge, upon which every hope of bettering their condition must ultimately rest, would again become the property of a very few; and mankind would lose the greater part of that power which constitutes the essential difference between civilization and barbarism. The art of printing has gone on more and more adapting itself to the increase of our population, since the time of William Caxton, who first introduced it into this country. Herein consists, perhaps, one of the mightiest differences between our condition and that of every generation which has preceded us. Through that art, no idea can now perish. Through that art, knowledge is fast becoming the common possession of all. Through that art, what the people have gained in the past

is secured for the future. It has established the empire of public opinion.

There is possibly no more striking example of the manifold combinations of mental labour, of scientific power, of mechanical invention, and of the use of rapid means of communication, than the forces now called into action for the issue of a London daily newspaper. Nor is there any production of literary industry which more pointedly illustrates the distinctive qualities of printing as compared with writing—the rapidity, the cheapness, and the general diffusion. Let us endeavour to give a rapid sketch of the newspapers of former times, and of the recent developments of science and industry which have contributed to produce this great necessary of modern society.

The essential characteristic of a newspaper is news. It may be philosophical, or critical, or imaginative—it may pour forth treasures of learning or eloquence, to live but a few hours and then be too readily forgotten—but no amount of ability will give it currency if it be deficient in news. It is the imperative demand for news, embracing every movement of human life in every class and every country, that sets in action the wondrous organization that produces a daily newspaper. Its ministers of communication are almost ubiquitous.

The history of news-writing and news-publishing is a mirror of many of the changes in social necessities and conveniences. In 1625, Ben Jonson's play of 'The Staple of News' exhibited a countrywoman going to an office of news, and saying to the manager, who sits in state with his registers and examiners,—

“ I would have, sir,  
A groatsworth of any news, I care not what,  
To carry down this Saturday to our vicar.”

This was written news. In London, before a newspaper existed, there were private gazetteers, who made a living by picking up scraps of intelligence in taverns and barbers' shops. This class of persons continued even when there

were newspapers; for the news-letter, as it was called, is thus described in the first number of the 'Evening Post,' issued in 1709:—"There must be 3*l.* or 4*l.* per ann. paid by those gentlemen that are out of town for written news, which is so far generally from having any probability or matter of fact in it, that it is frequently stuffed up with a 'We hear,' or 'An eminent Jew merchant has received a letter.' " The same 'Evening Post' adds,—"We read more of our own affairs in the Dutch papers than in any of our own." Sir Roger L'Estrange, who published 'The Intelligencer,' with privilege, in 1663, says that he shall publish once a week, "to be published every Thursday, and finished upon the Tuesday night, leaving Wednesday entire for the printing it off." The first advertisement in an English paper appeared in 1649.

At the beginning of the present century the public used to look with wonder upon their "folio of four pages," and contrast it with the scanty chronicles of the days of Charles II. and Anne. We of the present time, in the same way, contrast our newspapers with the meagre records of the beginning of the century. The essential difference has been produced by steam navigation, by railways, by the extension of the post, dependent upon both applications of steam, and by the electric telegraph. The same scientific forces and administrative organization that bring the written news from every region of the earth, re-convey the printed news to every region. It is sufficient to glance at the lists of foreign mails, and the low rates of postage from the United Kingdom, to see the enormous extent of that intercourse which enables our government, by the packet service, to transmit a letter for sixpence to the British West Indies, to Hong Kong, to our North American colonies, to Belgium; to nearly all the German States, by an uniform British and foreign rate, for eightpence; to France, Algeria, Spain, and Portugal, for tenpence; to the Italian States for a trifle more; to Turkey in Europe for one shilling and fivepence; and to India

for one shilling and tenpence. With this certain and rapid intercourse, it is not likely that the least enterprising newspaper editor would have to repeat the doubt of L'Estrange, who says, "Once a week may do the business; yet if I shall find, when my hand is in, and after the planting and securing my correspondents, that the matter will fairly furnish more, I shall keep myself free to double at pleasure."

What the carrier-pigeon was in the conveyance of intelligence in the middle ages, and even within a few years, the Electric Telegraph is in the present day. The carrier-pigeon, in the last century, was despatched by the merchants of the English factory, from Scanderoon to Aleppo, to announce the arrival of the Company's ships. The Electric Telegraph communicates to London the arrival of an Australian packet at Southampton. Within the last twenty years one of the annual expenses of a London newspaper was 1800*l.* for pigeon expenses. The pigeons have lost their employment. The price of stocks and shares in 'Change Alley is known every quarter of an hour upon the exchanges of our great commercial marts; and the closing price of the French funds is in type before midnight at our daily newspaper offices. The carrier-pigeon travelled sixty miles an hour. The time which it takes to transmit a message by the Electric Telegraph is inappreciable.

The difficulties of fighting with space and time, which the London Daily Papers had to encounter thirty or forty years ago, can scarcely now be comprehended by those who have not watched the progress of great changes. Marvels, however, were occasionally accomplished by the 'Times,' and other Morning Papers, which set people asking where all this neck-and-neck race for intelligence would conduct us. The age of railroads came, and then, indeed, a vast step was gained in the publication in London of provincial news. There were occasions in which a tolerably full report of a debate at Manchester in the Free Trade Hall was published in London before the dial-hand had again made its circuit of twelve hours. But these were rare

examples of a most costly and complex organization. A great change was impending. In 'A Guide to the Electric Telegraph' by C. M. Archer, published in 1852, it is stated that the application of the Electric Telegraph to the purposes of the Press is due to the author of that handbook. This was in May, 1845, when there existed only one Telegraph in this country,—that between Nine Elms and Portsmouth,—that in the 'Morning Chronicle,' with which he was connected, appeared the first practical application in England of the Telegraph to the purpose of reporting public meetings. Speeches are now reported through the telegraphic wires at as great a length as if the reporters had transmitted the words in the old ordinary way. So instantaneous is the collateral dispatch to provincial towns that it is possible for a statesman to speak at Glasgow in the evening, and to find on his breakfast table next morning, in the Local Paper, the comments of the London editors on his speech. It is not the practice now for every leading newspaper to have its own telegraphic reporter, for if that were the case, the ordinary business traffic would be seriously impeded. If each of the Morning Papers required a report of the same proceedings, and some of the leading Provincial Papers also wanted special reports, the wires would be blocked. Thus it is that the Telegraph Companies have organized an "Intelligence Department." Few, perhaps, have any notion of the nature and extent of this wonderful organization. Its national importance can scarcely be over-rated.

The labours of this "Intelligence Department" may be measured by the fact that it has agencies all over the kingdom, who constantly receive news, and very frequently transmit it. How vast is the machinery employed in this one intellectual operation may be collected from the fact that ocean telegraphy has reached such an extent since the first conducting wire was laid in 1850 from Dover to Calais, that there are now more than eighty submarine cables, connecting nation with nation by their mysterious and

sublime agency. Of the national importance of such operations we give one example :—

“On the 8th of November, 1861, Messrs. Slidell and Mason, Confederate Commissioners, were forcibly removed by Commodore Wilkes, a Federal officer, from the British mail steamer ‘Trent.’ This proceeding was a *casus belli* according to the law of nations. The news reached London on the 27th of the same month; and on the 29th a cabinet council resolved on demanding the release of the commissioners, as the only way of avoiding hostilities. On December 2, despatches to this effect left England; they reached Halifax on the 15th, and Washington on the 19th. The United States Government yielded to the demand, and gave up the commissioners on the 27th. The news of this surrender left New York on the 28th, and reached Cork on the 8th of January, 1862. In the interval troops were sent out to Canada, to be prepared for war; and enormous expenses were incurred for military and naval preparations. It was felt at the time, and has been acknowledged since, that if a transatlantic submarine telegraph had been at work, millions of money might have been saved; seeing that the commerce of the country was seriously interrupted during this period of suspense, irrespective of the direct cost of warlike preparations. Between the date of the offence, and the arrival of the news that reparation had been made, exactly two calendar months elapsed; if an electric messenger had reduced this interval to a week, or fortnight, or even a month, the saving of money and anxiety would have been immense.”\*

To carry out all this scientific conquest of time and space, by the most perfect mental and mechanical arrangements in the newspaper office itself, appears, at first sight, almost as great a wonder as the rapid communication. Nothing but the most perfect organization of the division of labour could accomplish this feat.

There is, after midnight, in the office of a morning paper,

\* From an article by Mr. G. Dodd in the ‘Companion to the British Almanac for 1866.’

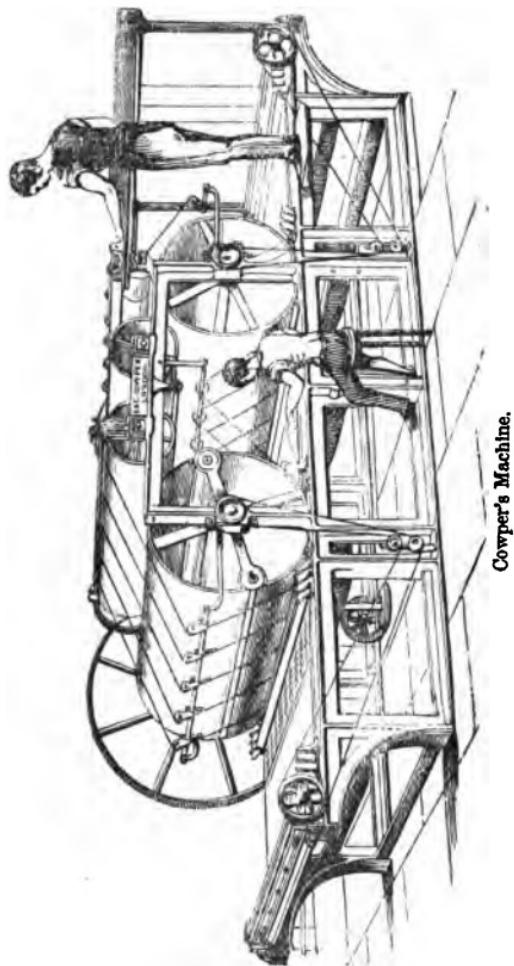
a constant necessity for adapting the labour of every quarter of an hour to the requirements of the instant time. Much of the newspaper matter may have been in type in the evening ; some portion may be quite ready for printing off. But new necessities may derange much of this preparation. Say that the Parliament is sitting. The reporters are in the gallery at the meeting of the House, and each arrives at the office with his assigned portion of the debate. A heavy night is not expected, and the early reporters write with comparative fullness. Suddenly an unexpected turn is given to the proceedings. A great debate springs up, out of a ministerial statement or an opposition objection. Then come reply and rejoinder. Column after column is poured in. Smaller matters must give way to greater. The intelligence that will keep is put aside for the information that is pressing. The debate is prolonged till one or two o'clock, and the paper is approaching its completion. But an electric telegraph communication has arrived—perhaps an important express. Away goes more news. Advertisements, law reports, police reports, correspondence—all retire into obscurity for one day. There is plenty of manipulating power in the great body of compositors to effect these changes. But not in any department is there any apparent bustle. Nor is there any neglect in the labours that wait upon the work of the compositors. One word is not put for another. The readers are as vigilant to correct every error—to have no false spelling and no inaccurate punctuation—as if they were bestowing their vigilance upon a book to be published next season. The reporters are as careful to make no slips which would indicate a want of knowledge, as if they were calmly writing in their libraries after breakfast. The one-presiding mind of the editor is watchful over all. At four or five o'clock the morning paper goes to press.

But there are many hundred copies to be despatched by the morning mails. Manchester and Glasgow would be frightened from their propriety if the daily London papers did not arrive at the accustomed hour. The London mer-

chant, banker, lawyer, would go unwillingly to his morning labour, if he had not had one passing glance at the division in the House, the state of the money-market, the last foreign intelligence. Late as the paper may have been in its mental completion, Manchester, Glasgow, and London will not be kept without that illumination which has become almost as necessary as sunlight. Machinery has been created by the demand, to carry the demand farther than the warmest imagination could have anticipated. In 1814, Koenig, a German, erected the first printing machine at the 'Times' office, and produced eighteen hundred impressions an hour on one side. The machine superseded the duplicates of the type which were once necessary, painfully and laboriously to keep up a small supply, worked by men, with relays, at the rate of five hundred an hour. In 1818 Edward Cowper produced his cylinder machine, which effected a revolution in the commerce of books.

Koenig's machine, which was a very complicated instrument, has been supplanted by machines of far more power, and by improvements in the process of rapidly producing stereotype plates, which enable such a newspaper as the 'Times' to meet the greatest demand in the smallest time.

The amount of the change which has been produced in ten years by the abolition of the Newspaper Stamp and the Advertisement Duty—in some degree also by the repeal of the tax upon paper—is sufficiently indicated by the following figures:—There were published in England, at the commencement of 1864, 919 journals. Of these 240 belonged to London; and these included 13 daily morning papers, 7 evening, and 220 published during the week and at intervals. But these London Journals, not daily, comprise the purely literary and scientific papers—the legal and medical, and, more numerous than all, the religious journals. Further, there have started into flourishing existence no less than 32 *district* journals of the metropolis and its suburbs. Taking these 240 metropolitan and suburban papers from the total 919 published in England, we find that there are now 679 *Country* newspapers, instead



of the 261 which were existing in 1855. We may infer, therefore, without going into a minute examination of the matter, that the 350 populous places which, at that time, had no newspaper of their own, are now not left without a vehicle for the publication of their local affairs, whether important or frivolous, whether affecting a nation or a parish. To finish this summary, I may add that Wales has 37 journals; Scotland 140; Ireland 140; the British

Isles 14; making up for the United Kingdom a total of 1250. Of the aggregate circulation of these journals, it is impossible to arrive at any accurate estimate. At the beginning of the century, the annual circulation of newspapers in England and Wales was 15 millions. In 1853, as was shown by the Stamp Office returns, the annual circulation of England and Wales was 72 millions, and of Scotland and Ireland each 8 millions. Even the circulation in 1853 was an astounding fact, and we then wrote, "Visit, if you can, the interior of that marvellous human machine the General Post Office on a Friday evening from half-past five to six o'clock. Look with awe upon the tons of newspapers that are crowding in to be distributed through the habitable globe. Think silently how potent a power is this for good or for evil. You turn to one of the boxes of the letter-sorters, and your guide will tell you, 'This work occupies not half the time it formerly did, for everybody writes better.'" Some of the elder country newspapers and some that have started into life since the repeal of the Stamp, have a circulation that is to be numbered by thousands. But if we only assign a sale of 1000 each to the 679 country papers in England, we have a total annual circulation of 235 millions. The Scotch and Irish journals will probably swell the aggregate annual circulation of the United Kingdom to 250 millions. Taking the entire population at 30 millions, this estimate would give 8 newspapers in the course of the year to every person: and assuming that every newspaper has six readers, there is no present want in these kingdoms of the literary means of keeping the people informed upon every current event and topic.

The printing machines, which have been in full operation for little more than twenty years, have called into action an amount of employment which was almost wholly unknown when knowledge was for the few. Paper-makers, type-founders, wood-engravers, bookbinders, booksellers, have been raised up by this extension of the art of printing in numbers which far exceed those of any former period.

But the printing machine would have worked feebly and imperfectly without the paper machine. That most complete invention has not only cheapened paper itself, but it has cheapened the subsequent operations of printing in a remarkable degree. It has enabled one revolution of the cylinder of the printing machine to produce four sheets instead of one, or a surface of print equal to four sheets. When paper was altogether made by hand, the usual paper for books was called demy ; and a sheet of demy produced sixteen octavo pages of a book. The paper could not have been economically made larger by hand. A sheet of paper equal to four sheets of demy is now worked at the newspaper machine ; and sixty-four pages of an octavo book might be so worked, if it were needful for cheapening production. Thus one economical arrangement of science produces another contrivance ; and machines in one direction combine with machines having a different object, to produce legitimate cheapness, injurious to no one, but beneficial to all.

In consequence of the cheaper production of the press, and the consequent extension of the demand for books, bookbinding has become a large manufacture, carried on with many scientific applications. We have rolling machines, to make the book solid ; cutting machines, to supersede the hand-labour of the little instrument called a plough ; embossing machines, to produce elaborate raised patterns on leather or cloth ; embossing presses, to give the gilt ornament and lettering. These contrivances, and other smaller inventions, have not only cheapened books, but have enabled the publisher to give them a permanent instead of a temporary cover, ornamental as well as useful. The number of bookbinders employed has been quadrupled by these inventions. In 1830, the journeymen bookbinders of London opposed the introduction of the rolling machine. Books were formerly beat with large hammers upon a stone to give them solidity. The workmen were relieved from the drudgery of the beating-hammer by the easy operation of the rolling machine. They soon discovered the weak foundation of their objection to an in

strument which, in truth, had a tendency, above all other things, to elevate their trade, and to make that an art which in one division of it was a mere labour. If the painter was compelled to grind his own colours and make his own frames, he would no longer follow an art, but a trade ; and he would receive the wages of a labourer instead of the wages of an artist, not only so far as related to the grinding and frame-making, but as affecting all his occupations by the drudgery attending a portion of them.

The commerce of literature has been doubled in thirty years. But it would be scarcely too much to assert that the influence of the press, in forming public opinion, and causing it to operate upon legislation, has doubled almost every other employment. To that public opinion, chiefly so formed, we owe the successive removals of restrictions upon trade. To that public opinion we owe the abolition of prohibitive duties upon foreign produce, which has given us a far wider range of beneficial consumption. To that public opinion we owe the repeal of the oppressive excise duties upon salt, leather, candles, glass, bricks, and lastly upon paper.

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XXI.

1. What invention preceded that of separate letters for printing ? What was the effect on labour of the invention of the printing-press ? What change has this invention made in the condition of the people ?
2. Give some instances of the changes in the method of publishing news. By what means have these changes been produced ?
3. What method of conveying intelligence was superseded by the Electric Telegraph ? Give some instances of the effect of the Electric Telegraph on the transmission of news.
4. Give some account of the collection and arrangement of intelligence in a London newspaper office.
5. What measures have produced the great increase in the circulation of newspapers during the last ten years ?
6. What invention has completed the work of the printing machine ? What effect has the printing press had on bookbinding ?
7. What are the indirect benefits of the printing press ?

## APPENDIX TO PART II.

## OCCUPATIONS OF THE PEOPLE.



In the 'Companion to the Almanac' for 1864, the author of 'Knowledge is Power' wrote a paper, in which he presented an abstract of the second volume of the Census of 1861, which contains the fullest information on the important subject of the occupations of the people. In an introductory note to this volume of tables relating to England and Wales, the Registrar-General says: "The nomenclature of many occupations is in an unsettled state. But in 1851 an attempt was made to frame a classification under which all the varieties of occupation could be placed; and that classification was to a certain extent successful. After further experience, its groups have been simplified and its ramifications extended, so as to exhibit in one view the whole population of England and Wales marshalled in six groups, according to their various occupations.

The Summary Tables of Occupations exhibit the whole community inhabiting our industrial hive, and working "in divers functions," under classes, orders, and sub-orders. We propose, instead of giving all the tables in one view, to separate the classes, showing the orders and sub-orders of each, and adding in each division such observations as appear to us essential, or at least interesting.

The information presented in this Appendix is referred to in the preceding chapters of this volume, instead of being given in a more condensed shape.

Occupations, England and Wales. Census of 1861.		All Ages.		Under 20 Years of Age.		20 Years of Age and Upwards.		
		Persons.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.
ALL PERSONS . . . . .	20,066,224	9,776,259	10,289,965	4,545,686	4,536,980	5,230,573	5,752,985	
PERSONS OF SPECIFIED OCCUPA- TIONS AND CONDITIONS . . . . .	19,915,334	9,724,817	10,190,517	4,542,300	4,524,821	5,182,517	5,665,696	
CLASSES.								
Class I. PROFESSIONAL . . . . .	481,957	385,345	96,612	46,138	16,872	339,207	79,740	
II. DOMESTIC . . . . .	11,426,720	3,473,916	7,952,804	3,290,319	4,032,347	183,597	3,920,457	
III. COMMERCIAL . . . . .	623,710	585,420	38,290	116,616	4,536	468,804	33,754	
IV. AGRICULTURAL . . . . .	2,010,454	1,631,652	378,802	344,692	60,261	1,286,360	318,541	
V. INDUSTRIAL . . . . .	4,828,399	3,262,510	1,565,889	682,085	401,479	2,580,425	1,164,410	
VI. INDEFINITE AND NON- PRODUCTIVE . . . . .	544,094	385,974	158,120	62,450	9,326	323,524	148,794	

The first striking fact which appears on the face of this table is, that out of 20 millions of people, only 150 thousand do not appear in the enumeration of those of specified occupations and conditions. The Census is founded upon the returns made by each family or individual as to their status. The vague "Rentier" of the old French passport has no place here. Men and women for the most part shrank not from naming their employments; and though there may be a little of that colour which pretences to gentility occasionally put on, we may conclude that the record, upon the whole, is honest and true.

The Domestic Class, II.—as we shall see when we come to the orders and sub-orders which it comprises—represents those engaged in domestic offices—the wives, mothers, children, relatives, and servants of a household. The Classes I., III., V., VI., form an aggregate of 6,478,160. The Agricultural Class, IV., comprises 2,010,454 persons. Thus we see that the possessors or workers of the land form only about one-fourth of the whole working community. If we compare the *males* enumerated under various occupations, we shall find that those belonging to the four non-agricultural classes amount to 4,619,246, whilst those comprised in the agricultural class amount to 1,631,652. This computation gives the same result as to the proportions of agriculturists to other workers.

Classes, Orders, and Sub-orders.		All Ages.		Under 20 Years of Age.		20 Years of Age and Upwards.	
		Persons.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.
<b>I. Professional Class.</b>							
Order	Sub-order						
1.	1. Officers of National Government	48,474	46,543	1,931	3,410	167	43,133
	2. Officers of Local Government	37,671	35,688	1,983	369	27	35,319
	3. Officers of East India and Colonial Government	.	.	1,205	—	4	—
							1,201
2.	1. Army (in England and Wales)	91,005	91,005	—	11,928	—	79,077
	2. Navy (Ashore or in Port)	40,939	40,939	—	7,277	—	33,662
3.	1. Clergymen, Ministers, and Church Officers	38,536	35,483	3,053	455	260	35,028
	2. Lawyers, Law Court Officers, and Law Stationers	34,991	34,970	21	6,203	3	28,767
	3. Physicians, Surgeons, and Druggists	88,441	85,995	2,446	4,938	23	31,057
	4. Authors and Literary Persons	3,580	3,395	185	144	5	2,423
	5. Artists	13,397	12,318	1,079	1,596	182	10,722
	6. Musicians, Teachers of Music	15,191	10,470	4,721	1,381	822	9,089
	7. Actors, Actresses	.	4,068	2,934	1,134	382	2,552
	8. Teachers	.	.	110,364	30,347	80,017	15,116
	9. Scientific Persons	.	.	4,095	4,053	42	474
							3,579
							39

**I. PROFESSIONAL CLASS.**—This is divided into three Orders. The first, comprising persons engaged in the General or Local Government of the country, amounts to 87,350 persons. The second, persons engaged in the defence of the country, reckons 131,944. The third, persons engaged in the Learned Professions, or engaged in Literature, Art, and Science, (with their immediate subordinates), is stated at 262,663. The total of the Professional Class is 481,957. We proceed to the Sub-Orders of Class I.

The sub-orders of this class are well defined in all those occupations which we are accustomed to regard as strictly professional. It is in the third order that we encounter a vague and imperfect classification after we have passed the clear distinction of the three learned professions. "Authors and literary persons," numbering only 3,580, cannot surely comprise all who write books, or are contributors to reviews and magazines, or are journalists. If any of us look at the question by the light of our individual experience, we shall immediately see that there are countless numbers who are writers, but who take a more definite rank as clergymen, lawyers, or medical men. In the same way we may judge of the return of "scientific persons." At a period when female authors were never so numerous, it is startling to find only 185 ladies who claim to rank amongst literary persons. The host of novelists, poetesses, biographers, belong, no doubt, to the domestic class, and find their place in the Census amongst those who are engaged in the duties pertaining to the wives, mothers, or children of the English households. Let us hope and believe that the literary ambition does not exempt them from the due discharge of these family obligations. The female artists and musicians are strictly professional; but some addition must also be made to their number from the domestic class. The eighth sub-order is a large one, and exhibits some striking results. Out of a hundred and ten thousand teachers, eighty thousand are females. The four great divisions of female teachers comprise—schoolmistresses, 37,669; teachers of languages, 982; general teachers, 16,290; governesses, 24,770. The period of life at which employment is found for educated women as teachers is worthy of note. Under 20 years of age there are—schoolmistresses, 2,257; general teachers, 9,499; and governesses, 3,202. We may ascribe the large proportion of the general teachers to the system of pupil teachers in national schools. The ages of those designated as governess—as we may trace them on the returns from under 20 years even to 90—show that the notion of a governess having some affinity to the ancient duenna of comedy would now be an anachronism. The largest number are under 25 years; the next largest, under 30; whilst up to 40 the number rapidly decreases. From 40 to 55 there are not more than comprised in the return of those under 20. We may reasonably conclude, therefore, that the profession of governess is rarely a permanent occupation for life, and that the majority are gradually absorbed into the domestic class, and become the happier teachers of their own children. We say happier, because the true complement of a woman's happiness is in the position of wife and mother. But we do not believe that the condition of governess is one especially subject to the mortifications which are inflicted by ignorant and purse-proud employers. There has been, no doubt, good cause for the dark colours in which the haughty middle-class mistress has been painted. The position of an educated female, who is superior in intellect and acquirements to the rich people who pay her for her services, is an anomalous one, and has its unavoidable troubles. But good sense will soon obtain the victory over class prejudices and individual arrogance.

Classes, Orders, and Sub-orders.		All Ages.		Under 20 Years of Age.		20 Years of Age and Upwards.	
		Persons.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.
Sub-order II. Domestic Class.							
4. 1. Wives (not otherwise described).	2,650,096	—	2,650,096	—	20,287	—	2,629,809
2. Widows (not otherwise described)	269,142	—	269,142	—	69	—	269,073
3. Children and Relatives at home (not otherwise described)	3,989,652	1,710,395	2,279,257	1,701,969	2,032,383	8,426	246,874
4. Scholars (so described)	3,150,048	1,552,738	1,597,310	1,548,876	1,595,637	3,862	1,673
5. 1. In Board and Lodging	159,134	73,336	85,798	709	949	72,627	84,849
2. Attendance (Domestic Servants, &c.)	1,208,648	137,447	1,071,201	38,765	383,022	98,682	688,179

II. DOMESTIC CLASS.—Of this largest division of the population there are two orders, viz., of persons engaged in the domestic offices or duties of wives, mothers, mistresses of families, children and relatives, and of persons engaged in entertaining and performing personal offices for man. The one numbers 10,058,938 persons; the other, 1,367,782.

The information contained in the tabular arrangement requires little illustration. We subjoin a brief analysis of the sub-order of domestic servants, &c. Of the male persons whose occupation is to be "in attendance," there are—domestic servant (not particularly designated), 62,076; coachman, 11,897; groom, 21,396; gardener, 14,621; servant at inn, club-house, dining - room, 24,453. Of female domestic servants, there are—general servant, 644,271; housekeeper, 66,406; cook, 77,822; housemaid, 102,462; nurse, 67,785; laundry-maid, 4,040; hotel, club-house, dining-room servant, 14,145; hospital, lunatic-asylum attendant nurse, 2,797; nurse, not domestic servant, 24,821; charwoman, 65,273.

In England and Wales, in 1831, there were 104,370 male servants, and 560,979 female. In 1861, there were 137,447 male servants, and 1,071,201 female. In 1831, the total population of England and Wales was about 14,000,000; in 1861, it was about 20,000,000. We see, therefore, that the increase of female servants has been in a much greater proportion than the increase of population. The female population was about 7,000,000 in 1831; the female servants were about  $\frac{1}{13}$ th of the total females. In 1861, the female population was about 10,000,000; the female servants were about  $\frac{1}{75}$ th of the total females. This is, in itself, a striking proof of the increase of the means of household expenditure amongst the middle classes.

Classes, Orders, and Sub-orders.	All Ages.			Under 20 Years of Age.			20 Years of Age and Upwards.	
	Persons.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	
Sub-Order III. Commercial Class.								
6. 1. Mercantile Men [and Women] .	118,180	114,651	3,529	18,979	181	95,672	3,348	
2. Other General Dealers .	65,463	39,583	25,880	4,435	1,683	35,148	24,197	
7. 1. Carriers on Railways .	53,542	53,385	157	7,184	12	46,251	145	
2. " on Roads .	104,054	101,608	2,446	11,554	86	90,064	2,360	
3. " on Canals and Rivers .	35,817	35,553	264	6,128	46	29,425	218	
4. " on Seas and Rivers .	141,848	141,405	443	20,550	21	120,855	422	
5. Engaged in Storage .	24,416	20,095	4,321	4,128	1,739	15,967	2,582	
6. Messengers and Porters .	80,390	79,140	1,250	43,718	768	35,422	482	

III. COMMERCIAL CLASS.—This comprises two orders. One, that of persons who buy or sell, keep, or lend money, houses, or goods of various kinds. The other, of persons engaged in the conveyance of men, animals, goods, and messages. The order, No. 6, with its two sub-orders, requires no comment. The order, No. 7, with its six sub-orders, is suggestive of a great change that has taken place in this country since the Census of 1831. The sub-order, No. 1, that of carriers on railways, exhibits a large source of employment wholly created in little more than a quarter of a century. It comprises all direct railway employments, viz., engine-driver, stoker, 10,414; clerk, station-master, &c., 14,547; porter and other railway company's servant, 26,727; railway police, 1,444. The sub-order, No. 2, includes amongst "carriers on roads," toll - collectors, coach and cab owners, and livery-stable keepers. The actual ministers of the wheel comprise — coachman (not domestic servant), 17,251; cabman, flyman, 9,055; carman, carrier, carter, drayman, 67,070. The race of post-boy, if not wholly worn out, has no place in this catalogue. It is remarkable that, no doubt owing to the universal desire to have a genteel occupation recorded in the Census, we have only 87 donkey keepers and drivers.

The sub-order, No. 3, is equally significant of a great change. We have now, "engaged in canal and inland navigation service," only 4,165 persons, as compared with 53,542 in direct employment on railways. The 35,817 persons of this sub-order is made up by bargemen, lightermen, and watermen, in number exceeding 31,000.

Classes, Orders, and Sub-orders.	All Ages.		Under 20 Years of Age.		20 Years of Age and Upwards.		
	Persons.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.
Sub-order 8. Order 1. <i>In Fields and Pastures (Agriculturists).</i>	1,833,652	1,457,075	376,577	323,330	60,000	1,133,745	316,577
2. Woods (Arboriculturists)	8,926	8,917	9	995	2	7,922	7
3. Gardens (Horticulturists)	81,532	79,675	1,857	8,303	183	71,372	1,674
9. Persons engaged about Animals	86,344	85,985	359	12,064	76	73,921	283

Sub. IV. Agricultural Class, working.  
 1. In Fields and Pastures (Agriculturists).  
 2. Woods (Arboriculturists)  
 3. Gardens (Horticulturists)

9. Persons engaged about Animals

IV. AGRICULTURAL CLASS.—This class is divided into two orders, the first amounting to 1,924,110 persons; the second, to 86,344. The sub-orders sufficiently define the orders. It is noted, however, in the Census, that in addition to those here returned, many persons connected with the land, as proprietors or occupiers, are returned under other heads, according to their professions or occupations. The distinctive employments of males in the first sub-order are—land proprietor, 15,131; farmer, grazier, 226,957; farmer's son, grandson, brother, nephew, 92,321; farm-bailiff, 15,698; agricultural labourer, out-door, 914,301; shepherd, out-door, 25,559; farm-servant, in-door, 158,401. There are also of land-surveyors, &c., 4,702; and, an entirely new denomination—agricultural student, 490. The mechanised improvements of modern husbandry are indicated by 236 agricultural-implements proprietors, and 1,205 agricultural engine and machine workers. 1,761 persons are also returned as belonging to land drainage service, not in towns. Of the two other sub-orders, there are woodman, 8,907; gardener, not domestic servants, 76,760. Of female agriculturists, there are, land proprietor, 15,635; farmer, grazier, 22,778; farmer's, grazier's wife, 163,765; relatives living on the farm, 83,830; agricultural labourer, out-door, 43,964; farm servant, in-door, 46,561.

The great fact connected with the agricultural class is, that the labourers are not increasing relatively to the increase of population. It has been held, indeed, that there is a positive decrease within the last few years. Some apprehension has been felt that this fact is one of the symptoms of national decay. It may be viewed as an evidence of the direct contrary. Scientific improvements are turning the mere physical labour into skilled labour, and the condition of the farm labourer will be proportionately improved. As the improvement goes on he will obtain better wages, more food, and some better home than a ruinous hovel.

V. This class is denominated INDUSTRIAL. The name is not very happily chosen; for it might seem to imply that other classes are not so emphatically engaged in carrying on the industry of the country. It comprises all our manufacturing community, as well as those who follow the production of the material to work it up into almost infinite forms of utility and beauty. The principle upon which the six orders of this class are formed is clearly shown in the following synopsis:—

V. Industrial Classes.	Persons.
10. Persons engaged in ART and MECHANIC Productions, in which matters of various kinds are employed in combination. . . . .	953,289
11. Persons working and dealing in the TEXTILE FABRICS and in DRESS . . . . .	2,231,617
12. Persons working and dealing in FOOD and DRINKS . . . . .	430,220
13. Persons working and dealing in ANIMAL SUBSTANCES . . . . .	56,092
14. Persons working and dealing in VEGETABLE SUBSTANCES . . . . .	144,184
15. Persons working and dealing in MINERALS . . . . .	1,012,997

Nearly five millions of people we thus see are engaged in ministering to the wants of the community and to their own wants, in employments which in their boundless ramifications are the wonders of civilization. We may be enabled to comprehend from this glance how it is that the sudden misfortune which befell our cotton manufacture did not leave the nation prostrate; how, on the contrary, its commercial power has seemed undiminished.

We have no direct means of comparing the occupations comprised in the 48 sub-orders of Class V., with the industrial pursuits of the producers and distributors at any early period of our history. As a matter of curiosity, let us see what the trades of London were, as represented by its companies, of which the following is a list:—

Mercers.	Grinders.	Plasterers.	Needle-makers.
Grocers.	Butchers.	Stationers.	Gardeners.
Drapers.	Saddlers.	Broderers.	Soap-makers.
Fishmongers.	Carpenters.	Upholders.	Tinplate-workers.
Goldsmiths.	Cordwainers.	Musicians.	Wheelwrights.
Skimmers.	Painter-stainers.	Turners.	Distillers.
Merchant Tailors.	Curriers.	Basket-makers.	Hatband-makers.
Haberdashers.	Masons.	Glaziers.	Patten-makers.
Salters.	Plumbers.	Horners.	Glass-sellers.
Ironmongers.	Innholders.	Farrriers.	Tobaccopipe-makers.
Vintners.	Founders.	Paviors.	Coach and Harness-makers.
Clothworkers.	Poulterers.	Lorimers.	
Dyers.	Cooks.	Apothecaries.	Gun-makers.
Brewers.	Coopers.	Shipwrights.	Wire-drawers.
Leathersellers.	Bricklayers.	Spectacle-makers.	Long Bowstring-makers.
Pewterers.	Boyers.	Clock-makers.	
Barbers.	Fletchers.	Glovers.	Playing-card-makers.
Cutlers.	Blacksmiths.	Comb-makers.	Fan-makers.
Bakers.	Joiners.	Feit-makers.	Woodmongers.
Wax Chandlers.	Weavers.	Frame-work Knitters.	Starch-makers.
Tallow Chandlers.	Woolmen.	Silk-throwers.	Fishermen.
Armourers and Brasiers.	Scriveners.	Silkmen.	Parish Clerks.
	Fruiterers.	Pin-makers.	Carmen.

Y

Classes, Orders, and Sub-orders.	All Ages.			Under 20 Years of Age.			20 Years of Age and Upwards.	
	Persons.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	
Order. Order. V.— <i>Industrial Class—working.</i>								
10. 1. In Books	54,293	46,983	7,310	12,898	2,499	34,085	4,811	
2. Musical Instruments	6,586	6,365	221	1,073	29	5,292	192	
Prints and Pictures	6,310	5,975	435	1,146	141	4,729	294	
Carving and Figures	8,749	4,149	4,600	870	2,027	3,279	2,573	
Tackle for Sports and Games	4,187	2,427	1,760	425	381	2,024	1,379	
Designs, Medals, and Dies	2,810	2,762	48	601	11	2,161	37	
Watches and Philosophical Instruments	25,623	24,888	735	4,442	202	20,446	533	
Surgical Instruments	1,029	798	231	141	58	657	173	
Arms	13,744	13,031	713	3,544	290	9,487	423	
Machines and Tools	117,418	110,772	6,646	24,971	2,639	85,801	3,947	
Carriages	20,128	19,896	232	3,607	22	16,289	210	
Harness	19,414	18,109	1,305	3,512	444	14,597	861	
Ships	43,779	43,704	75	8,230	11	35,474	64	
Houses and Buildings	505,671	480,092	25,579	69,995	149	410,097	25,430	
Furniture	63,916	55,600	8,316	10,271	1,336	45,329	6,980	
Implements	39,623	39,526	97	6,813	5	32,713	92	
Chemicals	20,009	18,245	1,764	3,003	558	15,242	1,206	
11. 1. In Wool and Worsted	238,814	132,942	105,872	35,936	43,413	97,006	62,459	
2. Silk	117,989	45,121	72,868	10,231	23,521	34,890	49,347	
3. Cotton and Flax	563,014	238,643	324,371	82,250	134,930	156,393	189,441	
4. Mixed Materials (1, 2, 3)	83,170	57,481	25,689	14,631	7,554	42,850	17,735	
Dress	1,205,747	399,166	806,581	65,476	139,483	333,690	667,098	
Hemp and other Fibrous Materials.	22,883	17,070	5,813	4,947	1,652	12,123	4,161	

12.	1. In Animal Food . . . . .	141,185	102,836	38,349	17,156	1,264	85,680	37,085
2.	Vegetable Food . . . . .	136,354	115,485	20,869	19,306	2,054	96,179	18,815
3.	Drinks and Stimulants . . . . .	152,681	129,293	23,388	18,844	2,186	110,449	21,202
13.	1. In Grease, Gut, Bones, Horn, Ivory, and Whalebone . . . . .	12,040	11,186	854	1,831	258	9,355	596
2.	Skins, Feathers, and Quills . . . . .	29,756	28,360	1,396	4,437	479	23,923	917
3.	Hair . . . . .	14,296	9,711	4,585	2,270	1,802	7,441	2,783
14.	1. In Gums and Resins . . . . .	14,659	11,777	2,882	2,329	971	9,448	1,911
2.	Wood . . . . .	79,066	76,076	2,990	10,949	1,144	65,127	1,846
3.	Bark . . . . .	2,552	2,236	116	521	25	1,715	91
4.	Cane, Rush, and Straw . . . . .	17,302	16,048	1,254	2,428	304	13,620	950
5.	Paper . . . . .	30,805	19,173	11,632	4,735	4,100	14,438	7,532
15.	1. In Mining . . . . .	330,446	330,352	94	95,696	7	234,656	87
2.	Coal . . . . .	48,238	43,554	4,684	5,346	1,898	38,208	2,786
3.	Stone, Clay . . . . .	144,773	142,170	2,603	20,884	1,370	121,286	1,233
4.	Earthenware . . . . .	47,144	32,981	14,163	9,343	5,905	23,638	8,258
5.	Glass . . . . .	15,603	14,211	1,392	4,023	557	10,188	835
6.	Salt . . . . .	2,527	2,404	123	295	38	2,109	85
7.	Water . . . . .	2,173	2,147	26	134	—	2,013	26
8.	Gold, Silver, and Precious Stones . . . . .	21,576	18,600	2,976	4,705	1,370	13,895	1,606
9.	Copper . . . . .	9,733	5,752	3,981	1,213	2,452	4,539	1,529
10.	Tin and Quicksilver . . . . .	22,878	18,434	4,444	5,139	2,686	13,295	1,808
11.	Zinc . . . . .	760	743	17	164	14	579	3
12.	Lead and Antimony . . . . .	4,597	4,027	970	1,062	495	2,965	475
13.	Brass and other mixed Metals . . . . .	45,577	41,612	3,965	11,124	1,668	30,488	2,297
14.	Iron and Steel . . . . .	316,572	299,697	16,875	69,138	6,667	230,559	10,208

Classes, Orders, and Sub-orders.	All Ages.				Under 20 Years of Age.		20 Years of Age and Upwards.	
	Persons.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	
<i>Sub-order. VI. Indefinite and non-productive Class.</i>								
16. 1. General Labourers	309,883	306,544	3,339	47,605	681	258,939	2,658	
2. Other Persons of indefinite Occupations	45,919	35,978	9,941	10,903	4,316	25,075	5,625	
17. Persons of Rank or Property not returned under any Office or Occupation	110,299	22,870	87,429	331	788	22,539	86,641	
18. 1. On Income from voluntary Sources and Rates	72,724	18,320	54,404	2,375	2,467	15,945	51,937	
2. Prisoners and others of Criminal Class, of no specified Occupation	3,366	1,144	2,222	951	840	193	1,382	
3. Vagrants and Gipsies	1,903	1,118	785	285	234	833	551	
Persons of no stated Rank, Profession, or Occupation	150,890	51,442	99,448	3,386	12,159	48,056	87,289	

**VI. INDEFINITE AND NON-PRODUCTIVE CLASS.**—It is unnecessary for us to add any remarks to this table, which is sufficiently explanatory.

In the Census of Occupations for 1851, a table was given of 108 avocations in Great Britain, comprising all those for, or in respect to which, the numbers exceed 10,000. No such brief table is given in the present Census of England and Wales. But we have been enabled, by making a selection from the complete Table of Occupations (amounting to many hundreds), to furnish information to the same effect. We give this list under an alphabetical arrangement.

OCCUPATIONS IN ENGLAND AND WALES EMPLOYING THE GREATER  
NUMBER OF PERSONS OF BOTH SEXES.

Occupations.	Persons.	Occupations.	Persons.
Agricultural Labourer (out-door)	958,265	Engine and Machine Maker, Dealer	60,862
Apothecary, Surgeon	12,030	Errand Boy, Girl, Messenger, Porter (not Government)	75,629
Army, Non-commissioned Officer and Private	66,752	Farm Bailiff	15,898
Artificer, Labourer in H.M. Dock-yards	14,026	Farmer, Grazier	249,745
Attorney, Solicitor	11,386	Farm Servant (in-door)	204,962
Bailiff (Farm)	15,698	Fisherman, Woman	17,227
Baker (see also Confectioner)	54,140	Fishmonger, Dealer, Seller	11,305
Bargeman.—Woman, Lighterman, Waterman	31,428	Flax, Linen, Manufacturer	22,050
Blacksmith	108,165	Fruiterer, Greengrocer	18,045
Boiler Maker	13,020	Gardener (not Domestic Servant)	78,533
Bonnet and Hat (Straw) Maker	18,176	Glass Manufacture	15,046
Bookbinder	11,920	Grazier, Painter, Plumber	74,619
Boot and Shoe Maker, Manufact.	250,581	Glover (not otherwise described) and Leather Glover	25,300
Brass ; Manufacturer, Moulder, Founder.	16,284	Goldsmith, Silversmith, Jeweller	15,933
Brewer	20,352	Governess	24,770
Bricklayer	79,458	Customs	5,642
Brick Maker, Dealer	39,620	Inland Revenue	4,577
Brush, Broom ; Maker, Seller	11,178	Post Office	14,131
Builder	15,757	Civil Service (not in Post Office or Revenue Departments)	6,996
Butcher, Meat Salesman	68,114	Messengers and Workpeople	2,478
Cabinet Maker, Upholsterer	41,037	Grocer, Tea Dealer	93,483
Calico, Cotton ; Printer	12,556	Groom (not Domestic) Horse-keeper	36,595
Carman, Carrier, Carter, Drayman	67,651	Gunsmith, Gun Manufacture	11,873
Carpenter, Joiner	177,969	Hairdresser, Wig Maker	11,064
Charwoman	65,273	Harness Maker, Saddler	18,229
Chemist, Druggist	16,414	Hatter, Hat Manufacture	13,814
Clergyman of Established Church (see also Minister)	19,195	Hawker, Pedlar	21,792
Clerk (Commercial)	55,931	Hose (Stocking) Manufacture	45,869
Clerk (Law)	16,605	Hotel, Inn; Keeper	28,314
Clock, Watch ; Maker, Manufact.	20,757	Iron Manufacture, Moulder, Founder	125,771
Club-house, Dining-room, Inn ; Servant	38,598	Iron Miner	20,626
Coach Maker	18,370	Ironmonger	9,607
Coachman (not Domestic), Cab-man, Flyman	26,306	Labourer (General, or Branch undefined)	309,883
Coalheaver, Labourer	17,410	Lace Manufacture	53,987
Coal Merchant, Dealer	12,268	Laundry Keeper, Mangler, Washer-woman	167,607
Coal Miner	246,613	Lead Miner	18,552
Commercial Traveller	10,779	Licensed Victualler, Publican	37,946
Confectioner, Pastrycook	14,526	Lodging, Boarding, House Keeper	20,700
Cooper	17,821	Maltster	10,677
Copper Miner	17,727	Mason, Pavior	84,434
Cord, Rope ; Maker	13,486	Mechanic, Manufacturer (not otherwise described)	11,639
Costermonger, General Dealer, Huckster	15,879	Merchant	12,982
Cotton Manufacture	456,646	Nail Manufacture	26,130
Cowkeeper, Milk-seller	17,694	Nurse (not Domestic Servant)	24,821
Currier	13,109	Paper Manufacture	13,357
Dock Labourer, Dock and Harbour Service	32,487	Plasterer	18,650
Draper, Linendraper, Mercer	57,653	Police	21,938
Dressmaker and Milliner	287,101	Printer	30,590
Earthenware Manufacture	38,072	Prov. on Curer, Dealer	11,052

Occupations.	Persons.	Occupations.	Persons.
Publisher, Bookseller . . . . .	8,154	Servant, Domestic :—	
Railway Company's Servant, Porter, Attendant . . . . .	26,846	Laundrymaid . . . . .	4,040
Railway Engine Driver, Stoker . . . . .	10,414	Nurse . . . . .	67,785
Railway Labourer . . . . .	27,773	Inn, &c., Servant . . . . .	38,598
Railway Officer, Clerk, Station Master . . . . .	14,559	Shepherd (out-door) . . . . .	25,562
Ribbon Manufacture . . . . .	9,341	Shipbuilder, Shipwright . . . . .	31,294
Satin, Silk, Manufacture . . . . .	101,678	Shopkeeper (branch undefined) . . . . .	14,580
Sawyer . . . . .	31,647	Slate Quarrier . . . . .	9,360
Schoolmaster, Mistress . . . . .	56,139	Stationer (see also Bookseller) . . . . .	6,967
Seamstress, Shirt Maker . . . . .	76,493	Stay and Corset Maker . . . . .	11,482
Servant, Domestic :—		Stone Quarrier . . . . .	21,004
General . . . . .	706,347	Straw Plait Manufacture . . . . .	29,867
Coachman . . . . .	11,897	Tailor . . . . .	136,390
Cook . . . . .	77,822	Teacher (General) . . . . .	24,973
Gardener . . . . .	14,621	Tinman, Tin Worker, Tinker . . . . .	7,841
Groom . . . . .	21,396	Tin Manufacture . . . . .	7,252
Housekeeper . . . . .	66,408	Tin Miner . . . . .	14,314
Housemaid . . . . .	102,462	Tin Plate Worker . . . . .	7,580
		Turner . . . . .	7,684
		Woollen Cloth Manufacture . . . . .	130,034
		Worsted Manufacture . . . . .	79,242

There are two other tables, having relation to the occupations of the people, which are interesting. That of the foreigners in England shows how little their industry enters into competition with native exertion. The total foreigners (those of European States), amount to 73,434 persons, of whom 50,844 are males, and 22,590 are females. Of the females, 13,790 belong to the domestic class, of which 3,432 are "in attendance." Of male domestic servants there are 4,433. In the professional class we find as musicians and teachers of music, 2,025 males, 223 females; of teachers generally, 1,153 males, 2,147 females. There are 4,777 persons engaged in mercantile pursuits; 15,737 carriers on seas and rivers. Of the industrial class, those employed on dress amount to 6,649; those on watches and philosophical instruments are 1,297. In furniture there are employed 1,071. Very different is the present time from that in which the Flemings were the principal weavers of England. All the foreign workers earning a living amongst us in the factories for textile fabrics—wool, worsted, silk, cotton, flax, and mixed materials—amount only to 529.

There are special tables appropriated to the blind and the deaf and dumb. The total number of the blind is 19,352. Happy is it that they are not wholly deprived of the power of being useful to the community! 56 are clergymen, ministers, and church officers; 609 musicians and teachers of music; 79 teachers. Belonging to the agricultural class there are 1,460; to the industrial class, 4,000. We may see in several items of these returns how the sense of touch compensates in some degree for the loss of sight. There are 677 workers in dress, and 658 in cane, rush, and straw. Amongst the blind there are 539 persons of rank or property, not returned under any office or occupation; and 1,091 living on income from voluntary sources and rates.

The total of the deaf and dumb is 12,236. Of these, 5,104 belong to the domestic class; 932 to the agricultural; and 2,909 to the industrial. Of this class, 1,909 are working and dealing in the textile fabrics and in dress.

## PART III.

## CARTALISTS AND LABOURERS : CO-OPERATION.

*CHAPTER XXII*

Power of skill—Cheap production—Population and production—Partial and temporary evils—Intelligent labour—Division of labour—General knowledge—Union of forces.

WE have thus, without pretending to any approach to completeness, taken a rapid view of many of the great branches of industry in this country. We have exhibited capital working with accumulation of knowledge ; we have shown labour working with skill. We desire to show that the counter-control to the absorbing power of capital is the rapidly developing power of skill—for that, also, is capital. Knowledge is power, because knowledge is property. Mr. Whitworth, whose Report on American Manufactures we have several times quoted, says that the workmen of the United States, being educated, perform their duty “with less supervision than is required when dependence is to be placed upon uneducated hands.” He adds, “It rarely happens that a workman, who possesses peculiar skill in his craft, is disqualified to take the responsible position of superintendent, by the want of education and general knowledge, *as is frequently the case in this country.*” This is a reproach which every young person in our land ought, as speedily as possible, to wipe out. The means of education may not be quite so universal here as in the United States ; but they are ample to produce a large increase of that skill and that

trustworthiness which are the most efficient powers which those who work for their living can possibly command, for elevating their individual positions, and for elevating the great body of workers throughout the realm. One of the most essential steps towards the attainment of this elevation is the conviction that manual labour, to be effective, must adapt itself almost wholly to the direction of science ; and that under that direction unskilled labour necessarily becomes skilled, and limited trust enlarges into influential responsibility.

Those who have taken a superficial view of the question of scientific application say, that, only whenever there is a greater demand than the existing means can supply, is any new discovery in mechanics a benefit to society, because it gives the means of satisfying the existing wants ; but that, on the contrary, whenever the things produced are sufficient for the consumers, the discovery is a calamity, because it does not add to the enjoyments of the consumers ; it only gives them a better market, which better market is bought at the price of the existence of the producers.

All such reasoning is false in principle, and unsupported by experience. There is no such thing, nor, if machines went on improving for five hundred years at the rate they have done for the last century, could there be any such thing as a limit to the wants of the consumers. The great mass of facts which we have brought together in this book must have shown, that the cheaper an article of necessity becomes, the more of it is used ; that when the most pressing wants are supplied, and supplied amply by cheapness, the consumer has money to lay out upon new wants ; that when these new wants are supplied cheaply, he goes on again and again to other new wants ; that there are no limits, in fact, to his wants as long as he has any capital to satisfy them. Bear in mind this ; that the first great object of every invention and every improvement is to confer a benefit upon the consumers,—to make the commodity cheap and plentiful. The working man stands in a double

character ; he is both a producer and a consumer. But we will be bold to say that the question of cheapness of production is a much more important question to be decided in his favour as a consumer, than the question of dearness of production to be decided in his favour as a producer. The truth is, every man tries to get as much as he can for his own labour, and to pay as little as he can for the labour of others. If a mechanic, succeeding in stopping the machine used in his own trade, by any strange deviation from the natural course of things were to get higher wages for a time, he himself would be the most injured by the extension of the principle. When he found his loaf cost him two shillings instead of sixpence ; when he was obliged to go to the river with his bucket for his supply of water ; when his coals cost a guinea a bushel instead of eighteen pence ; when he was told by the hosier that his worsted stockings were advanced from a shilling a pair to five shillings ; when, in fact, the price of every article that he uses should be doubled, trebled, and, in nine cases out of ten, put beyond the possibility of attainment ;—what, we ask, would be the use to him of his advance in wages ? Let us never forget that it is not for the employment of labourers, but for the benefit of consumers, that labour is employed at all. The steam-engines are not working in the coal-pits of Northumberland, and the ships sailing from the Tyne to the Thames, to give employment to colliers and to sailors, but to make coals cheap in London. If the people of London could have the coals without the steam-engines and the ships, it would be better for them, and better for the rest of the world. If they could get coals for nothing, they would have more produce to exchange for money to spend upon other things ; and the comforts, therefore, of every one of us would be increased.

This increase of comfort, some may say, is a question that more affects the rich than it affects the great mass. This again is a mistake. The whole tendency of the improvements of the last four hundred years has not only been

to lift the meanest, in regard to a great many comforts, far above the condition of the rich four hundred years ago, but absolutely to place them, in many things, upon a level with the rich of their own day. They are surrounded as we have constantly shown throughout this book, with an infinite number of comforts and conveniences which had no existence two or three centuries ago ; and those comforts and conveniences are not used only by a few, but are within the reach of almost all men. Every day is adding something to our comforts. Our houses are better built—our clothes are cheaper—we have a number of domestic utensils, whose use even was unknown to our ancestors—we can travel cheaply from place to place, and not only travel at less expense, but travel ten times quicker than the richest man could travel two hundred years ago. The bulk of society is not only advancing steadily to the same level in point of many comforts with the rich, but is gaining that knowledge which was formerly their exclusive possession. Let all of us who are producers keep fast hold of that last and best power.

We have endeavoured to show throughout this book that the one great result of machinery, and of every improvement in art, is to lessen the cost of production ; to increase the benefit to the consumer. But it is a most fortunate arrangement of the social state, as we have also shown, that cheap production gives increased employment. The same class of false reasoners who consider that the wants of society are limited, cry out, It is better to have a population of men than of steam-engines. That might be true, if the steam-engines *did* put out the men ; but inasmuch as they increase the productions by which men are maintained, they increase the men. What has increased the population of England nearly tenfold during the last five hundred years, but the improvement of the arts of life, which has enabled more men to live within the land ? There is no truth so clear, that as the productions of industry multiply, the means of acquiring those productions

multiply also. The productions which are created by one producer furnish the means of purchasing the productions created by another producer ; and, in consequence of this double production, the necessities of both the one and the other are better supplied. The multiplication of produce multiplies the consumers of produce. There are, probably, upon the average, no more hats made in the year than there are heads to wear them ; but as there are twenty-one millions of heads of the British subjects of Queen Victoria, and there were only five millions of the British subjects of Queen Anne, it is self-evident that the hat-makers have four times as much work as they had a century and a half ago. What has given the hat-makers four times as much work ? The quadrupling of the population. And what has quadrupled the population ? The quadrupling of produce—the quadrupling of the means of maintaining that population. It is a remarkable fact, derived from the official returns, that whilst our exports of home produce and manufactures have increased about twofold in price since the commencement of the century, they have increased eightfold in quantity. Their real or declared value indicates the price. What is called the official value indicates the quantity. What is true of our exports is also true of our home-consumption. The great multiplication of produce is accompanied, proportionately, with a far greater diminution of price.

There is a just and eloquent passage in the Registrar-General's Report upon the Census of 1851, which we gladly copy :—

“ With all that we now see around us, it is difficult to place ourselves in the position of the people of 1751 ; and to understand either the simplicity of the means, or the greatness of the task which has since been achieved by the people of England and Scotland. It is evident, however, that if the whole that they have accomplished had been proposed as a project, or been held out as the policy of the greatest minister then living, its difficulty and grandeur

would have overwhelmed him with confusion. If in the height of power he had thus addressed the people of Britain, would he not have been heard with justifiable credulity? —‘These islands and Ireland are occupied by the men of many separate states that are now happily united. After the settlement on the land of tribes, fleets, and armies of Celts, of Saxons, of Danes, and of Normans—and after centuries of patient culture, its fertile soil sustains *seven millions* of people in its whole length from the Isle of Wight to the Shetland Islands. We cannot—for the mighty power is not given us—say, Let there be on the European shores of the Atlantic ocean—*three* Great Britains. But the means exist for creating on this land, in less than a hundred years, two more nations, each in number equal to the existing population, and of distributing them, over its fields, in cottages, farms, and towns, by the banks of its rivers, and around its immemorial hills; and they will thus be neither separated by longer roads, nor wider seas, but be neighbours, fellow-workers, and fellow-countrymen on the old territory; wielding by machines the forces of nature, that shall serve them with the strength of thousands of horses, on roads, and seas,—in mines, manufactories, and ships. Subsistence shall be as abundant as it is now, and luxuries which are confined to the few shall be enjoyed by multitudes. The wealth of the country—its stock and its produce—shall increase in a faster ratio than the people. All this shall be accomplished without any miraculous agency, by the progress of society,—by the diffusion of knowledge and morals,—by improvements,—and improvements chiefly in the institution of marriage—‘that true source of human offspring,’ whence,

‘ Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure,  
Relations dear, and all the charities  
Of father, son, and brother, first were known.’ ”

If the reader has rightly considered the various facts which we have presented, he will long before this have come to the conclusion, that it is for the general interests

of society that every invention, which has a tendency to diminish the cost of production, shall have the most perfect freedom to go forward. He will also have perceived that the exercise of this natural right, this proud distinction, of man, to carry on the work of improvement to the fullest extent of his capacity and knowledge, can never be wholly stopped, however it may be opposed. It may be suspended by the ignorance of a government—it may be clamoured down by the prejudice of a people; but the living principle which is in it can never be destroyed. To deny that this blessing, as well as many other blessings which we enjoy, is not productive of any particular evil, would be uncandid and unwise. Every change produced by the substitution of a perfect machine instead of an imperfect one, of a cheap machine instead of a dear one, is an inconvenience to those who have been associated with the imperfect and the dear machines. It is a change that more or less affects the interests of capitalists as well as of workmen. In a commercial country, in a highly civilized community, improvement is hourly producing some change which affects some interests. Every new pattern which is introduced in hardware deranges for a moment the interests of the proprietors of the old moulds. Every new book, upon any specific subject upon which books have formerly been written, lessens the value of the copyright of those existing books. What then? Is every improvement, which thus produces a slight partial injury, to be disconcerted, because of this inevitable condition which we find at every step in the march of society? Or rather, ought we not to feel that every improvement brings healing upon its wings, even to those for whom it is a momentary evil;—that if it displaces their labour or their capital for a season, it gives new springs to the general industry, and calls forth all labour and all capital to higher and more successful exertions? At every advance which improvement makes, the partial and temporary evils of improvement are more and more lessened. In the early stages of social refinement, when a

machine for greatly diminishing labour is for the first time introduced, its effects in displacing labour for an instant may be seen in the condition of great masses of people. It is the first step which is the most trying. Thus, when printing superseded the copies of books by writing a large body of people were put out of employ ;—they had to seek new employ. It was the same with the introduction of the spinning machinery,—the same with the power-loom. It would be presumptuous to say that no such great changes could again happen in any of the principal branches of human industry ; but it may be said, that the difficulty of superseding our present expeditious and cheap modes of manufacture is daily increasing. The more machines are multiplied, that is, the more society approaches towards perfection, the less room is there for those great inventions which change the face of the world. We shall still go on improving, doubtless ; but ingenuity will have a much narrower range to work in. It may perfect the machines which we have got, but it will invent fewer original machines. And who can doubt, that the nearer we approach to this state, the better will it be for the general condition of mankind ? Who can doubt whether, instead of a state of society where the labourers were few and wretched, wasting human strength, unaided by art, in labours which could be better performed by wind and stream,—by the screw and the lever,—it would not be better to approach as nearly as we can to a state of society where the labourers would be many and lightly tasked, exerting human power in its noblest occupation, that of giving a direction by its intelligence to the mere physical power which it had conquered ? Surely, a nation so advanced as to apply the labour of its people to occupations where a certain degree of intelligence was required, leaving all that was purely mechanical to machines and to inferior animals, would produce for itself the greatest number of articles of necessity and convenience, of luxury and taste, at the cheapest cost. But it would do more. It

would have its population increasing with the increase of those productions; and that population employed in those labours alone which could not be carried on without that great power of man by which he subdues all other power to his use,—his reason.

But it is not only science which has determined, and is more and more determining, the condition of the great body of operatives, but the organization of industry upon the factory principle, so universal and so powerful, has rendered it impossible for the future that the larger amount of the labour of a country should be regarded as an insulated force. It must work in conjunction with higher and more powerful forces.

In France, which, as a commercial and manufacturing country, was considerably behind the advance of England, it was a common practice, in many villages and small towns, not very long ago, for the weavers to make the looms and other implements of their trade. In the fifteenth century, in the same country, before an apprentice could be admitted to the privilege of a master-weaver, it was not only necessary for him to prove that he understood his trade as a weaver, but that he was able to construct all the machines and tools with which he carried on his craft. Those who know anything of the business of weaving will very readily come to the conclusion that the apprentice of the fifteenth century, whose skill was put to such a proof, was both an indifferent weaver and an indifferent mechanician;—that in the attempt to unite two such opposite trades, he must have excelled in neither;—and that in fact the regulation was one of those monstrous violations of the freedom of industry, which our ancestors chose to devise for the support of industry.

Carrying the principle of a division of labour to the other extreme point, we have seen that a vast number of persons are engaged in the manufacture of a piece of cloth,\* who, if individually set to carry the workmanship of that piece

\* See Chapter XVII.

of cloth through all its stages, would be utterly incompetent to produce it at all, much less to produce it as durable and beautiful as the cloth which we all daily consume. How would the sorter of the wool, for example, know how to perform the business of a scourer, or of the dyer, or of the carder? or the carder that of the spinner or the weaver? or the weaver that of the miller, or boiler, or dyer, or brusher, or cutter, or presser? We must be quite sure that, if any arbitrary power or regulation, such as compelled the weaver of the fifteenth century to make his own loom, were, on the other hand, to compel a man engaged in any one branch of the manufacture of woollen cloth to carry that manufacture through all its stages, the production of cloth would be utterly suspended; and that the workmen being incompetent to go on, the wages of the workmen could no longer be paid;—for the wages of labour are paid by the consumer of the produce of labour, and here there would be nothing to consume.

The great principle, therefore, which keeps the division of labour in full activity is, that the principle is necessary to production upon a scale that will maintain the number of labourers engaged in working in the cheapest, because most economical manner, through the application of that mode of working. The labourers, even if the principle were injurious to their individual prosperity and happiness, which we think it is not, could not dispense with the principle, because it is essential to economical production; and if dear production were to take the place of economical production, there would be a proportionately diminished demand for products, and a proportionate diminution of the number of producers.

The same laws of necessity which render it impossible for the working men to contend against the operation of the division of labour,—even if it were desirable that they should contend against it, as far as their individual interests are concerned,—render it equally impossible that they should contend against the operation of accumulation of

knowledge in the direction of their labour. The mode in which accumulation of knowledge influences the direction of their labour is, that it furnishes mechanical and chemical aids to the capitalist for carrying on the business of production. The abandonment of those mechanical and chemical aids would suspend production, and not in the slightest degree increase, but greatly diminish, and ultimately destroy, the power of manual labour, seeking to work without those mechanical and chemical aids. The abandonment of the division of labour would work the same effects. There would be incomparably less produced on all sides ; and the workmen on all sides, experiencing in their fullest extent the evils which result from diminished production, would all fall back in their condition, and day by day have less command of the necessities and comforts of life, till they sank into utter destitution.

We dwell principally on the effects of accumulation of knowledge and division of labour on the working man as a consumer, because it is the more immediate object of this volume to consider such questions with reference to production. But the condition of the working man as a producer is, taking the average of all ranks of producers, greatly advanced by the direction which capital gives to labour, by calling in accumulation of knowledge and division of labour. If the freedom of labour were not established upon the same imperishable basis as the security of property, we might, indeed, think that it was a pitiable thing for a man to labour through life at one occupation, and believe that it was debasing to the human intellect and morals to make for ever the eye of a needle, or raise a nap upon woollen cloth. The Hindoos, when they instituted their *castes*, which compelled a man to follow, without a possibility of emerging from it, the trade of his father, saw the general advantage of the division of labour ; but they destroyed the principle which could make it endurable to the individual. They destroyed the Freedom of Industry. “To limit industry or genius, and narrow the field of in-

dividual exertion by any artificial means, is an injury to human nature of the same kind as that brought on by a community of possessions. Where there is no stimulus to industry things are worst ; where industry is circumscribed, they cannot prosper ; and are then only in a healthy state, when every avenue to personal advantage is open to every talent and disposition. A state of equality is an instance of the first case ; the division of the people into castes, as among the ancient Egyptians, and still among the Hindoos, of the second. This division has been considered by all intelligent travellers as one powerful cause of the stationary character of the inhabitants of that country : and the effect would have been still more pernicious, if time or necessity had not introduced some relaxation into the rigorous restrictions originally established, and so ancient as to be attributed to Siva. As long, however, as the rule is generally adhered to, that a man of a lower class is restricted from the business of a higher class, so long, we may safely predict, India will continue what it is in point of civilization. An approach to the same effect may be witnessed in the limitation of honours, privileges, and immunities in some countries of Europe.”\*

In these manufactures and trades where the division of labour is carried to the greatest extent, such as the cotton and silk trades, workmen readily change from one branch to the other, without molestation, and without any great difficulty of adapting themselves to a new occupation. The simpler the process in which a workman has been engaged—and every process is rendered more simple by the division of labour—the easier the transition : and the principal quality which is required to make the transition is, that stock of general knowledge which the division of labour enables a man to attain : and which, in point of fact, is attained in much higher perfection in a large manufactory, than in that rude state where one man is more or less compelled to do everything for his body, and therefore has no

\* Sumner's ‘Records of the Creation.’

leisure to do anything for his mind. There are evils, undoubtedly, in carrying the division of labour to an extreme point; but we think that those very evils correct themselves, because they destroy the great object of the principle, and give imperfect instead of perfect production. The moral evils which some have dreaded may assuredly be corrected by general education, and in fact are corrected by the union of numbers in one employment. What sharpens the intellect ought, undoubtedly, to elevate the morals; and, indeed, it is only false knowledge which debases the morals. Knowledge and virtue, we believe, are the closest allies; and wisdom is the fruit of knowledge and virtue.

The same principles as to the course which the division of labour should lead the labourer to pursue, apply to the higher occupations of industry. No man of learning has ever very greatly added to the stock of human knowledge, without devoting himself, if not exclusively, with something like an especial dedication of his time and talents, to one branch of science or literature. In the study of nature we have the mathematician, the astronomer, the chemist, the botanist, the zoologist, and the physician engaged, each in his different department. In the exposition of moral and political truths we have the metaphysician, the theologian, the statesman, the lawyer, occupied each in his peculiar study or profession. A mental labourer, to excel in any one of these branches, must know something of every other branch. He must direct indeed the power of his mind to one department of human knowledge; but he cannot conquer that department without a general, and, in many respects, accurate knowledge of every other department. The same principle produces the same effects, whether applied to the solution of the highest problem in geometry, or the polishing of a pin. The division of labour must be regulated by the acquisition of general knowledge.

The division of labour in carrying forward the work of

production is invariably commanded, because it is perfected, by the union of forces, or co-operation. The process of manufacturing a piece of woollen cloth is carried on by division of labour, and by union of forces, working together. In fact, if there were not that ultimate co-operation, the division of labour would be not only less productive than labour without division, but it would not be productive at all. The power of large capital is the power which, as society is arranged, compels this division of parts for the more complete production of a whole. A large cloth manufactory, as we have seen, exhibits itself to the eye chiefly in the division of labour; but all that division ends in a co-operation for the production of a piece of cloth. A ship, with five hundred men on board, each engaged in various duties, and holding different ranks, is an example of the division of labour; but the division ends in a co-operation to carry the ship from one port to another, and, if it be a ship of war, to defend it from the attacks of an enemy. Those who would direct the principle of co-operation into a different channel, by remodelling society into large partnerships, do not, because they cannot, depart, in the least degree, from the principles we have laid down. They must have production, and therefore they must have division of labour; the division of labour involves degrees of skill; the whole requires to be carried on with accumulation of former labour or capital, or it could not exist. The only difference proposed is, that the labourers shall be the capitalists, and that each shall derive a share in the production, partly from what now is represented as his profits as a capitalist, and partly from what is represented as his wages as a labourer; but that all separate property shall be swallowed up in joint property. But we mention this subject here to show that even those who aspire to remodel society cannot change the elements with which it is now constructed, and must work with the same principles, however different may be the names of those principles, and however varied in their application. This is in favour

even of the ultimate success of the principles of co-operation, if they should be found practically to work for the increase of the happiness of mankind ; which would not be effected by equalizing the distribution of wealth, if, at the same time, its production were materially checked. This view of the subject goes to show that no sudden or violent change is necessary. In many things society has always acted on the principles of co-operation. As civilization extends, the number of instances has hitherto increased ; and if there is no natural maximum to the adoption of these principles (which remains to be seen), men may gradually slide more and more into them, and realize all sane expectations, without any reconstruction of their social system,—any pulling down and building up again of their morals or their houses.\*

It is this union of forces which, whether it prevail in a single manufactory, in a manufacturing town viewed in connection with that manufactory, in an agricultural district viewed in connection with a manufacturing town, in a capital viewed in connection with both, in a kingdom viewed in connection with all its parts, and in the whole world viewed in connection with particular kingdoms ;—it is this union of forces which connects the humblest with the highest in the production of utility. The poor lad who tends sheep upon the downs, and the capitalist who spends thousands of pounds for carrying forward a process to make the wool of these sheep into cloth, though at different extremities of the scale, are each united for the production of utility. The differences of power and enjoyment (and the differences of enjoyment are much less than appear upon the surface) between the shepherd boy and the great cloth manufacturer, are apparently necessary for the end of enabling both the shepherd boy and the capitalist to be fed, and clothed, and lodged, by exchanges with other producers. They are also necessary for keeping alive that universal, and, therefore, as it would appear, natural desire for the

\* The subject is examined more fully in Chapters XXV. and XXVI.

improvement of our condition, which, independently of the necessity for the satisfaction of immediate wants, more or less influences the industry of every civilized being as to the hopes of the future. It is this union which constitutes the real dignity of all useful employments, and may make the poorest labourer feel that he is advancing the welfare of mankind as well as the richest capitalist; and that, standing upon the solid foundation of free exchange, the rights of the one are as paramount as the rights of the other, and that the rights of each have no control but the duties of each. We believe that the interests of each are also inseparably united, and that the causes which advance or retard the prosperity of each are one and the same.

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XXII.

1. What is the effect of science on manual labour?
2. Give an instance of false reasoning on the question of scientific application to labour.
3. Why is such reasoning false?
4. What is the first great object of every improvement?
5. How does the working man stand in a double character?
6. How does this affect the question of cheapness or dearness of production?
7. What is the cause of the increase in population?
8. What is the effect on employment of an increase in the population?
9. What are the partial and temporary evils of every improvement?
10. Are these evils increased or diminished by the advance of improvement?
11. Why so?
12. What is the occupation of human power in a highly advanced state?
13. What other principle besides science has produced a change in the condition of labour?
14. Mention a regulation entirely opposed to the principle of a division of labour.
15. What are the evils of such a regulation?
16. What is the great principle which keeps the division of labour in full activity?
17. What are the two great principles against which it is impossible for the working man to contend?

18. How do these principles benefit the working man both as a producer and as a consumer?
19. Give an instance of the evil of a division of labour without freedom of industry.
20. What quality in the labourer is required to regulate the division of labour?
21. Instance this in the higher occupations of industry.
22. By what principle is the division of labour perfected?
23. What are the effects on society of the union of forces?

**CHAPTER XXIII.**

Accumulation—Productive and unproductive consumption—Use of capital—Credit—Security of property—Production applied to the satisfaction of common wants—Increase of comforts—Relations of capitalist and labourer.

DR. WILLIAM BULLEYN, who lived three centuries ago, first gave currency to the saying, that great riches were “like muckhills, a burthen to the land, and offensive to the inhabitants thereof, till their heaps are cast abroad, to the profit of many.” The worthy physician belonged to an age when the class called misers extensively prevailed; and when those who lent out money upon interest were denominated usurers. They were generally objects of public obloquy, and their function was not understood. There are plenty of men still amongst us who, in Dr. Bulleyn’s view of the matter, are impersonations of the muck that is not spread. The muck-spreaders, according to the old notion, were those whose consumption was always endeavouring to outstrip the production that was going forward around them. The latter is by far the larger class at the present day; the former, the more powerful.

Let us endeavour, somewhat more with reference to practical results than we have already attempted, to look at some of the general principles existing in modern society which determine the existence, and regulate the employment, of capital.

Whatever is saved and accumulated is a saving and accumulation of commodities which have been produced. The value of the accumulation is most conveniently expressed

by an equivalent in money; but only a very small part of the accumulation is actually money. A few millions of bullion are sufficient to carry on the transactions of this country. Its accumulations, or capital, which were a few years ago considered to amount to twenty-two hundred million pounds sterling, could not be purchased by several times the amount of all the bullion that exists in the world. A great part of what is saved, therefore, is an accumulation of products suitable for consumption. The moment that they are applied to the encouragement of production, they begin to be consumed. They encourage production only as far as they enable the producers to consume while they are in the act of producing. Accumulation, therefore, is no hindrance to consumption. It encourages consumption as much as expenditure of revenue unaccompanied by accumulation. It enables the things consumed to be replaced, instead of being utterly destroyed.

Whatever is consumed by those who are carrying forward the business of production has been called productive consumption. Whatever, on the other hand, is consumed by those who are not engaged in reproducing, has been called unproductive consumption. The difference may be thus illustrated:—A shoemaker, we will say, rents a shop, works up leather and other materials, uses various tools, burns out candles, and is himself fed and clothed while in the act of producing a pair of shoes. This is productive consumption;—for the pair of shoes represents the value of the materials employed in them, the commodities consumed by the shoemaker during their production, and the wear and tear of the tools applied in making them. If the shoes represent a higher value than what has been consumed, in consequence of the productiveness of the labour of the shoemaker, the difference is net produce, which may be saved, and, with other savings, become capital. But further:—The shoemaker, we will suppose, accumulates profits sufficient to enable him to live without making shoes, or applying himself to any other branch of industry. He now uses no

materials, he employs no tools, but he consumes for the support and enjoyment of existence, without adding anything to the gross produce of society ; this is called unproductive consumption.

The differences, however, between productive and unproductive consumption admit of considerable qualification. We have already described the course of a spendthrift, and of a man of fortune who lives virtuously and economically.\* Whatever may be the scientific definition, no one can say that these, even viewed from the industrial point, can be classed together as unproductive consumers. Productive consumption, according to the strict definition of the earlier economists, is consumption directly applied to the creation of some material product. But a new element was introduced into the question by Mr. Mill's definition—that labour and expenditure are also productive, “ which, without having for their direct object the creation of any useful natural product, or bodily or mental faculty or quality, yet lead indirectly to promote one or other of those ends.” On the other hand, unproductive consumption consists of labour and expenditure exerted or incurred “ uselessly or in pure waste, and yielding neither direct enjoyment nor permanent sources of enjoyment.”

It has been suggested by Dr. Cooper, an American professor, that the parable of “ the ten talents,” in St. Matthew's Gospel, points to the employment of capital for future production. “ For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one ; to every man according to his several ability ; and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.” The last was the

\* See p. 59.

"wicked and slothful," because unprofitable, servant. His was the sin of omission. He ought to have put out the money to "the exchangers," even if he had been afraid to trade with it

Adam Smith has laid it down as an axiom that the proprietor who encroaches upon his capital by extravagance and waste is a positive destroyer of the funds destined for the employment of productive labour. No doubt this is, in many respects, true. He, also, has buried his "one talent." But the common opinion of what are called "the money-making classes" of our time goes somewhat further than this. It is said that, amongst "the middle class" of this country, "the life of a man who leaves no property or family provision, of his own acquiring, at his death, is felt to have been a *failure*."<sup>\*</sup> There are many modes in which the life of an industrious, provident, and able man may have been far other than "a failure," even in a commercial point of view, when he leaves his family with no greater money inheritance than that with which he began the world himself. He may have preserved his family, during the years in which he has lived amongst them, in the highest point of efficiency for future production. He may have consumed to the full extent of his income, producing, but accumulating no money capital for reproductive consumption; and, indirectly, but not less certainly, he may have accumulated whilst he has consumed, so as to enable others to consume profitably. If he have had sons, whom he has trained to manhood, bestowing upon them a liberal education; bringing them up, by honest example, in all trustworthiness; and causing them to be diligently instructed in some calling which requires skill and experience—he is an accumulator. If he have had daughters, whom he has brought up in habits of order and frugality—apt for all domestic employments—taught themselves, and capable of carrying forward the duties of instruction—he has reared those

\* An Essay on the 'Relations between Labour and Capital.' By C. Morrison, p. 34.

who in the honourable capacity of wife, mother, and mistress of a family, influence the industrial powers of the more direct labourers in no small degree; and, being the great promoters of all social dignity and happiness, create a noble and virtuous nation. By the capital thus spent in enabling his children to be valuable members of society, he has accumulated a fund out of his consumption which may be productive at a future day. He has postponed his money contribution to the general stock; but he has not withheld it altogether. He has not been "the wicked and slothful servant." On the other hand, many a man, whose life, according to the mere capitalist doctrine, has not been "a failure," and who has taught his family to attach only a money-value to every object of creation, bequeaths to the world successors whose rapacity, ignorance, unskilfulness, and improvidence, will be so many charges upon the capital of the nation. The "muckhill" will by them be "cast abroad," but it will be devoted to the mere pursuit of sensual indulgence, losing half its fertilizing power, and too often burning up the soil that its judicious application would stimulate. He that has been weak enough, according to this "middle-class" doctrine, not to believe that the whole business of man is to make "a muckhill," may have spent existence in labours, public or private, for the benefit of his fellow creatures; but his life is "a failure!" The greater part of the clergy, of the bar, of the medical profession, of the men of science and literature, of the defenders of their country, of the resident gentry, of the aristocracy, devote their minds to high duties, and some to heroic exertions, without being inordinately anxious to guard themselves against such "a failure." It would perhaps be well if some of those who believe that all virtue is to be resolved into pounds sterling, were to consider that society demands from "the money-making classes" a more than ordinary contribution—not to indiscriminate benevolence, but to those public instruments of production—educational institutions—improved sanitary arrangements—which are best

calculated to diminish the interval between the very rich and the very poor.

Whatever tends to enlighten the great body of the people facilitates individual accumulation. A large portion of the productions of industry, especially amongst the humbler classes of the community, is wasted, in addition to that portion which is enjoyed. Every consumption that is saved by habits of order, by knowing the best way of setting about a thing, by economy in the use of materials, is so much saved of the national capital; and what is saved remains to give new encouragement to the labour of the producer, and to bestow an increase of comforts upon the consumer. Again, the more that professional skill of every sort is based upon real knowledge, the more productive will be the industry of every class of labourers. Above all, sound morals, and pure and simple tastes, are the best preservatives from wasteful expenditure, both in the rich and in the poor; and he that limits his individual gratification to objects worthy of a rational being, has the best chance of acquiring a sufficiency for his wants, and of laying by something to provide a fund for that productive consumption by which the wants of others are supplied.

With these general remarks upon accumulation and consumption, let us proceed to consider some points connected with the application of capital.

The use of capital consists in its advance. It goes before all operations of labour and trade. It is the power that sets labour and trade in motion; just as the power of wind, or water, or steam, gives movement to wheels and pistons.

Let us briefly see how capital operates upon the three great branches of human industry; namely, upon agriculture, manufactures, and commerce.

A farmer having acquired capital, either by the former savings of himself or his fathers, or by borrowing from the savings of others, takes a certain number of acres of land. He changes his capital of money into other things which are equally capital;—into horses, and cows, and sheep,

and agricultural instruments, and seed. He makes an advance in the hope of producing a profit. He therefore sets his horses to work ;—he gets milk from his cows ;—he shears his sheep ;—he fattens his oxen ;—and he puts his tools into the hands of the labourers, to prepare the ground for the reception of his seed. He is paying money away on every side, which he would not do if he did not expect a return, with a profit. By all these operations—by the work of his horses and his labourers—by the increase in number, and the increase in value of his flocks and herds,—and by the harvest after the seed-time,—new produce is created which produces a return of capital, and ought to produce a profit if that capital is properly expended. The hope of profit sets the capital to work, and the capital sets the labour to work. If there were no capital there would be no labour. Capital gives the labourer the power, which he has not in himself, of working for a profit.

A capitalist desires to set up a cotton manufactory. He erects buildings, he purchases machines, he buys cotton-wool, he engages workmen. The annual value of the buildings and of the machines,—that is, the interest upon their cost, added to their loss by wear and tear—the price of raw material, and the wages of the workmen, are all calculated to be paid out of the price at which the cotton thread will be sold. To engage in such large undertakings, in which the returns are slow, there must be great accumulation of capital. To engage in such large undertakings, in which the risk is considerable, there must be abundant enterprise. Without extensive accumulations of capital, which produce enterprise, they could not be engaged in at all.

Capital employed in commerce circulates through the world in a thousand forms ; but it all comes back, in produce to the country that sends it out. Nations that have no accumulated stock, that is, no capital, have no commerce ; and where there is no commerce there are no ships and no sailors ; and there are no comforts besides those

which spring up at the feet of the more fortunate individuals of such nations.

In all these operations of capital upon the enterprise of agriculture, manufactures, and commerce, another power, which is the result of accumulation, is more or less, in most cases, called into action. That power is Credit.

Credit, upon a large scale, arose from the difficulty of transmitting coined money from place to place, and particularly from one country to another; and hence the invention of bills of exchange. A bill of exchange is an order by one person on another, to pay to a specified person, or his order, a sum of money specified, at a certain time and a certain place. It is evident that the bill of exchange travels as much more conveniently than a bag of money, as the bag of money travels more conveniently than the goods which it represents. For instance, a box of hardware from Birmingham might be exchanged for a case of wine from Bordeaux, by a direct barter between the tradesman at Birmingham and the tradesman at Bordeaux; but this sort of operation must be a very limited one. Through the agency of merchants, the hardware finds its way to Bordeaux, and the wine to Birmingham, without any direct exchange between either place, or without either having more of the commodity wanted than is required by the market,—that is the supply proportioned to the demand of each town. Through the division of labour, the merchant who exports the hardware to Bordeaux, and the merchant who imports the wine from Bordeaux, are different people; and there are other people engaged in carrying on other transactions at and with Bordeaux, with whom these merchants come in contact. When, therefore, the merchant at Bordeaux has to pay for the hardware in England, he obtains a bill of exchange from some other merchant who has to receive money from England, for the wine which he has sent there. And thus not only is there no direct barter between the grower of the wine and the manufacturer of the hardware, but the wine and

the hardware are each paid for without any direct remittance of coined money from France to England, but by a transfer of the debt due from one person to another in each country. By this transfer, the transaction between the buyer and the seller is at once brought to maturity ; and by this operation the buyer and seller are each benefited, because the exchange which each desires is rendered incomparably more easy, because more speedy and complete. The same principle applies to transactions between commercial men in the same country. The order for payment, which stands in the place of coined money in one case, is called a Foreign bill of exchange ; in the other an Inland bill of exchange.

The operation of credit in a country whose industry is in an advanced state of activity, is extended over all its commercial transactions, by the necessity of obtaining circulating capital for the carrying forward the production of any commodity, from its first to its last stages. A manufacturer has a large sum expended in workshops, warehouses, machinery, tools. This is called his plant, or fixed capital. He has capital invested also in the raw material which he intends to convert into some article of utility. He works up his raw material ; he makes advances for the labour required in working it up. The article is at length ready for the market. The wholesale dealer, who purchases of the manufacturer, sells to a retailer, who is in the habit of buying upon credit, long or short, because the article remains a certain time in his hands before it reaches the consumer, who ultimately pays for it. From the time when a fleece of wool is taken from the sheep's back in Australia, till it is purchased in the shape of a coat in London, there are extensive outlays in every department, which could not be carried on steadily unless there were facilities of credit from one person concerned in the production to another person concerned in the production,—the whole credit being grounded upon the belief that the debt contracted in so many stages will be repaid by the

sale of the cloth to the consumer. The larger operations of this credit are represented by bills of exchange, or engagements to pay at a given date; and these bills being converted into cash by a banker, furnish a constant supply of consumable commodities to all parties concerned in advancing the production, till the produce arrives in the hands of the consumer. To judge of the extent to which credit is carried in this country, it is only necessary to mention, that five millions sterling are daily paid in bills and cheques by the London bankers alone; that the Bank of England alone, in 1853, discounted bills to the amount of twenty-five millions sterling; and that the note circulation of the United Kingdom is about forty millions. Credit, undoubtedly, if conducted upon fair principles, represents some capital actually in existence, and therefore does not really add to the accumulation or capital of the producers. But it enables men in trade at once to have stock and circulating capital—to use even their houses and shops and manufactories and implements; and to give, at the same time, a security to others upon that fixed capital. This process, is, as it were, as if they coined that fixed capital. The credit, which is rendered as secure as possible in all its stages by the accumulating securities of the drawer, acceptor, and endorsers of a bill of exchange, brings capital into activity,—it carries it directly to those channels in which it may be profitably employed,—it conducts it to those channels by a systematic mode of payment for its use, which we call interest, or discount;—and it therefore carries forward accumulation to its highest point of productiveness.

If the reader will turn to the passage in our third chapter, where Tanner describes the refusal of the traders to give him credit, he will see how capital, advanced upon credit, sets industry in motion. The Indians had accumulated no store of skins to exchange for the trader's store of guns, ammunition, traps, and blankets. The trader, although he possessed the articles which the Indians

wanted, refused to advance them upon the usual credit; and they were consequently as useless to the Indians as if they had remained in a warehouse at Liverpool or Glasgow. When the credit was taken away from the Indians, they could no longer be exchangers. Their own necessities for clothing were too urgent to enable them to turn their attention from that supply to accumulate capital for exchange, after the winter had passed away. They hunted only for themselves. The trader went without his skins, and the Indians without their blankets. Doubtless, the keenness of commercial activity soon saw that this state of things was injurious even to the more powerful party, for the accustomed credit was presently restored to the Indians. It was the only means by which that balance of power could be quickly restored which would enable the parties again to become exchangers. Every exchange presupposes a certain equality in the exchangers; and credit, therefore, from the capitalist to the non-capitalist, must, in many cases, be the first step towards any transaction of mutual profit. If the Indians had adopted the resolution of Tanner, to do without the blankets for the winter, and had substituted the more imperfect clothing of skins,—and if the traders had persevered in their system of refusing credit, that is, of advancing capital,—the exchange of furs must have been suspended, until, by incessant industry, and repeated self-denial, the Indians had become capitalists themselves. They, probably, after a long series of laborious accumulations, might have done without the credit—that is, have not consumed the goods which they received before they were in a condition to give their own goods as equivalents; and then, as it usually happens in the exchanges of civilized society, they would have received a higher reward for their labour. The credit rendered the labour of the Indians less severe, inasmuch as it allowed them to work with the aid of the accumulations of others, instead of with their own accumulations. But it doubtless gave the traders advantage, and justly so, in the terms of the

exchange. If the Indians had brought their furs to the mart where the dealers had brought their blankets, there would have been exchange of capital for capital. As the Indians had not accumulated any furs, and were only hoping to accumulate, there was, on the part of the white traders, an advance of a present good for a remote equivalent. The traders had doubtless suffered by the casualties which prevented the Indians completing their engagements. They made a sudden, and therefore an unjust, change in their system. The forbearance of the Indians shows their respect for the rights of property, and their consequent appreciation of their own interests. They might, possessing the physical superiority, have seized the blankets and ammunition of the traders. If so, their exchanges would have been at an end; the capital would have gone to stimulate other industry; the Indians would have ripped up the goose with the golden eggs.

It is easy to see that the employment of capital, through the agency of credit, in all the minute channels of advanced commerce, must wholly depend upon the faith which one man has in the stability and the honesty of another; and also upon the certainty of the protection of the laws which establish security of property to enforce the fulfilment of the contract.

It is necessary to establish this point of the security of property, as one of the rights, and we may add as the greatest right, of industry;—and therefore, at the risk of being thought tedious, we may call attention to the general state of the argument in reply to some who hold that the rights of property, and the rights of labour, are antagonistic.

The value of an article produced is the labour required for its production.

Capital, the accumulation of past labour, represents the entire amount of that labour which is not consumed;—it is the old labour stored up for exchange with new labour.

Those who attach an exclusive value to new labour as

distinguished from old labour—or labour as distinguished from capital—say that the new production shall be stimulated by the old production, without allowing the old production to be exchanged against the new;—that is, that the old production shall be an instrument for the reward of new labour, but not a profitable one to its possessor.

The doctrine therefore amounts to this: that labour shall be exchanged with labour, but not with the produce of labour,—or that there shall be no exchange whatever;—for if the present labourers are to have the sole benefit of the capital, the principle of exchange, in which both exchangers benefit, is destroyed. There must be an end of all exchanges when the things to be exchanged are not equally desired by both parties. If the capitalist is to lend or give the capital to the labourer without a profit, or without a perfect freedom which would entitle him to withhold it if no profit could be obtained, the balance is destroyed between capital and labour. Accumulation is then at an end; because the security of the thing accumulated to the accumulator is at an end. The security is at an end, because if the new labour is to have the advantage of the old labour without compensation or exchange, the new labour must take the old labour by force or fraud; for the new cannot proceed without the old;—labour cannot stir without capital. Accumulation, therefore, being at an end, labour for an object beyond the wants of an hour is at an end. Society resolves itself into its first elements.

Strabo, the ancient geographer, has described a tribe amongst whom the title of the priest to the priesthood was acquired by having murdered his predecessor; and consequently the business of the priest in possession was not to discharge the duties of the priesthood, but to watch, sword in hand, to defend himself against the new claimant to the office. If the principle were to be recognized, that the accumulation of *former* labour belongs to the *present* labourers; and that the best title to the accumulation is to have added nothing towards it, but only be willing to add,—

the title of the labourers in possession would require to be maintained by a constant encounter with new claimants ; as the priest of Strabo, who had dispossessed the previous priest, had to dread a similar expulsion from his office by a new violence.

The course of national misery resulting from national disorders always begins with financial embarrassment ; by the destruction of capital, or its withdrawal from all useful works. Capital was circulated only because it could be circulated with security. If the present capitalists were driven away, as some reasoners would imply might easily be done, and the labourers were left to work the tools and steam-engines—to labour in the manufactories, and to inhabit the houses of the present capitalists,—production could not go on an hour, unless the appropriation of the plunder were secured to the individual plunderers.

In speaking of credit, then, we naturally turn to the only foundation upon which credit rests—the security of property. Commercial men, who know how easily credit is destroyed by individual guilt or imprudence, also know how easily it is interrupted, generally by a combination of circumstances over which an individual, apart from a nation, has no control. The instant that any circumstances take place which weaken the general confidence in the security of property, credit is withdrawn. The plant remains—the tools and warehouses stand—the shops are open ; but production languishes, labour is suspended. The stocks of consumable commodities for the maintenance of labour may still in part exist, but they do not reach the labourer through the usual channels. Then men say, and say truly, confidence is shaken ; the usual relations of society are disturbed. Capital fences itself round with prudence—hesitates to go on accumulating—refuses to put its existence in peril—withdraws in great part from production—

“ Spreads its light wings, and in a moment flies.”

Within these twenty years we have had before our eyes a

fearful example of the universal evil created by the sudden loss of confidence in the security of property. The revolution of 1848, which overthrew the government of Louis Philippe, was associated with a general belief that the whole fabric of society was about to be shaken in the overthrow of capital. The capital was instantly withdrawn from circulation; there was no exchange; there was no labour. The more immediate sufferers were the workmen themselves; and the mode in which the ruling power relieved them by giving forced employment was wholly unavailing, except as a temporary expedient. After several dreadful months of tumult and bloodshed, a little confidence was restored by the pressure of an armed force; and when at length a government was established that rested upon security of property, it was hailed as the greatest of all blessings, although accompanied with some evils to which Englishmen, especially, cannot shut their eyes. When capital and labour could once more work in a safe union, France quickly developed those great natural resources with which she is blessed; and the ingenuity of her people was again called into activity, to carry forward and perfect those resources by higher and higher exertions of science and skill.

When the great body of the people of a country are so generally educated as to know that it is the interest of the humblest and the poorest that property shall be secure, there will be little occasion for fencing round property with guards, against the secret violence of the midnight robber, or the open daring of the noonday mob. "It is an enlightened moral public sentiment that must spread its wings over our dwellings, and plant a watchman at our doors." \* A very little insecurity destroys the working of capital. The cloth trade of Verviers, a town in France, was utterly ruined, because the morals of the people in the town were so bad, and the police so ineffectual, that the thefts in the various stages of the manufacture amounted

\* Everett's 'Address to the Working Man's Party.'

to eight per cent. upon the whole quantity produced. The trade of the place, therefore, was destroyed; and the capital went to encourage labour in places where the rights of property were better respected.

But, generally speaking, the security of property is not so much weakened by plunder, as by those incessant contentions which harass the march of capital and labour; and keep up an irritation between the classes of the capitalists and the labourers, who ought to be united in the most intimate compact for a common good. These irritations most frequently exhibit themselves in the shape of combinations for the advance of wages. We have no hesitation in declaring our opinion that it is the positive duty of the working-man to obtain as high wages as he can extract out of the joint products of capital and labour; and that he has an equal right to unite with other workmen in making as good a bargain as he can, consistently with the rights of others, for his contribution of industry to the business of production. But it is also necessary for us to declare our conviction that, in too many cases, the working men attempt an object which no single exertion, and no union however formidable or complete, can ever accomplish. They attempt to force wages beyond the point at which they could be maintained, with reference to the demand for the article produced;—and if they succeed they extinguish the demand, and therefore extinguish the power of working at any wages. They drive the demand, and therefore the supply, into new channels;—and they thrust out capital from amongst them, to work in other places where it can work with freedom and security. Above all, such combinations, and the resistance which they call up, have a tendency to loosen the bonds of mutual regard which ought to subsist between capitalists and labourers. Their real interests are one and the same.

All men are united in one bond of interests, and rights, and duties; and although each of us have particular interests, the parts which we play in society are so frequently

changing, that under one aspect we have each an interest contrary to that which we have under another aspect. It is in this way that we find ourselves suddenly bound closely with those against whom we thought ourselves opposed a moment before; and thus no class can ever be said to be inimical to another class. In the midst, too, of all these instantaneous conflicts and unions, we are all interchangeably related in the double interest of capitalists and consumers,—that is, we have each and all an interest that property shall be respected, and that production shall be carried forward to its utmost point of perfection, so as to make its products accessible to all. The power of production, in its greatest developments of industry, is really addressed to the satisfaction of the commonest wants. If production, as in despotic countries, were principally labouring that some men might wear cloth of gold whilst others went naked, then we should say that production was exclusively for the rich oppressor. But, thank God, the man who *exclusively* wears “purple and fine linen every day” has ceased to exist. The looms do not work for him alone, but for the great mass of the people. It is to the staple articles of consumption that the capitals of manufactures and commerce address their employment. Their employment depends upon the ability of the great body of the people to purchase what they produce. The courtiers of the fifteenth century in France carried boxes of sugar-plums in their pockets, which they offered to each other as a constant compliment; the courtiers of the next age carried gingerbread in the same way; and lastly, the luxury of snuff drove out the sugar-plums and the gingerbread. But the consumption of tobacco would never have furnished employment to thousands, and a large revenue to the state, if the use of snuff had rested with the courtiers. The producers, consequently, having found the largest, and therefore the most wealthy, class of consumers amongst the working men, care little whether the peer wears a silk or a velvet coat, so that the peasant has a clean shirt. When

capital and labour work with freedom and security, the wants of all are supplied, because there is cheap production. It is a bad state of society where

“One flaunts in rags, one flutters in brocade.”

Those who like the brocade may still wear it in a state of things where the rights of industry are understood ; but the rags, taking the average condition of the members of society, are banished to the lands from which capital is driven,—while those who labour with skill, and therefore with capital, have decent clothes, comfortable dwellings, wholesome food, abundant fuel, medical aid in sickness, the comfort and amusement of books in health. These goods, we have no hesitation in saying, all depend upon the security of property ; and he that would destroy that security by force or fraud is the real destroyer of the comforts of those humbler classes whose rights he pretends to advocate.

The principles which *we* maintain, that the interests of all men, and of the poorer classes especially, are necessarily advanced in a constantly increasing measure by the increase of capital and skill, have been put so strikingly by a philosophical writer, that we cannot forbear quoting so valuable an authority in support and illustration of our opinions :—

“The advantage conferred by the augmentation of our physical resources, through the medium of increased knowledge and improved art, have this peculiar and remarkable property,—that they are in their nature diffusive, and cannot be enjoyed in any exclusive manner by a few. An eastern despot may extort the riches and monopolize the art of his subjects for his own personal use ; he may spread around him an unnatural splendour and luxury, and stand in strange and preposterous contrast with the general penury and discomfort of his people ; he may glitter in jewels of gold and raiment of needle-work ; but the wonders of well-contrived and executed manufacture which

we use daily, and the comforts which have been invented, tried, and improved upon by thousands, in every form of domestic convenience, and for every ordinary purpose of life, can never be enjoyed by him. To produce a state of things in which the physical advantages of civilized life can exist in a high degree, the stimulus of *increasing comforts and constantly elevated desires* must have been felt by millions; since it is not in the power of a few individuals to create that wide demand for useful and ingenious applications, which alone can lead to great and rapid improvements, unless backed by that arising from the speedy diffusion of the same advantages among the mass of mankind.” \*

In looking back upon all the various circumstances which we have exhibited as necessary for carrying industry to the greatest point of productiveness, we think that we must have established satisfactorily that the two great elements which concur in rendering labour in the highest degree beneficial, are, 1st, the accumulated results of past labour, and 2nd, the contrivances by which manual labour is assisted,—those contrivances being derived from the accumulations of knowledge. Capital and skill, therefore, are essential to the productive power of labour. The different degrees in which each possesses capital and skill make the difference between an English manufacturer and a North American savage; and the less striking gradations in the productive power of the English manufacturer of the present time, and the English manufacturer of five hundred years ago, may be all resolved into the fact that the one has at his command a very large amount of capital and skill, and that the other could only command a very small amount of the same great elements of production.

We think, also, that we have shown that the accumulation of former labour in the shape of tangible wealth, and the accumulation of former labour in the shape of the no less real wealth of knowledge, are processes which go on

\* Sir John Herschel’s ‘ Discourse on the Study of Natural Philosophy.’

together, each supporting, directing, and regulating the other. Knowledge is the offspring of some leisure resulting from a more easy supply of the physical wants; and that leisure cannot exist unless capital exists, which allows some men to live upon former accumulations. Capital, therefore, may be said to be the parent of skill, as capital and skill united are the encouragers and directors of profitable labour.

We have shown that the only foundation of accumulation is security of property—we have shown, too, that labour is the most sacred of properties. It results, therefore, that in any state of society in which the laws did not equally protect the capitalist and the labourer as free exchangers, each having the most absolute command over his property, compatible with a due regard to the rights of the other,—in such a state, where there was no real freedom and no real security, there would be very imperfect production ; and production being imperfect, all men, the capitalists and the labourers, would be equally destitute, weak, ignorant, and miserable.

It is under these several conditions, all working together with united force, that the entire labour of this country, and indeed of all other countries advanced in civilization, must now be directed. The enormous increase of productiveness which we have exhibited in so many operations of industry, is chiefly the result of production carried on upon a large scale, and working with every possible application of science. It is in this sense that Knowledge is Power ; and skilled labour is a part of that power.

The mode in which the respective proportions of capitalist and labourer are assigned in the division of the products of industry, are called by one, Profit; by the other, Wages. If we were writing a treatise on Political Economy, we should have to regard Rent as distinct from the profits of capital. But for our purpose this is unnecessary. We proceed, then, to consider the practical relations of Profit and Wages, as they exist amongst us. Unquestionably the

only solid foundation for these relations must be equal justice ; without which there can be neither permanent prosperity nor increasing intelligence.

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XXIII.

1. By what is the value of accumulation most conveniently expressed ?
2. Would all the bullion in the world be sufficient to purchase the whole capital of this country ?
3. Of what does that capital consist ?
4. When do accumulated products begin to be consumed ?
5. Give an instance of the difference between productive and unproductive consumption.
6. Give an instance of consumption which is indirectly productive.
7. Give an instance of accumulation which is not beneficially productive.
8. How is individual accumulation facilitated by general enlightenment ?
9. How does capital operate upon agriculture ? How upon manufacture ? How upon commerce ?
10. What other power is called into action in these operations of capital ?
11. What is the operation of a bill of exchange ?
12. What are the advantages of an enlarged system of credit ?
13. What does credit, conducted upon fair principles, represent ?
14. Give an example of how credit advanced upon capital sets industry in motion.
15. Upon what does the employment of capital through the agency of credit depend ?
16. Demonstrate the folly of asserting the rights of labour in opposition to the rights of property.
17. What are the evils of those contentions which weaken the security of property ?
18. What causes the real interests of all classes to be the same ?
19. To what class is production principally addressed ?
20. On what does the power of production depend ?
21. Recapitulate the principles established in the foregoing pages.
22. In what sense is Knowledge Power ?

**CHAPTER XXIV.**

Natural law of wages—State-laws regulating wages—Enactments regulating consumption—The labour-fund and the want-fund—Ratio of capital to population—State of industry at the end of the seventeenth century—Rise of manufactures—Wages and prices—Turning over capital.

THE old chroniclers relate that our Norman king, Henry I., had once a terrible vision, of soldiers, and priests, and peasants, surrounding his bed, one band succeeding another, and threatening to kill him. The legend became the subject of illuminated drawings in an ancient MS. preserved at Oxford, and one of these represented the tillers of the land, with spade, and fork, and scythe, demanding justice. The cultivators were loaded with heavy exactions, so great that



the tenants of the crown even offered to give up their ploughs to the king. They ploughed, but they reaped not themselves. In such a state of things there could be no accumulation, and no profitable labour. The funds for supplying the wages of labour were exhausted. The country was depopulated.

During the next two centuries, the condition of the people had been materially improved. Capital had increased, and so had population. But capital had increased faster than population, and hence the improvement. The class of free labourers had for the most part succeeded to the old class of villeins. Labourers for hire, without understanding the great principles which govern the rate of wages, any more than did their masters, would practically seek to measure their earnings according to those principles. The lawgivers determined the contrary.\* The Statute of Labourers, 23rd Edward III., says:—"Because a great part of the people, and especially of workmen and servants, late died of the pestilence, many, seeing the necessity of masters and great scarcity of servants, will not serve unless they receive excessive wages." They were therefore to be compelled to serve, and they were to serve at the same wages which they had received three years before. The ratio of population, in consequence of the pestilence, had fallen considerably below the ratio of accumulated capital seeking to employ labour. Under the natural laws of demand and supply, the scarcity of labourers and the excess of capital would have raised the wages of labour. These laws were not to operate. Forty years after this enactment of Edward III., comes the statute of Richard II., which says that "Servants and labourers will not, nor by a long season would, serve and labour without outrageous and excessive hire, and much more than hath been given to such servants and labourers in any time past, so that for scarcity of the said

\* We have already noticed the ancient oppressive laws for the regulation of labour, in Chap. VII. We recur to them here more particularly, as illustrating the principle of Wages.

servants and labourers the husbands and land-tenants may not pay their rents, nor scarcely live upon their lands.” Here was a distinct conflict between the capitalists seeking profits and the labourers seeking wages. The law-makers resolved that the hires of the servants and labourers should be “put in certainty;” and they fixed the rate of wages throughout the land. They settled the contest in favour of profits, arbitrarily. To avoid this interference with the due payments of their labour in proportion to the ratio of capital and labour, the husbandmen might have fled to the towns, and some did so. But they were met there by the enactment that the artificers should be subject to the same controlling power, and that the boy who had laboured at the plough and cart till he was twelve years old should continue so to labour for the rest of his life. This state of things was truly slavery without the name. Some such marvellous folly and injustice went on for several centuries. But, regulating wages, the laws also undertook to regulate the cost of food and of clothing—their quality, and their consumption—how much people should eat, and what coats they should wear. These absurdities also went on for centuries—of course under a perpetual system of open violation or secret evasion. The people, we may safely conclude, never fully believed what their rulers told them of their prodigious kindness in managing private affairs so much better than individuals could themselves. Mr. Sergeant Thorpe, Judge of Assize for the Northern Circuit, in a charge to the grand jury in 1648, tells them to be vigilant against servants taking higher wages than those allowed by the justices,—to enforce the laws against everybody who bought every thing for the sustenance of man, with intent to make a profit by it—against every tradesman who did not produce his wares in conformity with the statutes;—wonderful laws, which would not permit the tanner to sell a piece of leather that had not been kept twelve months in the tan-pit, and which forbade the cloth-maker to use lime in whitening linen cloth. “And thus you see,” says solemn Mr. Sergeant

Thorpe, "how the wisdom of the common laws of this nation, and of the parliaments, from time to time, hath provided for the security and ease of the people; and hath furnished us with a salve for every sore; and gives us rules and instructions how to govern ourselves, that we may be helpful and useful to one another."\* Instead of providing the salve, it probably would have been better not to have made the sore.

But, after all, it is scarcely candid to laugh at the wisdom of "the good old times" in regulating trades, when in our own day we have had excise laws which interfered in the most absurd way with production, and some of which still interfere. Nor can we look with perfect complacency at the manifest impolicy and injustice of fixing the rate of wages, when, within the last quarter of a century, we have had justices at work all over the country to keep down the wages of labour, by paying labourers not in proportion to their earnings, but according to their necessities; and raising up a fund for the encouragement of idleness and improvidence, by a diversion of the real funds for the maintenance of labour. The Poor Laws, as they were administered in the beginning and middle of the last half century, did this evil, and a great deal more; and persons of influence, with the most benevolent intentions, could see no difference between the parish allowance to able-bodied labourers, and the wages which they could have really commanded for their labour, if this opposing fund had not been called into action. In those times, and even after a strenuous effort had been made to bring about an improvement, educated gentlemen used to say—"something must be done to give the labourers employment upon fair wages;" and they were accustomed to believe that "some plan should be devised whereby work should be at hand."† These gentlemen, and many others, did not understand that

\* See the full 'Charge' in the 'Harleian Miscellany.'

† See the Evidence on Poor-laws before a Committee of House of Commons, 1837.

there is a natural fund for the maintenance of labour which is to produce such beneficial results : that this fund cannot be increased but by the addition of the results of *more* profitable labour ; that whatever is paid out of the fund for the support of unprofitable labour has a direct tendency to lower the rate at which the profitable labour is paid,—to prevent the payment of “fair wages ;” and that there is a “plan” which requires no devising, because our necessities are constantly calling it into operation,—the natural law of exchange, which makes “work at hand” wherever there is capital to pay for it. Such reasoners also held that the labourers were not to seek for the fund “about the country on an uncertainty ;” but that the work for the labourers “should be at hand”—“it should be certain.” This clearly was not the ordinary labour-fund. That is neither always at hand, nor is it always certain. It shifts its place according to its necessity for use ; it is uncertain in its distribution in proportion to the demand upon it. The fund which was to work this good was clearly not the labour-fund—it was the *want-fund* ; and the mistake that these gentlemen and many others fell into was that the want-fund had qualities of far greater powers of usefulness than the labour-fund ; that the parish purse was the purse of Fortunatus, always full ; that the parish labour field was like the tent of the Indian queen in the Arabian tale—you could carry it in the palm of your hand, and yet it would give shelter to an army of thousands. All these fallacies are now, happily, as much exploded as the laws for the regulation of wages and the price of commodities. The real labour-fund—the accumulation of a portion of the results of past labour—is the only fund which can find profitable work and pay fair wages.

It is extremely difficult to ascertain the ratio of Capital to Population at any particular period ; yet some approximations may be made, which, in a degree, may indicate the activity or the inertness of the labour-fund, in regard to the condition of the labourer.

At the end of the seventeenth century, about half the land of England and Wales was, according to the best authorities, held to be under cultivation, either as arable or pasture. As the whole area of England and Wales is about thirty-seven millions of acres, this would show a cultivation of eighteen million five hundred thousand acres. The entire quantity of wheat, rye, barley, oats, pease, beans, and vetches, grown upon these eighteen million and a half acres, was estimated at less than ten millions of quarters, wheat being little more than a sixth of the whole produce. The quantity of stock annually fattened for food was even more inconsiderable. We may safely assume that in a century and a half the amount of agricultural produce in England has increased fivefold. Two-thirds of the whole area of England and Wales are now under cultivation; for in the Census returns of 1851 we have twenty-five million acres of farm holdings, occupied by two hundred and twenty-five thousand farmers. In the calculations of Gregory King, in 1688, the number of farmers was given at a hundred and fifty thousand; but the number of lesser freeholders, who were doubtless cultivators, was also a hundred and twenty thousand. The produce of the land has increased at a greater rate than the increase of population. According to the commonly received estimates, the population of England and Wales was about five millions and a half, perhaps six millions, at the end of the seventeenth century; it is now eighteen millions. The inhabited houses, according to the hearth-books of 1690,\* were one million three hundred and twenty thousand. In 1851 they were three million two hundred and seventy-eight thousand. The hearth-books of 1685 show that, of the houses of the kingdom, five hundred and fifty-four thousand had only one chimney—they were mere hovels.

\* Hearth-money was a tax upon houses according to the number of chimneys, at the rate of two shillings a chimney, for every house having more than two chimneys.

Gregory King has given "A Scheme of the income and Expense of the several Families in England, calculated for the year 1688." He considers that, in the aggregate, there were five hundred thousand families who were accumulators—that is to say, whose annual expense was less than their incomes. He values this accumulation at three millions. The number of persons comprised in the accumulating families was two million six hundred and seventy-five thousand. Of this number only one-fifth belonged to the trading classes—merchants, shopkeepers and tradesmen, artisans and handicrafts. The remainder were the land-holders, farmers, lawyers, clergy, holders of office, and persons in liberal arts and sciences. But there was a large non-accumulating class, consisting of two million eight hundred and twenty-five thousand, whom he puts down as "decreasing the wealth of the kingdom,"—that is to say, that their annual expense exceeded their income; and this excess he computes at six hundred and twenty-two thousand pounds, which reduces the annual national accumulation to two million four hundred thousand pounds. The positive plunderers of the national capital were thirty thousand vagrants, such as gipsies, thieves, and beggars. We were in a happier condition than Scotland at the same period; where, according to Fletcher of Saltoun, there were two hundred thousand "people begging from door to door," out of a population of one million, for whose suppression he saw no remedy but slavery. We were more favoured, too, than France; where, as Vauban records, in 1698, more than a tenth part of the population of sixteen millions were beggars, in the extremity of hunger and nakedness.\* But we may be sure that in England the two million eight hundred and twenty-five thousand "labouring people, out-servants, cottagers, and paupers," who are put down by Gregory King as non-accumulators, were working upon very insufficient means, and that they were constantly pressing upon the fund for the maintenance of profitable

\* See the passage in Dunoyer, 'Liberté du Travail,' tom. i. p. 16.

labour. It is a curious fact that he classes "cottagers and paupers" together; but we can account for it when we consider how much of the land of the country was uninclosed, and how many persons derived a scanty subsistence from the commons, upon which they were "squatters," living in mean huts with "one chimney."

The small number of "artisans and handicrafts," comprising only sixty thousand families, is of itself a sufficient indication that our manufactures, properly so called, were of very trifling amount. In various parts of this volume we have incidentally mentioned how slowly the great industries of this country grew into importance. At the period of which we are now speaking, nearly every article of clothing was, in many districts, of domestic production, and was essentially connected with the tillage of the land. The flax and the wool were spun at home; the stockings were knit; the shoes were often untanned hide nailed upon heavy clogs. Furniture there was little beyond the rough bench and the straw bed. The fuel came from the woods and hedges. About forty thousand of the cottages mentioned in the hearth-books had some land belonging to them; and, to prevent the growth of a "squatter" population, it was the business of the Grand Jury to present, as a nuisance, all newly-erected cottages that had not four acres of land attached to them. There was a contest perpetually going on between the more favoured portion who had regular means of subsistence, and the unhappy many who were pressing upon those means, in all the various forms of pauperism. One of the means of keeping down this class was to prevent them having dwellings.

Towards the end of the seventeenth century, then, we see that there was some accumulation of capital, however small. There was then a vague feeling amongst the accumulators that something might be saved by setting the unemployed and the starving to other work than was provided for them in the fields. Population was pressing hard upon capital. It pressed, chiefly, in the shape of

increasing demands upon the poor rate. The remedy universally proposed was "to set the poor to work." The notion was extremely crude as to the mode in which this was to be effected; but there was a sort of universal agreement expressed by sober economists as well as visionary projectors, that the more general introduction of manufactures would remedy the evil. Of course, the first thing to be done was to prohibit foreign manufactures by enormous duties; and then we were to go to work vigorously at home, knowing very little of the arts in which foreigners were greatly our superiors. But we were to go to work, not in the ordinary way of profitable industry, by the capitalist working for profit employing the labourer for wages, but by withholding from the poor the greater part of the want-fund, and converting it into a labour-fund, by setting up manufactures under the management of the poor-law administrators. Here, in these "workhouses," was the linen trade to be cultivated. Mr. Firmin set up a workhouse in Aldersgate Street, of the results of which, after four years, he thus speaks:—"This, I am sure, is the worst that can be said of it, that it hath not been yet brought to bear its own charges." Sir Matthew Hale was for setting up a public manufactory of coarse cloth, of which the charges for materials and labour in producing thirty-two yards would be 11*l.* 15*s.* He calculated that the cloth, if sold, would only yield 12*l.* The excellent Judge does not make any calculation of the cost of implements, or rent, or superintendence. He desires to employ fifty-six poor people, who are paid by the parish 400*l.* per annum, and by this cloth manufacture he will give them the 400*l.* for their work, and save the parish their cost. One thing is forgotten. The pauper labour yielding no profit, and consequently preventing any accumulation, the labourers must be kept down to the minimum of subsistence, which appears to be about seven pounds per annum for each labourer. The earnings of the artisan and handicraft are estimated by Gregory King at thirty-eight

pounds per annum. These were the wages of skilled labourers. The pauper labourers were unskilled. If these schemes had not broken down by their own weight, and workhouse manufactories had gone on producing a competition of unskilled labourers with skilled, the rate of wages would have been more and more deteriorated, and the amount of poor seeking workhouse employment as a last resource more and more increased. Experience has very satisfactorily demonstrated that these schemes for employing the poor ought to be strictly limited to the production of articles of necessity for their own consumption. Even the production of such articles is scarcely remunerating,—that is, the produce scarcely returns the cost of materials and superintendence. Even the boasted Free and Pauper Colonies of Holland have turned out to be commercial failures. They are not self-sustaining. The want of skill in the colonists, and their disinclination to labour, having no immediate individual benefit from their labours, have combined to produce the result that one good day-labourer is worth five colonists working in common. There are also tenants of small colonial farms, at a low rent, and having many advantages. They are not so prosperous as the little farmers out of the colony, who pay a higher rent, and have no incidental benefits. The solution of the question is thus given:—“The certainty that the society will maintain them, whether they save or not, has an unfavourable influence on their habits.”\*

The increase of population was very small during the first fifty years of the eighteenth century. It absolutely declined at one period. The two million four hundred thousand pounds that were calculated by Gregory King as annual savings, were probably more and more trenched upon by pauperism and war, by “malice domestic, foreign levy,” under a disputed succession. The upper classes

\* Sir John M'Neil's ‘Report on Free and Pauper Colonies in Holland,’ 1853. .

were licentious and extravagant; the labourers in towns were drunkards to an excess that now seems hardly credible. Hogarth's 'Gin Lane' was scarcely an exaggeration of the destitution and misery that attended this national vice. About the middle of the century, or soon after, sprang up many of the great mechanical improvements which made us a manufacturing people; and which in half a century added a third to the population. In spite of the most expensive war in which England had ever been engaged, the accumulated capital, chiefly in consequence of these discoveries and improvements, had increased as fast as the population in the second fifty years of the eighteenth century. In the present century the population has doubled in fifty years; and the accumulated capital has more than doubled. Population has been recently increasing at the rate of one and a half per cent.; capital has been increasing at the rate of two and a half per cent.\* It is this accumulation which has been steadily raising the rate of wages in many employments of industry; whilst the chemical and mechanical arts, the abundant means of rapid transit, the abolition or reduction of duties upon great articles of consumption, and the freedom of commercial intercourse, have given all the receivers of wages a greatly increased command of articles of necessity, and even of what used to be thought luxuries.

There is nothing more difficult in economical inquiries than the attempt to ascertain what was the actual rate of wages at any given period. The fluctuations in the value of money enter into this question, more or less, at every period of our history. We find the nominal rate of wages constantly increasing, from one generation to another, but we cannot at all be certain that the real rate is increasing. That nominal rate always requires to be compared with the prices of the necessaries of life. What pertains to wages pertains to all fixed money-payments. A Fellow of a college applied to Bishop Fleetwood to know if he could conscien-

\* Morison's 'Labour and Capital,' Appendix B.

tiously hold his fellowship, when the statutes of the college, made in the time of Henry VI., say that no one shall so hold who has an estate of 5*l.* a year. The Fellow had an estate of much larger nominal amount. The Bishop made a very valuable collection of the prices of commodities, and he thus answers the conscientious inquirer :—

“ If for 20 years together (from 1440 to 1460) the common price of wheat were 6*s.* 8*d.* the quarter, and if from 1686 to 1706 the common price of wheat were 40*s.* the quarter, 'tis plain that 5*l.* in H. VI.'s time would have purchased 15 quarters of wheat; for which you must have paid, for these last 20 years, 30 pound. So that 30 pound *now*, would be no more than equivalent to 5 pound in the reign of H. VI. Thus if oats, from 1440 to 1460, were generally at 2*s.* the quarter, and from 1686 to 1706 were at 12*s.* the quarter, 'tis manifest that 12*s. now* would be no more than equivalent to 2*s. then*, which is but a sixth part of it. Thus, if beans were *then* 5*s.* and *now* 30*s.* the quarter, the same proportion would be found betwixt 5*l.* and 30*l.* But you must not expect that everything will answer thus exactly. Ale, for instance, was, during the time of your founder, at three-halfpence the gallon; but it has been, ever since you were born, at 8*d.* at the least: which is but five times more and a little over. So that 5*l.* heretofore (betwixt 1440 and 1460) would purchase no more ale than somewhat above 25*l.* would *now*. Again, good cloth, such as was to serve the best doctor in your University for his gown, was (between 1440 and 1460) at 3*s.* 7*d.* the yard; at which rate, 5*l.* would have purchased 29 yards, or thereabouts. *Now* you may purchase that quantity of fine cloth at somewhat less, I think, than 25*l.* So that 25*l. now* would be an equivalent to your 5*l. then*, 250 years since, if you pay about 18*s.* the yard for your cloth. I think I have good reason to believe that beef, mutton, bacon, and other common provisions of life, were six times as cheap in H. VI.'s reign as they have been for these last 20 years. And therefore I can see no cause why 28*l.* or 30*l.* per an. should

now be accounted a greater estate than 5*l.* was heretofore betwixt 1440 and 1460."\*

But we are not to infer from these considerations that the wages of labour ought to fluctuate with the prices of commodities, or that practically they do so fluctuate. If this were the principle of wages, every improvement which lowers the price of commodities would lower the rewards of labour. Almost every article of necessity is cheaper now than it was ten years ago, taking the average of years; and the larger amount of this cheapness has been produced by improvements in manufactures, by facilities of communication, and by the removal of taxation. At the same time, taking the average of years and of employments, wages have risen. There must be some general cause in operation to produce this result.

The wages of labour cannot be reduced below the standard necessary to support the labourer and his family whilst he produces. If he cannot obtain this support he ceases to be a producer. He is starved out of existence, or he falls upon the public fund for the support of want, or he becomes a beggar or a thief. In states of society where there is no accumulating capital, the labourer necessarily receives low wages, because he maintains himself at the minimum of subsistence. Our poet Spenser, writing nearly three centuries ago upon the miseries of Ireland, describes the cottiers as inhabiting "swine-sties rather than houses." Swift, long after, describes the same state of things:—"There are thousands of poor wretches who think themselves blessed if they can obtain a hut worse than the squire's dog-kennel, and an acre of ground for a potato plantation." This condition of society unhappily lasted up to our own day. If the Irish cottier had been a labourer for wages instead of deriving his miserable living direct from the land, he would have been no better off, unless his desire for something higher than the coarsest food, and the most wretched lodging, had set some limit to the increase

\* 'Chronicon Preciosum,' 1745, p. 136.

of population beyond the increase of capital. Population necessarily increases faster than subsistence when there is no restraint upon the increase by the disposition to accumulate on the part of the labourer. There may be accumulation in the form of his money-savings ; and there may be accumulation in an increase of the conveniences of life by which he is surrounded. When there is neither money saved nor comforts increased—when there is no accumulation for the gratification of other wants than that of food—competition is driving the labourers to the lowest point of misery. The competition in Ireland was for the possession of land, at an extravagant rent, out of the labour upon which the cottier could only obtain the very lowest amount of necessaries for his subsistence. If, in the habits of the whole body of the peasantry, clothes and furniture had been as necessary as potatoes, the oppressive exactions of the landlords must have yielded to what then would have been the natural rate, whether we call it profit or wages, necessary for the maintenance of that peasantry ; and the necessity, on their part, for maintaining the average *status* of their class, would in a considerable degree have kept down the inordinate increase of the people. A century ago the great body of the working-people of England ate rye bread, which is cheaper than wheaten. If all the workers were to come back to rye-bread, the rate at which they could be comfortably maintained would be somewhat less ; and unless the accumulation from the economy were expended universally in some improved accommodation, labourers would gradually arise who would be contented with the smaller amount necessary for subsistence, and the greater number of labourers seeking for wages would depress the amount paid to each individual labourer.

" In England and Scotland," says Mr. Morison, " the classes living by wages form the majority of the population." It has been estimated by Mr. Greg that the annual amount paid in wages is a hundred and forty millions sterling ; to which may be added twenty millions for the

board of domestic servants. The profits of all the operations of industry to the capitalists are estimated by Mr. Morison at ninety millions. The Census returns show that there were three hundred and fifty-four thousand masters in trades, and farmers employing fourteen hundred thousand men. This gives a proportion of about four men employed to one employer. Compared with the estimate of profits it shows that each employer, assuming the calculation to be correct, would derive a revenue of two hundred and fifty pounds a year as the recompense of his capital, skill, and risk. This is not so large an aggregate profit as is ordinarily supposed. The men employed would each receive a revenue of one hundred a year. But we must add a large number to the men receiving wages, who would not be returned by their employers; and the calculation of payments must be further diminished by the consideration that in many branches of industry, and in factory labour especially, a very large number of females are employed, as well as boys. But the fact of the general proportion of wages to profits is sufficiently striking to show that the inequality of the condition of the labourer and the employer is not so extravagantly great as we have been accustomed of late years to hear asserted.

In looking back upon the historical evidence which we possess, imperfect as it is, of the condition of society at various periods of our industrial progress, we cannot doubt that there has been a process constantly going forward by which the circumstances of all classes have been steadily raised. In the table of Gregory King, which we have several times referred to, the average income of ten thousand merchants is put down at three hundred a year; of shopkeepers and tradesmen at forty-five pounds; of farmers at forty-two pounds; and of labouring people at fifteen pounds. The income of gentlemen is taken at two hundred and eighty pounds a year. The increase of the means of these various classes at the present day as compared with the end of the seventeenth century, has certainly been

threefold. If we turn to the passage which we have quoted from the 'Chronicon Preciosum,' originally published in 1707, we may at once compare the advantages which a threefold increase of means will procure. Wheat is not six pounds a quarter, nor broad-cloth two pounds fourteen shillings a yard,—which would be the case if we trebled the prices of 1707. We have abundance of conveniences and comforts of which the people of Queen Anne's reign had no notion, which have been bestowed upon us by manufactures, and commerce, and scientific agriculture.

We have already stated and illustrated the general principle that the wages of labour are determined by the accumulations of capital, compared with the number of labourers. Hence it necessarily results that, as has been forcibly expressed, "the additional capital, whenever it is productively employed, will tend as certainly to the benefit of the working population at large as if the owner were a trustee for their benefit."\* But the profitable employment of capital depends very greatly upon activity, knowledge, and foresight on the part of the capitalist. It was for the want of these qualities that all the old schemes for providing labour out of a common stock chiefly broke down. Sir Matthew Hale, in his plan for employing paupers in spinning flax and weaving cloth, knew theoretically the truth that the amount of capital available for the payment of labour would be largely increased by the rapidity with which it might be turned over. He says, "If it could be supposed that the cloth could be sold as soon as made—which is not, I confess, reasonably to be expected—then a stock of 24*l.* would, by its continual return, provide materials and pay the workmen for one loom's work in perpetuity." The "if" expresses the difference between individual commercial activity and knowledge, and official sluggishness and incapacity. But it also expresses the difference between the commerce of our days, and that of the

\* Morison, 'Labour and Capital,' p. 24.

end of the seventeenth century. Without roads, or canals, or railroads, how difficult was it to bring the seller and the buyer together! All manufactures would be, for the most part, local. The cloths of Kendal might go to the neighbouring fairs on packhorses; and thence slowly spread through the country by pedlars and other small dealers; and the proceeds might return to the manufacturer at the end of a year. But the rapid turning over of capital which begins with buying a bale of cotton at New York, and having it in Sydney in the shape of calico in three months, with the bill that is to pay for it drawn at Manchester, accepted in Sydney, and discounted in London in another three months, is a turning over of capital which was scarcely imagined by the projectors and practical traders of a century ago.

This rapid turning over of capital, and the consequent more rapid accumulation of the labour-fund, depends upon the confidence of the capitalist that his capital will work to a profit. It will not so work if he is to be undersold. If wages could press upon profit beyond a certain ascertained limit, he would be undersold. The home competition of localities and individuals is perpetually forcing on the most economical arrangements in production. The foreign competition is doing so still more. If we have increased productiveness here; through scientific application, the same increased productiveness, from the same causes, is going forward elsewhere. 'Price-currents' supply a perpetual barometer of industrial cloud or sunshine; and the manufacturer and merchant have constantly to unfurl or furl their sails according to the indications. Whenever there is shipwreck, the ship's crew and the captain partake of a common calamity; and the calamity is always precipitated and made more onerous when, from any cause, there is not cordial sympathy and agreement.

## QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XXIV.

1. What was the condition of agricultural labourers in the reign of Henry I.?
2. What caused the improvement in their condition during the next two centuries?
3. What are the great principles which govern the rate of wages?
4. Mention some instances of laws opposed to the natural laws of demand and supply.
5. Mention some modern instances of laws opposed to the natural law of exchange.
6. What is the real labour-fund?
7. What is the effect of a *want-fund*?
8. What has been the increase in the produce of the land during a century and a half?
9. Has this rate of increase been greater or less than that of the population?
10. What was the national accumulation of capital at the end of the seventeenth century?
11. What was the remedy proposed for the pressure of population upon capital?
12. Instance some measures taken with this view.
13. Demonstrate the folly of these schemes.
14. What is the cause that the Free and Pauper Colonies of Holland are commercial failures?
15. What was the chief cause of the rapid increase in the accumulated capital during the last half of the eighteenth century?
16. What is the comparative rate of the recent increase in capital and in population?
17. What effect has this had on the rate of wages?
18. What is the cause of the difficulty in ascertaining the actual rate of wages?
19. Give an instance of the difference between the actual and the nominal value of money.
20. What would be the result if the wages of labour were to fluctuate with the prices of commodities?
21. What is the reason that wages have risen whilst prices have fallen?
22. Give an instance of the evils resulting from an absence of the desire to accumulate on the part of the labourer.
23. Give an estimate of the general proportion of wages to profits.
24. Upon what does the profitable employment of capital depend?

### *CHAPTER XXV.*

Necessity for elementary instruction in political economy—Skilled labour and trusted labour—Combinations, of every kind, that are opposed to the great principles of political economy are combinations of producers against consumers.

THERE is a passage in Wordsworth's 'Excursion' in which he describes the benevolent and philosophical hero of his poem, a pedlar, listening to the complaints of poverty, and searching into the causes of the evil :—

" Nor was he loth to enter ragged huts,  
Huts where his charity was blest; his voice  
Heard as the voice of an experienced friend.  
And, sometimes, where the poor man held dispute  
With his own mind, unable to subdue  
Impatience, through inaptness to perceive  
General distress in his particular lot;  
Or cherishing resentment, or in vain  
Struggling against it, with a soul perplex'd  
And finding in herself no steady power  
To draw the line of comfort that divides  
Calamity, the chastisement of Heaven,  
From the injustice of our brother men;  
To him appeal was made, as to a judge;  
Who, with an understanding heart, allay'd  
The perturbation; listened to the plea;  
Resolved the dubious point; and sentence gave  
So grounded, so applied, that it was heard  
With softened spirit—e'en when it condemn'd."

The poor man is accustomed to hold dispute with his own mind; he thinks his particular lot is worse than the general lot; his soul is perplexed in considering whether his condition is produced by a common law of society, or by the

injustice of his fellow-men ; the experienced friend listens, discusses, argues,—but he argues in a temper that produces a softened spirit. The adviser soothes rather than inflames, by dealing with such questions with “an understanding heart.” He unites the sympathizing heart with the reasoning understanding.

Now, we may fairly inquire if, during the many unfortunate occasions that are constantly arising of contests for what are called the rights of labour against what is called the tyranny of capital, those who are the most immediate sufferers in the contest are addressed with the “understanding heart?” If argument be used at all, the principles which govern the relations between capital and labour are put too often dictatorially or patronisingly before them, as dry, abstract propositions. They are not set forth as matters of calm inquiry whose truths, when dispassionately examined, may be found to lead to the conclusion that a steadily-increasing rate of wages, affording the employed a greater amount of comforts and conveniences, is the inevitable result of increasing capital, under conditions which depend upon the workers themselves. The result is generally such as took place in a Lancashire strike, where one of the leaders exclaimed, “The sooner we can rout political economy from the world, the better it will be for the working classes.” It might, indeed, as well be said, the sooner we can rout acoustics from the world, the better it will be for those who have ears to hear ; but the absurdity would not be corrected by a mathematical demonstration to those who did not comprehend mathematics. The same person held that political economy was incompatible with the gospel precept of doing unto others as we would be done unto, because it encourages buying in the cheapest market and selling in the dearest ; and he necessarily assumed that political economy recommends the capitalist to buy labour cheap and sell it dear. We have not learnt that calmly and kindly he was told, in the real spirit of political economy, that it is impossible that, by any individual or local advan-

tage the capitalist may possess, he can long depress wages below the rate of the whole country, because other capitalists would enter into competition for the employment of labour, and raise the average rate. If Wordsworth's experienced friend had heard this perversion of the meaning of the axiom about markets, he would have said, we think, that to buy in the cheapest market and sell in the dearest simply means, in commerce, to buy an article where its cheapness represents abundance, and to sell it in a place where its dearth represents a want of it and a consequent demand,—even as he, the pedlar, bought a piece of cloth at Kendal, where there was plenty of cloth, and sold it for a profit at Grasmere, where there was little cloth. The business of mercantile knowledge and enterprise is to discover and apply these conditions; so that, if a trader were to buy hides in Smithfield and carry them to Buenos Ayres, he would reverse these conditions,—he would buy in the dearest market and sell in the cheapest. Political economy—the disclaimer against it might have been told—says that to produce cheap is essential to large demand, and constantly-increasing demand; but it does not say that cheap production necessarily implies diminished wages. It says that cheap production, as a consequence of increased production, depends upon the constantly-increasing use of capital in production, and the constantly-diminishing amount of mere manual labour compared with the quantity produced—which result is effected by the successive application of all the appliances of science to the means of production. At every step of scientific improvement there is a demand for labour of a higher character than existed without the science. At every extended organization of industry, resulting from an extended demand, not only skilled labour, but trusted labour, becomes more and more in request; and the average amount of all labour is better paid. A bricklayer is paid more than the man who mixes his mortar, because one is a skilled labourer, and has learnt his art by some expenditure of time, which is capital. The merchant's bookkeeper is

paid more than his porter, because the one has an office of high trust and responsibility, and the other a duty to perform of less importance, and for which a far greater number of men wanting hire are fitted.

In the Preface to this volume we have referred to the mode in which political economy is intelligently taught in the Birkbeck Schools, as an example for the necessity for such teaching as would disabuse many of the working classes of their false notions of the relations between capital and labour. What we call socialism is at the root of many of these notions—we mean, that principle which would give every labourer, whether skilled or unskilled, industrious or idle, a claim upon some imaginary labour-fund, not proportioned to the demands of the consumers, nor regulated by the profits of the capitalists, but distributed according to the exigencies of the labourers. Let us hear how children from ten to twelve years old can expound the true doctrine of wages, whilst thousands of adults, whose reasoning powers seem to be wholly under the guidance of their passions, are raving about “the antagonism between capital and labour.” Truly has the founder of the Birkbeck Schools said, “We might as well talk of the antagonism between food and appetite, or between the shivering body and clothes.”\*

*Q.* When a boy goes to work, what does he expect to receive?

*A.* (From twenty at once) Wages.

*Q.* When a boy goes to work for wages, from whom does he expect to receive wages?

*A.* A capitalist—a man who possesses capital.

*Q.* What does a capitalist look for in this expenditure?

*A.* Profit.

*Q.* Whilst the capital is thus employed to produce more wealth, what happens to it?

*A.* It is being consumed.

\* ‘Combinations and Strikes from the Teacher’s Point of View.’

(The teacher then gave several illustrations :—how, when a farmer employs capital in feeding labourers, food is consumed ; in clothing them, clothes are consumed,—which they replace by wages, as regards themselves.)

Q. If a portion of the farmer's capital is thus consumed, and if the seed sown in the ground is also consumed, there must be an interval before there is profit. When will profit come ?—Several answers were given which resolved themselves into—

A. After next harvest. (*Remark.*—Labourers working for wages are thus paid out of capital. When working men meet together and talk about wages, some say—perhaps some of you may have heard it said—wages are paid out of profits. This is a mistake. A workman can't wait for profits. He goes to the capitalist and says, “Give me wages out of what you have stored up in the past ; I will work to produce more for the future.”)

Q. Would you rather, then, have capital abundant or scarce ?

A. Abundant.

Q. Why ?

A. Because there will be more wages to be paid out of capital.

Q. Suppose a capitalist, in employing his capital, makes large profits, would that harm the working man ?

A. No. There would be more capital to pay wages.

Q. Which is best, that capitalists should be saving or wasteful ?

A. Saving.

Q. Why ?

A. (After several attempts, a boy said) If wasteful men, they would consume, and have less capital.

Q. But if they were not wasteful, what would happen ?

A. There would be more capital to earn capital hereafter.

Q. Are you sorry, then, that capitalists should have great profits ?

A. Glad.

*Q.* Sorry that they should be saving?

*A.* Glad.

*Q.* Do all workmen get the same wages?

*A.* No.

*Q.* Does a boy always get wages when he first goes to work?

*A.* No. He sometimes goes to work without wages.

*Q.* His parents or friends, therefore, provide for him till he is capable of earning wages. But do all men get the same wages?

*A.* No. (An example is then given of the difference of wages to a foreman and a labourer, using the word "labourer" not in the general sense in which all who work for wages are called labourers.)

*Q.* Why does the foreman get more than the labourer?

*A.* Because the foreman's work is of more value than the labourer's. The foreman is a skilled man.

*Q.* There are differences of character as well as of skill between two workmen. Why do capitalists run after men, and will give very high wages for skill, and a combination of good qualities?

*A.* Capitalists give wages to workmen in proportion to their productiveness. (The word "productiveness" is then spelt and written on the slate, and the inference is urged, that if they prefer high wages to low wages, they must try to be productive.)

*Q.* What is there in the character of a workman besides his skill that goes to make up productiveness? (A pause.) Which would be most productive, a sober or a drunken workman?

*A.* A sober.

*Q.* One getting knowledge or one dissipated?

*A.* One getting knowledge.

*Q.* One frank and truthful, or the contrary?

*A.* One frank and truthful.

*Q.* When a master engages a fighting and quarrelsome man, what does that matter as long as he does not fight the master?

A. The master knows that he is a questionable man.

Q. How does the possession of bad qualities like these interfere with a workman's productiveness? (A pause.) If a master bricklayer engages two bricklayers—one sober, one drunken—and gives them each five shillings a day, we say they are earning the same wages. But a man living by wages lives through them all the year. If the sober bricklayer has worked fifty-two weeks of the year, and the drunken forty-two, which has the higher wages?

A. The sober.

(Lay, then, to heart this truth—that the capitalist distributes wages according to the productiveness of the workman, and that the amount of his productiveness is determined by industry, skill, sobriety, truthfulness.)

These are very elementary truths, coming out of the lips of babes and sucklings. Perhaps it may be said that, parrot-like, they are repeating what they have been taught to say. Be it so. If such lessons had been learnt in higher schools we might have been spared some mischievous legislation.

"If Political Economy is against us, then we are against Political Economy." This was the view of the Union orators of 1859, which was the creed of those who combined in Lancashire. But it is not an original view. It is a principle that has been steadily acted upon by the law-givers of five centuries. At every stage of the conflict between legislation and political economy, the mighty men of the State, the almost exclusive possessors of knowledge, the great landed aristocracy, the merchant princes, have been beaten from the field by this all-compelling force. "Thrones, dominions, principalities, powers," now bend their knees before their master, listen submissively to his lessons, and strive which shall best expound his immutable laws. The vast multitudes who have a belief, more or less confident, that, in their legal freedom to combine their physical strength, they must be irresistible, are wholly

ignorant of the moral strength against which they hope to contend, when they exclaim, “If Political Economy is against us, then we are against Political Economy.”

It may not be amiss to glance historically at the success which has attended the principle of combination in other forms than those of a contest of labour against capital; and then to deduce an argument to show the futility of that form of combination which survives amongst us.

A generation has not passed away since the belief very generally existed that the prosperity of this country depended upon an exclusive system of commerce—upon a combination, in fact, of manufacturers, agriculturists, and merchants, against the consumers of the products which they made, grew, or imported. Adam Smith, writing some ninety years ago, said, “To expect that the freedom of trade should ever be entirely restored in Great Britain, is as absurd as to expect that an Oceana or Utopia should ever be established in it.” But freedom of trade *has* been established in Great Britain. All the terrors of manufacturers against the importation of foreign woollens, or silks, or linen—with the riots of their workmen against the repeal of prohibitory laws—have vanished as a dream of the past. In the same way all the machinery of fixed duties and sliding scales to regulate the importation of corn has come to an end; and those who predicted that we must cease to produce the food of our people behold with wonder the land doubled in fertility, and cheap corn making rich landlords and prosperous tenants. To complete the picture, whilst ships of every country are freely laden and unladen in our ports, to the astonishment of the merchants and shipowners, who believed that commerce would perish if the Navigation Laws did not protect our shipping from competition,—under the repeal of those laws in 1849 the tonnage of British vessels clearing from the ports of the United Kingdom has been raised in fifteen years to an extent far exceeding the increase of any corresponding period previous to that repeal, and the tonnage of

foreign vessels equally so. The great body of the people derive inestimable benefits from the abolition of the exclusive system ; whilst those who produce under a system of commercial freedom are better off than the old exclusionists. They have found out that political economy is their friend.

“ If political economy is *against us* ? ” That is the real question which the working classes have to solve. We presume that the converse of their proposition would hold : If political economy is *for us*, then we are for political economy. Some of the battles of European warfare have been lost by the combatants on one side mistaking their friends for their enemies in the din and smoke of a hurried fight. In the clamour and excitement of a strike and a lock-out, the most reasonable workman may make a similar mistake. Political economy is the only ally who will steadily fight by his side, if he puts himself under that friendly guidance ; who will teach him when to fight, and what to fight for ; and, better than any fighting, who will lead him to cast in his lot, humbly and wisely, with those who see, in the mighty triumphs of science and industry over the stubborn chaos of matter, the surest evidence that every one who is advancing in the general march of improvement will secure his adequate share of reward ; exactly in proportion as he qualifies himself by his own moral and intellectual culture.

We regard all the later forms of combination amongst workmen, as well as the earlier forms of direct monopolies by individuals or by mercantile corporations, as a league of producers against consumers. Those who were backed by the most stringent enactment and an army of custom-house officers—and, what is more important, who believed themselves fenced round from assault by their own enormous power as capitalists—have failed in their war against competition ; utterly and irremediably failed. The vast body denominated “ working classes,” as if they were the only “ toilers ” of society, who combine to carry on this

warfare, have ceased to dread any interposition of the Legislature whilst they fairly try their strength. Three months only before the great battle of the builders in 1859, an Act of Parliament was passed which gave them even greater freedom to make this trial than the Act of George IV. for the repeal of the Combination Laws. The Legislature had become too wise to dread any permanent injury to the prosperity of the nation from the power of workmen to combine, and it therefore declared as follows:—

“ That no workman or other person, whether actually in employment or not, shall by reason merely of his entering into an agreement with any workman or workmen, or other person or persons, for the purpose of fixing or endeavouring to fix the rate of wages or remuneration at which they or any of them shall work, or by reason merely of his endeavouring peaceably, and in a reasonable manner, and without threat or intimidation, direct or indirect, to persuade others to cease or abstain from work in order to obtain the rate of wages or the altered hours of labour so fixed or agreed upon, or to be agreed upon, shall be deemed or taken to be guilty of ‘molestation’ or ‘obstruction,’ within the meaning of the said Act, and shall not therefore be subject or liable to any prosecution or indictment for conspiracy: Provided always, that nothing herein contained shall authorize any workman to break or depart from any contract, or authorize any attempt to induce any workman to break or depart from any contract.”

The Legislature thus opened a wider field for combination to ramble over, satisfied that combination having, like a will-o’-the-wisp, led industry far out of a safe course, industry would return to its own high road without any coercion but its own experience.

The builders’ strike terminated in the defeat of those who believe that combination may effect what competition cannot accomplish,—as all other strikes have terminated. For why? Simply because there is a third party concerned in every such dispute besides the employers and the workmen—besides the capitalist and the labourer—those who find the means to set the industry in motion which supplies profit to the master and wages to the workman. Every such contest finally resolves itself into a very unequal struggle between those who have something to sell and

those who have the ability to buy. Whilst the struggle between employer and workman goes on, the real capital which sets the industry of both in motion remains unimpaired. It is either only reserved till the foolish dispute is at an end, the particular want being in the meantime unsupplied; or it is diverted from the gratification which it was intended to purchase, to supply some other want.

Five hundred thousand of the whole adult male population were thus employed in 1861 in providing buildings for the community. What, for more than half a century, had given this remarkable direction of labour to supply one of the great wants of civilized man—a want which appears in this country never to be satisfied,—which demands more houses whatever number of houses are built? Was it the energy of speculative builders, who thought that the erection of new houses would afford them profit, or be a safe investment for their capital? Partly so, and speculative builders have added to the resource of their own capital a command over the superabundant capital of others seeking for investment, by the facilities of loans upon mortgage. But this energy and this command of capital would have lain dormant, had there not been a constantly-increasing number of the people ready to pay rent; people beginning housekeeping—people seeking better house accommodation than the old dwellings—people turning their city houses into warehouses, and seeking health in suburban air. All this process has been going on to an extent almost marvellous, not only in London, but in every town in Great Britain; insomuch that any man who has been absent from England for twenty, fifteen, or even ten years can scarcely recognise his country as the land of his boyhood. It is the constantly-increasing capital of the whole community that has given this vast impulse to the employment of capital in building; which has furnished profits to employers in the building trade, not, upon the whole, more than adequate to their powers of organization; which has gone on doubling, trebling, quadrupling, the number of the employed, without

any diminution of the rate of wages, but the contrary; and while having called into action many machines and inventions for diminishing labour, has added to the labour-fund instead of lessening it. This process will go on in the industry of builders, and in all other industries, as the power of creating new capital keeps pace with the constant using up of old capital—as long as production is on a line with, or in advance of, consumption. In such a state of things the amount of labour seeking employment can never be in excess of the capital seeking to give it employment; and as an absolute certainty, the wages of labour can never be depressed by any combination of employers below their natural level; and can never be raised above their natural level by a combination of the employed.

Many of the strikes in England, during the last seven years, present the most remarkable manifestation of ignorance of economical laws that was ever exhibited by skilled workmen. The following doctrines have been set forth as elementary truths:—

1. If, as the political economists maintain, the rate of wages depends upon the proportion of the number of workmen competing for employment to the amount of capital out of which wages are to be paid, a general resolution to work only nine hours instead of ten, the daily wages remaining the same, will produce the same effect as if one-tenth of the aggregate number of workmen were withdrawn from the competition for wages.

2. To carry forward the same principle to the same result, it is necessary that the workman should not do as much work as he can, but as little as he can; that to counteract the abundance of labour, its efficiency should be lessened; that the bricklayer should never put his trowel out of his hand to lift anything requiring two hands; that to break down the distinction between the industrious and the lazy workman, the skilful and the unhandy, there should be no piece-work and no overtime; and that to mark the line of demarcation between the employer and

employed, and to prevent any stimulus to industry under the master's eye, the man is never to work by the side of his master.

3. That machinery has diminished the amount of human labour required to produce a certain quantity of work ; and that the saving in the cost of production ought therefore to be for the benefit of the labourers, and not for the consumers of the thing produced.

The great labour question has been fully discussed by all classes of inquirers ; by the political economist ; by the philanthropists, so called ; by employers ; by workmen. At the annual meetings of "The National Association for the Promotion of Social Science," combinations and strikes have presented a fertile subject for discussion, and some striking arguments have been produced from the scientific and the practical point of view. Those for the most part go upon the honest British principle of hearing both sides. Employers are not wholly absolved from blame ; workmen, banded together as if against a common enemy, are not pronounced to have justice on their side. Let us first hear the opinion of "a working man," in a paper read at Glasgow, at the meeting at Glasgow in 1860 :—

"Mr. Peter Allan, of Glasgow, read a paper on 'Trades' Unions, and their Effects on Society.' He said—Employers in favour of Trades' Unions were rarely met with—workmen were considered their supporters. He was a working man, dependent altogether on wages, therefore his interest lay in the direction of high-priced labour—but he was opposed to trades' unions. Trades' unions had been established on the principles of protection as against an opposing interest, which was capital ; for the purpose of carrying out these principles, they were regulated by certain modes of action common to all. They combined for an advance of wages ; resisted a reduction ; objected to the introduction of unskilled labour ; regulated the rate of wages, the number of apprentices, the hours of labour, and, in some cases, the quantity to be done by each workman. It had

ever been the favourite theory of trades' unions, a uniform rate of wages. Now, a uniform rate of wages would ultimately produce a uniform kind and class of workmen. The injustice and absurdity of such an arrangement were apparent. Under a system where wages were uniform, young men when out of their apprenticeship found themselves at once on a level with the best workmen; there was nothing more to hope or strive for. Intelligence, application, ability, or good conduct, brought neither fee nor reward. A uniform rate of wages was unjust to the employers in busy seasons: they were obliged to have bad workmen when good workmen were not to be found, and to pay for the bad article the same price as they did for the good. If workmen were wise, they would never attempt in any way to obstruct or annoy the operations of capital—its accumulation was the life of labour. Wherever capital was plentiful, labour was comfortable and wages high. Trades' unions impress upon workmen the necessity of union to resist the encroachments of capital; it was to be looked upon and treated as their enemy. When the working-classes were fully employed, and required no support from trades' unions, it was precisely then that trades' unions became strong; when trade was bad and workmen idle, unions ceased to exist. Instead of being a tower of strength to working men, trades' unions were a source of weakness. They were regulated on principles at variance with the maxims of political economy, universal experience, and common sense; and any association which attempted to substitute official zeal and formal regulations in place of individual self-reliance, would fail in improving the character or the conditions of men."

At the London meeting of the Association in 1862, Mr. J. M. Ludlow, a Barrister-at-Law, not more distinguished for his ability than for his unceasing endeavours to promote the welfare of the working-classes, thus eloquently set forth the necessity of union between employers and employed: "Assuredly a state of open or smothered hostility is de-

structive of the true interests both of capital and labour. The great point in this age of exaggerated individualism is to teach employers and employed that they live not to themselves alone, that the eyes of their fellow-men are upon them, that they are members of the great body of the English nation, charged with a great function which they have to fulfil in due harmony with the rest of their fellow-members, and for the common welfare of the whole body ;—that they have no more right to fall out and disagree amongst themselves, and cause inconvenience and ruin perhaps to others by their disagreements, than the hand has to tear the face or the breast ;—that the very fact of their doing so is a proof of disease or madness. Lastly, that the successive abolition, under a free-trade policy, of all those legal fetters which in almost every country weigh, indeed, upon industry, yet in doing so, nevertheless, to some extent hinder its worst internal convulsions, only renders it the more incumbent upon them to submit to the control of an enlightened public opinion, of an enlightened public morality, so that ‘having no law,’ they may indeed ‘be a law unto themselves.’ ”

Combinations and strikes have been almost defended as likely to lead to a closer union of capital and labour than is likely to be accomplished by the system of giving service for wages. The following was the speech of Mr. Henry Faucett, M.A., in 1859, as expounded at Bradford :—

“ Many able writers have remarked that the English are apt to forget that there can be any other social arrangement than employers and the employed, who are simply hired labourers. Manifestly, such a division is not in itself desirable, for can there be anything more unfortunate or more sorrowful to contemplate than that masses of intelligent beings from childhood to old age should toil in a work in which they have no interest, and that between themselves and those for whom they toil the attachment should be no more than that between a buyer and seller ? ”

The great principles of co-operation, thus intended as leading to a more perfect alliance of labour and capital, will be treated in the concluding chapters.

---

## QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XXV.

1. What is the result on wages of increasing capital ?
2. What are the conditions which it is the business of mercantile knowledge to apply ?
3. What does political economy teach with regard to wages ?
4. What is the principle of socialism ?
5. Give an instance of the triumph of political economy over a form of combination opposed to its principles.
6. What is the cause that all combinations to effect what competition cannot accomplish terminate in defeat ?
7. What is the chief cause of the impulse given to all the arts of construction ?
8. What has been the effect on wages of this increase in capital ?
9. Repeat the opinion of a working-man as to the evils of trades' unions.
10. Repeat the opinion of a working-man as to a uniform rate of wages.

**CHAPTER XXVI.**

Competition of unskilled labour—Competition of uncapitalled labour—Itinerant traders—The contrast of organized industry—Factory labour and garret labour.

THE process which has been steadily going on amongst us for increasing the demand for skill and trustworthiness, has no doubt produced a diminution of the funds for employ in which neither skill nor trust is required. Thus a great amount of suffering is constantly presented to our view, which benevolence has set about relieving in our time with a zeal which shows how fully it is acknowledged that the great principle, to "Love one another," is not to evaporate in sentiment, but is to be ripened in action. As a nation, England was never indifferent to the command, "Feed the hungry." But the "understanding heart" has discovered that many of the miseries of society may be relieved by other modes as effectually as by almsgiving, and perhaps much more effectually. Whether some of these efforts may be misdirected, in no degree detracts from the value of the principle which seeks the prevention of misery rather than the relief. One of the most obvious forms in which misery has presented itself in our large cities, and especially in London, has arisen from the competition amongst labour which may be called unskilled, because there are a numerous unemployed body of labourers at hand to do the same work, in which there is no special skill. This was the case with the sempstresses of London; and the famous 'Song of the Shirt' struck a note to which there was a responding chord in every bosom. But the terrible evils of the low wages of shirt-making would not have been relieved by an universal agreement of the com-

munity to purchase none but shirts that, by their price, could afford to give higher wages to the shirt-makers. The higher wages would have infallibly attracted more women and more children to the business of shirt-making. The straw-plaiters, the embroiderers, the milliners, would have rushed to shirt-making; and, unless there had been a constantly-increasing rate of price charged to the wearers of shirts, and therefore a constant forced contribution to the capital devoted to shirt-making, the payment to one shirt-maker would have come to be divided amongst two; and the whole body, thus doubled by a rate of wages disproportioned to the rate of other labour requiring little peculiar skill, would have been in a worse condition in the end than in the beginning.

Whatever suffering may arise out of the competition that must exist between mere manual labour, and also between that labour which is displayed in the practice of some art easily learnt, capable of exercise by both sexes, and in which very young children may readily engage—it is scarcely fair that those who witness the suffering of the employed at very low wages should instantly conclude that the employers are extortioners and oppressors. A branch of trade which seems inconsiderable as regards the article produced is often found in a particular locality, and furnishes employment to large numbers. In the London parish of Cripplegate there were great quantities of tooth-brushes made. The handle is formed by the lathe, in which skilled labour is employed. The hair is cut by machinery. The holes in the handle in which the hair is inserted are also pierced by machines. But the insertion of the hair, and the fastening it by wire, are done by hand. Excellent people, who, with a strong sense of Christian duty, enter "ragged huts" to relieve and to advise, see a number of women and children daily labouring at the one task of fastening the hair in tooth-brushes; and they learn that the wages paid are miserably low. They immediately conclude that the wages should be higher; because in the difference between the

retail price of a tooth-brush and the manufacturing cost there must necessarily be large profits. They say, therefore, that the wholesale manufacturer is unjust in not giving higher wages. But the retail price of tooth-brushes, however high, does not enable the manufacturer, necessarily, to give a payment more considerable than the average of such labour to the women and children who very quickly learn the art of fastening the hair. The price he can pay is to be measured by the average price of such labour all over the country. It is not in the least unlikely that the manufacturer in Cripplegate may not receive a fourth of the price at which a tooth-brush is sold in Saint James's. The profits are determined by the average of all his transactions. He has to sell as cheaply as possible for the export trade. If he sell dear, the export-trader will see if he cannot buy a hundred thousand tooth-brushes at Havre instead of London. It is nothing to the exporter whether he obtain a profit out of French or English tooth-brushes. Again: The manufacturer sends a hundred thousand tooth-brushes to a wholesale dealer at Glasgow, who supplies the retailers throughout Scotland. But before the Scotch warehouseman will repeat the order, he will ascertain whether he can buy the article cheaper at Birmingham; and one per cent. lower will decide against Cripplegate. Now, in all these domestic labours involving small skill, the question is whether the miserably-paid workers can do anything more profitable. Mr. Mayhew says that some large classes "do not obtain a fair living price for their work, because, as in the case of the needleworkers and other domestic manufacturers, their livelihood is supposed to be provided for them by the husband or father; and hence the remuneration is viewed rather as an aid to the family income than as an absolute means of support." It is not what is "supposed," or what is "viewed," that determines the question. It is what really is. Such employ may, unhappily, be sought by many as "an absolute means of support." But if there be an almost unlimited number who seek it as "an aid to the

family income," there is no possibility of preventing a competition, perfectly equal as regards the wages of labour, but wretchedly unequal in the application of those wages.

The miseries that are so frequently resulting from the competition of unskilled labour are also results from what we will venture to call uncapitalled labour, attempting to unite wages with profits. Upon a large scale, the miseries of Ireland, which finally collapsed in the terrible famine, were produced by labour trenching upon the functions of capital without possessing capital. In 1847 there were in Ireland five hundred thousand acres of land in more than three hundred thousand holdings, thus supplying the only means of maintenance to three hundred thousand male labourers and their families, but averaging little more than an acre and a half to each tenant. Nor is the effect of uncapitalled and unskilled labour—for uncapitalled labour is for the most part unskilled—less remarkable in manufactures than in agriculture. Many are familiar with the minute details of low wages and suffering—of the oppressions attributed to masters and middle-men—which are contained in a series of papers by Mr. Henry Mayhew, published in the *Morning Chronicle* in 1849-50, under the title of 'London Labour and London Poor.' Nothing could be more laudable than the general object of these papers, which, in the Preface to a collected edition of a portion of them, was "to give the rich a more intimate knowledge of the sufferings, and the frequent heroism under these sufferings, of the poor;" and to cause those "of whom much is expected, to bestir themselves to improve their condition." But, at the same time, it would be difficult to say how the condition of particular classes of these sufferers was to be improved, except by such general efforts as would raise up the whole body of the people in knowledge and virtue, and by directing the labours of those who, without skill or capital, were struggling against skill and capital, into courses of industry more consonant with the great modes of productiveness all around them. One example

may illustrate our meaning—that of “the garret-masters of the cabinet-trade.” The writer we have mentioned says that wages had fallen 400 per cent. in that trade, between 1831 and 1850; but he also says that the trade was “depressed by the increase of small masters—that is to say, by a class of workmen possessed of just sufficient capital to buy their own materials, and to support themselves while making them up.” Taking the whole rate of wages—the payment to the unskilled as well as the skilled workmen—it would be difficult not to believe that the average reduction was quite as great as represented. A cabinet-maker tells this tale :—

“ One of the inducements,” he said, “ for men to take to making up for themselves is to get a living when thrown out of work until they can hear of something better. If they could get into regular journeymen-work there a’n’t one man as wouldn’t prefer it—it would pay them a deal better. Another of the reasons for the men turning small masters is the little capital that it requires for them to start themselves. If a man has got his tools he can begin as a master-man with a couple of shillings. If he goes in for making large tables, then from 30s. to 35s. will do him, and it’s the small bit of money it takes to start with in our line that brings many into the trade who wouldn’t be there if more tin was wanted to begin upon. Many works for themselves, because nobody else won’t employ them, their work is so bad. Many weavers has took to our business of late. That’s quite common now—their own’s so bad; and some that used to hawk hearthstones about is turned Pembroke table-makers.” Whether the mode in which this workman expresses himself correctly indicates, or not, the amount of his education, it is quite certain that he had got to the root of the evil of which he complains.

The making of one species of furniture in which a solitary cabinet-maker might have formerly produced a comparatively cheap article—a chair—is now carried on upon what may be called the factory principle, with which

the individual workman has little chance of competing. Chipping-Wickham, situated in the very heart of the Buckinghamshire beech-woods, has become famous, even in distant countries, for its manufacture of chairs. The Windsor chair has a fame of some antiquity; but the Wycombe chair-making trade was scarcely known as something remarkable twenty or thirty years ago. The demand for these chairs has grown with the enormous increase of general population; the facilities of communication with the metropolis; the rapidly extending demand of our colonies. "When I began the trade," said a large manufacturer to me, "I loaded a cart and travelled to Luton. All there was prosperous. There was a scramble for my chairs, and when I came home I laid my receipts on my table, and said to my wife, 'You never saw so much money before.'" This manufacturer now sends his chairs to London, Liverpool, and Manchester; to Australia, New Zealand, and Constantinople. Wycombe boasts of making a chair a minute all the year round—chairs which would not be unsightly in the handsomest sitting-room, and which can be sold at five shillings each.

The competition that is only limited by the capacity of endurance between the unskilled workman and the uncapi-talised workman—each striving against the other, and striv-ing in vain against capital and skill—has been going on for centuries in the distribution of commodities. The retailer with small capital has always had to carry on an unequal contest with the retailer with large capital. In our time, small shops are swallowed up in magnificent warehouses, in which every article of dress especially can be purchased under one roof—from a penny yard of ribbon to a hundred-guinea shawl. In splendour these bazaars, with one pro-prietor, rival the oriental with many competitors. But their distinguishing characteristic is the far-seeing organization, by which the capital is turned over with unexampled rapidity, and no unsaleable stock is kept on hand. It is easy to understand that the larger profits of the small retailer

have very little chance of accumulation against the smaller profits of the large retailer.

But this contest of small capital against large was formerly carried on in the struggle of the itinerant traders against the shopkeepers. It is now carried on in a struggle amongst themselves.

The costermonger is a travelling shopkeeper. We encounter him not in Cornhill, or Holborn, or the Strand : in the neighbourhood of the great markets and well-stored shops he travels not. But his voice is heard in some silent streets stretching into the suburbs ; and there his donkey-cart stands at the door, as the dingy servant-maid cheapens a bundle of cauliflowers. He has monopolized all the trades that were anciently represented by such "London cries" as "*Buy my artichokes, mistress ;*" "*Ripe cucumbers ;*" "*White onions, white St. Thomas' onions ;*" "*White radish ;*" "*Ripe young beans ;*" "*Any baking pears ;*" "*Ripe speragis.*" He would be indignant to encounter such petty chapmen interfering with his wholesale operations. Mr. Mayhew says that "the regular or thoroughbred costermongers repudiate the numerous persons who only sell nuts or oranges in the streets." No doubt they rail against these inferior competitors, as the city shopkeepers of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries railed against itinerant traders of every denomination. In the days of Elizabeth, they declare by act of common council, that in ancient times the open streets and lanes of the city have been used, and ought to be used, as the common highway only, and not for hucksters, pedlars, and hagglers, to stand and sit to sell their wares in, and to pass from street to street hawking and offering their wares. In the seventh year of Charles I. the same authorities denounce the oyster-wives, herb-wives, tripe-wives, and the like, as "unruly people ;" and they charge them somewhat unjustly, as it must appear, with "framing to themselves a way whereby to live a more easy life than by labour."

"How busy is the man the world calls idle !"

The evil, as the citizens term it, seems to have increased; for in 1694 the common council threatened the pedlars and petty chapmen with the terrors of the laws against rogues and study beggars, the least penalty being whipping, whether for male or female. The reason for this terrible denunciation is very candidly put: the citizens and shopkeepers are greatly hindered and prejudiced in their trades by the hawkers and pedlars. Such denunciations as these had little share in putting down the itinerant traders. They continued to flourish, because society required them; and they vanished from our view when society required them no longer. In the middle of the last century they were fairly established as rivals to the shopkeepers. Dr. Johnson, than whom no man knew London better, thus wrote at that period: "The attention of a new-comer is generally first struck by the multiplicity of cries that stun him in the streets, and the variety of merchandise and manufactures which the shopkeepers expose on every hand." The shopkeepers have now ruined the itinerants—not by putting them down by fiery penalties, but by the competition amongst themselves to have every article at hand, for every man's use, which shall be better and cheaper than the wares of the itinerant.

A curious parallel might be carried out between the itinerant occupations which the progress of society has imperfectly suspended, and those which even the most advanced civilization is compelled to retain. For example, the water-carrier is gone. It is impossible that London can ever again see a man bent beneath the weight of a yoke and two enormous pails, vociferating "*New River Water.*" But the cry of "*Milk,*" or the rattle of the milk-pail, will never cease to be heard in our streets. There can be no reservoirs of milk, no pipes through which it flows into the houses. The more extensive the great capital becomes, the more active must be the individual exertion to carry about this article of food. The old cry was, "*Any milk here?*" and it was sometimes mingled with the sound of "*Fresh*

*cheese and cream ;*" and it then passed into "*Milk, maids, below ;*" and it was then shortened into "*Milk, below ;*" and was finally corrupted into "*Mio,*" which some wag interpreted into '*mi-eau—demi-eau*'—half-water. But it must still be cried, whatever be the cry. The supply of milk to the metropolis is perhaps one of the most beautiful combinations of industry we have. The days are long since past when Finsbury had its pleasant groves, and Clerkenwell was a village, and there were green pastures in Holborn, and St. Pancras boasted only a little church standing in meadows, and St. Martin's was literally in the fields. Slowly but surely does the baked clay stride over the clover and the buttercup ; and yet every family in London may be supplied with milk by eight o'clock every morning at their own doors. Where do the cows abide ? They are congregated in wondrous masses in the suburbs ; and though in spring-time they go out to pasture in the fields which lie under the Hampstead and Highgate hills, or in the vales of Dulwich and Sydenham, and there crop the tender blade,

" When proud pied April, dress'd in all his trim,  
Hath put a spirit of youth in everything,"

yet for the rest of the year the coarse grass is carted to their stalls, or they devour what the breweries and distilleries cannot extract from the grain-harvest. Long before "the unfolding star wakes up the shepherd" are the London cows milked ; and the great wholesale venders of the commodity bear it in carts to every part of the town, and distribute it to hundreds of itinerants, who are waiting like the water-carriers at the old conduits. But the wholesale venders have ceased to depend upon the suburban cows. The railways bring milk in enormous cans to every station. The suburb has extended, practically, to a circle of fifty miles instead of five. It is evident that a perishable commodity which every one requires at a given hour must be rapidly distributed. The distribution has lost its romance.

Misson, in his ‘Travels,’ published at the beginning of the last century, tells us of the May-games of “the pretty young country girls that serve the town with milk.” Alas! the May-games and pretty young country girls have both departed, and a milkwoman has become a very unpoetical personage. There are few indeed of milkwomen who remain. So it is with most of the occupations that associate London with the country. The cry of “*Watercresses*” used to be heard from some barefoot nymph of the brook, who at sunrise had dipped her feet into the bubbling runnel, to carry the green luxury to the citizens’ breakfast-tables. Watercresses are now grown like cabbages in gardens.

Of the street trades that are past and forgotten, the small-coal man was one of the most remarkable. He tells a tale of a city with few fires; for who could now imagine a man earning a living by bawling “*Small coals*” from door to door, without any supply but that in the sack which he carries on his shoulders? His cry was, however, a rival with “*Wood to cleave*.” In a metropolis full of haberdashers, large and small, what chance would an aged man now have with his flattering solicitation of “*Pretty pins, pretty women?*” He who carries a barrel on his back, with a measure and funnel at his side, bawling “*Fine writing-ink*,” is wanted neither by clerks nor authors. There is a grocer’s shop at every turn; and who therefore needs him who salutes us with “*Lily-white vinegar?*” The history of “cries” is a history of social changes. The *working trades*, as well as the venders of things that can be bought in every street, are now banished from our thoroughfares. “*Old chairs to mend*” still salutes us in some retired suburb; and we still see the knife-grinder’s wheel; but who vociferates “*Any work for John Cooper?*” or “*A brass pot or an iron pot to mend?*” The trade are gone to those who pay scot and lot.

There are some occupations of the streets, however, which remain essentially the same, though the form be somewhat varied. The sellers of food are of course amongst these. “Hot peasecods,” and hot sheep’s-feet, are not

popular delicacies, as in the time of Lydgate. “*Hot wardens*,” and “*Hot codlings*,” are not the “cries” which invite us to taste of stewed pears and baked apples. But we have still apples hissing over a charcoal fire; and potatoes steaming in a shining apparatus, with savoury salt-butter to put between the “fruit” when it is cut; and chestnuts roasted; and greasy sausages, redolent of onions and marjoram; and crisp brown flounders; and the mutton-pie-man, with his “toss for a penny.” Rice-milk, furmety, barley-broth, and saloop, are no longer in request. The greatest improvement of London in our own day has been the establishment of coffee-shops, where the artisan may take his breakfast with comfort and even with luxury; where a good breakfast may be had for three pence; where no intoxicating liquors are sold; and where the newspapers and the best periodical works may be regularly found.

If we lament over the general decay of the itinerant traders—their uncertain gains, their privations from constant exposure, their want of home comforts, their temptation to drive their children into the streets to make more sales—we lament over what is an inevitable consequence of the general progress of society. Can we correct these evils by saying that the profits of the itinerant traders ought to be raised? Their low condition is a necessary consequence of their carrying on a system of industry which is at variance with the general system of civilization. They may have their uses in districts with a scattered population, because they bring articles of consumption to the door of the consumer. But in densely populated districts they must inevitably be superseded by the shopkeepers. They carry on their industry by a series of individual efforts, which are interfered with by numerous chances and accidents. We are told that the class is extending yearly. But it cannot extend profitably. In many cases it assumes only another form of mendicity. It is a precarious occupation. It can count upon no regular returns. Its gains, such as they are, are like all other

uncertain gains—the impulse to occasional profligacy in connection with habitual misery. The costermongers, according to Mr. Mayhew, are drunkards and gamblers,—living without religion or the family ties. Their children are wholly uneducated. These are brought up to assist very early in obtaining their precarious living; and they cleave to a wandering in place of a settled life. Dissociated thus from all regular industry, they become the outcasts of the people; and go on swelling the number of those who, in France, are called the “dangerous classes.” All classes are dangerous in whom there is none of that self-respect which goes along with domestic comfort—with sobriety, with cleanliness, with a taste for some pursuit that has a tincture of the intellectual. How is such a class to be dealt with? The adult are almost past hope; the young, taken early enough, may be trained into something better. But the very last thing that society has to do is to encourage, by any forced and unnatural process, the accession of numbers to the body, always deriving new competitors from the unfortunate and the idle who have fallen out of regular occupation. Those who learn the necessity of being provident cease to be costermongers. With some, indeed, the profitable sale of an article in the streets may be the first step in an accumulation which will lead to the more profitable sale of an article at a stall, and thence, onward, to the possession of a shop. There have been such instances; and we knew of a remarkable one in a boy who went to a tea-dealer, and said if he could be trusted with one pound of tea he could make a living. He was trusted. In time he wanted no credit, and was a regular and valuable customer to his first patron. He passed out of the itinerant life into the settled; and ultimately became a flourishing shopkeeper.

In striking contrast to the various forms of unskilled labour and irregular trading which we have noticed, may be mentioned an industry which in London has a very perfect organization. In Clerkenwell and the neighbour-

ing parish of St. Luke's, there are many hundred watchmakers. These are not the artisans whom we see as we pass along the streets of the metropolis, and of the provincial towns, sitting in front of the shop-window diligently repairing or putting together the works of a watch, by the light of day or of a brilliant lamp, each with a magnifying glass pressed under his eyebrow. Nor are they the workers in metal who manufacture the movements—that is, the wheels—of a watch, for these chiefly dwell in Lancashire. The London watchmakers, thus closely packed in a district which is small compared with the whole area of the metropolis, are those who put the movements together, and supply all the delicate parts of the mechanism, such as the spring and the escapement. They provide also the case and the dial-plate. The degree of the skilled labour employed in these several branches necessarily varies, according to the quality of the instrument to be produced, from the ordinary metal watch to the most luxurious repeater. With some exceptions, the artisans do not work in large factories. They are subdivided according to their respective qualities, amongst small establishments, where a master has several men receiving wages for performing one particular branch of work; or the artisan himself, in his own home, may be an escapement-maker, a spring-maker, a fusee-maker, a maker of hands, an enameller, an engine-turner, a jewelled pivot-hole maker. All this beautiful subdivision of employments has been found necessary for the perfection and the cheapness of watches. The capitalist, who is essentially the watch manufacturer, organizes all these departments of industry. The skilled workman, in all the various subdivisions of the manufacture, are well paid, and take their due rank amongst the great and increasing body of intelligent mechanics.

Between the organized labour required to produce a London-made watch and the individual labour which produces a rickety Pembroke table, with bad materials and imperfect tools, at the lowest rate of profit to the

isolated workman—the difference really consists in the application or non-application of capital. The theorist then steps in at this stage of the argument, and says that the garret-labourer ought to be provided with capital. His theory resolves itself into what is called Communism; and it seeks to be maintained by exhibiting the aggregate evils of competition. The theorist does not deny that competition has produced an immense development of wealth; but he affirms that the result of the struggle has been to fill the hands that are already too full, and to take away from the hands that were already nearly empty. He maintains that the labouring classes have been more and more declining with every increase of the general riches; and that, at every step in which industry advances, the proportion of the wretched to the great mass of the population as certainly increases. We shall not attempt to reply to these declamations by any counter declamation. We point to the great body of facts contained in this volume; and upon them rests our unqualified assertion that the doctrines of communism are wholly untrue, and are opposed to the whole body of evidence that enables us to judge of the average condition of the people, past and present.

To remedy the evils which it alleges to exist, communism proposes associations working upon a common capital, and dividing the produce of all the labour of the community. To make a whole country labour in this way, by a confiscation of all the capital of the country, presents, necessarily, great difficulties; and therefore there must be smaller communities in particular localities. But these communities must produce everything within themselves, or they must deal with other communities. There would be competition in these communistic dealings between one community and another. Even if the whole world were to become communistic, there would be competition between one nation and another nation.

The main objection to the theory of communism (the objections to its application are obvious enough) is that, in

proposing to have a common fund for all labour, it wars against the natural principle of individuality, and destroys the efficiency of production, by confounding the distinctions between the various degrees of skill and industry. If it give higher rewards to skilled labour than to unskilled, it does exactly what is done in the present state of society. If the unskilled and idle were the larger number under a system of communism, they would soon degrade the skilled and the industrious to their own level. If they were the less powerful number, the skilled and the industrious would soon bring back the law of competition, and drive the unskilled and idle to the minimum point of subsistence.

But communism, to meet such difficulties, sets up a system of expedients. It invokes the aid of the State as a regulating power; and, having maintained that the State is bound to find employ for every one willing to labour, however inefficiently, and to supply the necessary funds for all labour, it makes the State the great healer of differences, even as Mr. Sergeant Thorpe held that the State could provide "a salve for every sore." Let us take one example of the mode in which communism proposes to discharge its functions.

There is a little treatise, in Italian, by Count Pecchio, on the Application of the General Laws of Production to Literary and Scientific Publications. It considers that literary labour is governed by the same laws as any other labour; that the capital of a man of letters consists in his stores of acquired knowledge; that, as there is no equality in literary talent—as there is a great range of talent between the most skilled and the least skilled literary labourer—so the rewards of literary industry are proportionally unequal: that the wages of literary labour depend upon the usual conditions of demand and supply: that, under a system of competition in an open market, the literary labourer is more sure of his reward, however large may be the number of labourers, than in the old days of patronage for the few; that State encouragement is not necessary to the establish-

ment of a high and enduring literature ; that when literary industry is free—when it is neither fostered by bounties, nor cramped and annihilated by prohibitions—when there is neither patronage nor censorship—it is in the most favourable condition for its prosperous development. These principles, applied to literary production, are in many respects applicable to all production.

Every one has heard of the “Organization of Labour,” which some philosophers of a neighbouring country were attempting to transfer from the theories of the closet to the experiments of the workshop, in 1848. It is not our object, as we have said, to discuss whether a vast system of national co-operation for universal production be a wise thing or a practical thing. Let us state only a small part of that system, as exhibited in the ‘Organisation du Travail,’ by Monsieur Louis Blanc, the second part of which is devoted to the question of literary property.

All the beneficial results contemplated by the organizers of a universal social industry are to be obtained for literary industry, according to this system, by the foundation of a Social Publishing Establishment, which is thus described : It would be a literary manufacture belonging to the State without being subject to the State. This institution would govern itself, and divide amongst its members the profits obtained by the common labour. According to its original laws, which would be laid down by the State, the Social Publishing Establishment would not have to purchase any author’s right in his works. The price of books would be determined by the State, with a view to the utmost possible cheapness ; all the expenses of the impression would be at the charge of the Social Establishment. A committee of enlightened men, chosen and remunerated by the Social Establishment, would receive the works. The writers whose works the Social Establishment would publish would acquire, in exchange for their rights as authors, which they would wholly resign, the right of exclusively competing for national recompenses. There would be, in the annual

national budget, a fund provided for such recompense, for authors in every sphere of thought. Every time the first work of an author was deemed worthy of a national recompense, a premium would also be given to the Social Establishment, that it might be indemnified for the possible loss which it had sustained in giving its support to youthful talent. Every year the representatives of the people would name, for every branch of intellectual exertion, a citizen who would examine the works issuing from the social presses. He would have a whole year to examine them thoroughly; to read all the criticisms upon them; to study the influence which they had produced upon society; to interrogate public opinion through its organs, and not judge by the blind multitude of buyers; and finally, to prepare a report. The national rewards would then be distributed in the most solemn manner.

We thus state briefly but fairly the plan which is to put an end to that literary competition which it is proclaimed "commences in dishonour and ends in misery;" which is to destroy bad books and encourage good; which, it is affirmed, is "no longer to make the publication of good books depend upon the speculators, who have rarely any other intelligence than a commercial aptitude, but upon competent men, whom it interests in the success of every useful and commendable work." We truly believe that this would be a practical plan—provided two conditions were secured, which at present seem to be left out of the account. They are simply these—that there should be unlimited funds at hand for the purpose of rewarding authors, and unlimited wisdom and honesty in their administration.

---

## QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XXVI.

1. How has unskilled labour been affected by the increasing demand for skilled labour?
2. Give an example of the evils resulting from the great competition of unskilled labour.
3. How would one branch of unskilled labour be affected by a rate of wages disproportioned to the rate of other branches?
4. What regulates the price paid for labour by the wholesale manufacturer?
5. What other kind of labour produces the miseries which so frequently result from unskilled labour? How was this remarkable in the state of Ireland previous to the famine?
6. Give an instance of the effect of uncapitalised labour in manufactures.
7. Where, and with what success, is chair-making carried on upon the factory principle?
8. What is the present result of the competition between retailers with small capital and retailers with large capital?
9. How has the itinerant trader been ruined by the shopkeeper?
10. Mention some itinerant trades which have passed away, and some which still remain.
11. What are the causes which place itinerant traders amongst the "dangerous classes?"
12. Give some account of a branch of industry which in London has a very perfect organization.
13. What is the real difference between the organized labour which produces a London watch and the isolated labour which produces a Pembroke table by a "garret-master?"
14. What is the theory contained in the principle of Communism? What is the main objection to this theory?
15. Show how competition must exist if the whole world were to become communistic.
16. Give some account of M. Louis Blanc's system for the "organization of labour" as applied to literary industry.
17. What two conditions would be necessary for the practical working of this scheme?

**CHAPTER XXVII.**

Law of partnership—Limited liability—Co-operative principle—The Rochdale Pioneers—Moral benefits of co-operative societies—Material benefits of co-operation—Duties of the employed—Duties of employers.

AT the date of the last edition of ‘Capital and Labour’ there was a great controversy going forward upon the expediency of having the Law of Partnership altered, so as to admit of a limited liability, as in the United States and other countries. Against the opinions of many experienced persons, but chiefly those of very large capital, that principle is now working amongst us in every direction. It has no doubt been carried to excess, and has produced some evils and many absurdities. But there can be no doubt of the vast good to society which has been produced by overcoming the former determination of the Legislature to impose unlimited liability on all members of non-incor-porated companies. The defects of the former law were clearly pointed out by Mr. Rickards, professor of Political Economy in the University of Oxford. “This law,” he said, in his evidence before Commissioners, “differs from those which govern the relation of partnership in France, Italy, Germany, Holland, Belgium, and the United States. It is also at variance with the recognised principles of political economy. By fettering the employment of capital it tends to produce a periodical *congestion* of it, which is only relieved from time to time by the waste of vast sums in bubble speculations. As the law restricts the use of capital, it consequently limits the demand for labour. It increases the gulf, in this country too wide, between capitalist and labourer, by withholding those facilities

which a wise policy would multiply, for uniting and identifying the two classes of producers. The association of small capitals is precisely that object which, with a view to raise the condition of the working classes, to extend the market for labour, and thereby increase the national wealth, a prudent government should favour and encourage."

Upon the general question of an alteration of the Law of Partnership, Mr. G. W. Norman, a director of the Bank of England, thus expressed his opinion : "The extreme difficulty, if not the legal impossibility in England, of giving clerks or workmen a salary proportioned to the profits of an employer, without making them partners in the widest sense, I consider a vast practical evil. It seems to me that the system thus checked is of so highly beneficial a nature, that it merits every encouragement that the law can give it. It would at once enable an earnest wish on the part of a portion of the operative class to be met in a way most satisfactory to their feelings." An Act to amend the Law of Partnership was passed in 1865. The following clause shows how important is the change to the great body of mechanics and others who could never formerly hope to have their condition advanced in proportion to the prosperity of any concern to which they had devoted their best exertions : "No contract for the remuneration of a servant or agent of any person engaged in any trade or undertaking shall of itself render such servant or agent responsible as a partner therein, nor give him the rights of a partner."

It is by judicious changes such as these, that what has been called the antagonism between capital and labour is rapidly yielding to the conviction, on the part of the great body of labourers, that the road is fairly opened to them to become capitalists. There is one highway now trodden by many eager and hopeful toilers, which, a comparatively short time ago, was a narrow and unfrequented by-path.

Co-operation is not a new thing in England. Two centuries and a half ago, Shakspeare became a considerable land proprietor at Stratford, out of his share of the profits

of a co-operative enterprise; and, in the same profession of a player, Allen acquired a sufficient fortune to found Dulwich College. In those companies of players of the Elizabethan era there were shareholders with varying interests—some having a capital in the building and properties of a theatre, combined with their other capital of histrionic skill. The joint proprietors lived in great harmony together, and treated each other with affection as friends and fellows.

The co-operation which many earnest thinkers hold to be desirable to establish in England is precisely this sort of united industry. They have no desire to attempt the introduction of a fallacious equality, such as communism proposes; but they desire to combine men in common labours, according to their respective degrees and qualifications. He who brought to the undertaking capital only should receive a share of profits proportioned to its value and hazard—the wear and tear of implements—the deterioration of stock. He who brought great administrative skill, and took the higher office of trust and responsibility, should also receive a share in proportion to the rarity of these qualities; and so of those who were skilful and trustworthy in a lesser degree. The great body of the workers would receive their due shares under a scale founded upon experience. But capitalist, inventor, manager, and labourers,—all would have some ultimate interest in reference to profits.

Co-operation, especially co-operation for consumption, has asserted, during the last twenty years, its practical advantages in a way that has entirely taken it out of the former range of impracticable theories. The success of the Rochdale Pioneers' Society has probably been the main cause of giving such an impulse to these associations that their number throughout the country now exceeds five hundred. We take the liberty of borrowing from Professor Fawcett's 'Economic Position of the British Labourer,' not only the most recent, but the most concise and yet interesting account of the great co-operative Rochdale Society :—

"In 1844, twenty-eight poor Rochdale weavers appeared to be impressed with the conviction that their lot might be improved if they adopted some united action. They had seen that generation after generation of working men had supported various schemes which had ended either in disaster or in disappointment. Communism had failed as a practical measure, and those who had joined a popular agitation for a new political charter had received no adequate compensation for the self-sacrifice which they were often compelled to endure. These poor Rochdale weavers were shrewd and intelligent. After they had calmly reflected upon the various modes which had been propounded for improving the lot of the labourer, they calmly arrived at the conclusion that they had little chance of immediately increasing their income, although it was easily within their power to economise their expenditure. They knew that they purchased the commodities which they consumed at a price which greatly exceeded the wholesale price; moreover, adulteration was not unfrequently resorted to; and thus it often happened that the articles which the labourer purchased were not only dear, but also impure. These weavers therefore determined to create a sufficient sum by weekly contributions to enable them to purchase, on the same terms as the wholesale trader, a few simple commodities, such as tea and sugar. In the first instance, each of these twenty-eight weavers agreed to give twopence a week to the common fund. They were so poor that it was not without a struggle that this weekly contribution was raised to threepence a week. At length the amount thus collected somewhat exceeded 20*l.*, and trading operations were commenced. A room was taken as a store in Toad Lane; this store was in the first instance opened only for a few hours during one day in the week. At the outset some preliminary difficulties were encountered; thus a few of the subscribers who lived at a distance from the store found some inconvenience in dealing there, and consequently the amount of business

transacted was not quite so great as anticipated. But the sound and admirable principles which regulated the management of the concern soon caused every obstacle to be surmounted, and this humble society in a few years advanced with sure and steady steps to the most extraordinary prosperity.

"At the close of 1845, the Society numbered eighty members, its capital was 182*l.*, and its weekly sales averaged 30*l.* In 1847-48, the cotton trade was greatly depressed, and severe distress prevailed amongst the operatives. It might have been reasonably anticipated that necessity would have compelled the working men to withdraw their capital from this Pioneers' Society, but these forebodings were not realized; the difficulties were weathered so triumphantly, that from that time the permanent prosperity of the Society might be regarded as insured. As distress pressed upon the operatives, they were more and more desirous to economize their reduced wages, and they consequently enrolled themselves as members of the Society. The result was that at the end of 1848 the members had increased to 148 in number, the capital was 397*l.*, and the weekly receipts were 180*l.* The progress from this time was rapid. In 1850 the number of members amounted to 600, they possessed a capital of 2299*l.*, and their weekly returns were 338*l.* Each year seemed to bring continually increasing prosperity. The Society has grown into a vast commercial concern; for at the present time (the close of 1864) its capital is 62,000*l.*, its annual business amounts to 174,900*l.*, the annual profits are 22,700*l.*, and its members number 4747.

"The humble room where the enterprise was first started has now grown into a large warehouse, to which are affiliated sixteen branch stores. At first grocery alone was sold; now the working man purchases from this store every article of food and clothing which he may require. They not only have butchers' shops, but they make shoes and almost every article of wearing apparel. They have also

erected steam flour-mills, and they are thus enabled to be their own millers and bakers. But the benefits which this Society has conferred upon the working man are not confined to mere pecuniary gains, for he has had brought within his reach social and educational advantages which he could never have obtained without such an union of effort. Two and a half per cent. of the aggregate profits realised are set aside to support a reading room and a library. The library consists of 4000 volumes, and has been admirably selected; not only the members of the Society, but also their wives and families, are freely admitted to the reading-room, which is well-warmed and furnished with a bountiful supply of newspapers, reviews, and maps."

Such a society as that of the Rochdale Pioneers could not have been established unless a great change had been working in the general habits of the artisan class. It has been truly said by one of the most intelligent of that class, Mr. John Plummer, "Co-operation is a doctrine of self-sacrifice." One of the most satisfactory results of educational improvement has been, that the great body of the people have learnt better how to take care of their own happiness. With diffused wealth accompanying diffused knowledge, the grosser vices of the middle class have vanished. The riot and indelicacy that characterised the so-called enjoyments of too many of the traders, at the beginning of the century, have given place to the tranquil pleasures of home, with some taste for art and literature. The reform of manners began somewhat earlier with the higher class. In the same way, whatever coarseness and profligacy may still exist in the lower, drunkenness, and blasphemy, and indecency are not the habits of the artisan class, but are the exceptions. It has been found out by those who undertake to teach their inferiors in station, that to wean them from coarse gratifications they must have rational amusements. Hence "Penny Readings" and cheap concerts. Those who belong to what is called "the wage class" are

becoming capitalists. They have learnt the value of the *aide-toi* principle.

The annual report for 1865, by Mr. Tidd Pratt, the Registrar of Friendly Societies, gives an interesting statement of the condition of co-operative societies up to the end of 1864:—

Number of members on 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	129,761
Number of members admitted during the year ending 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	25,828
Number of members withdrawn during the year ending 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	11,870
Total amount received for or credited to shares, from commencement of society to 31st Decem- ber, 1864 . . . . .	£ 778,689
Amount received on shares during the year 1864 .	278,950
Amount withdrawn by members during the year 1864 . . . . .	156,346
Amount of share capital on 31st December, 1864 .	685,072
Amount of loan capital on 31st December, 1864 .	89,423
Amount received on loans during the year 1864 .	34,294
Loans repaid during the year 1864 . . . . .	23,401
Amount paid for interest during the year ending 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	30,397
Cash paid for goods bought in the year ending 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	2,578,933
Cash received for goods sold in the year ending 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	2,742,957
Profits realised in the year ending 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	225,569
Total amount of expenses during the year ending 31st December, 1864, including wages, rents, rates, taxes, and all incidentals of work and repairs, &c. . . . .	184,684
Amount of cash in hands of bankers, treasurers, and officers on 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	105,779
Total amount or value of assets and property of society on 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	891,775
Total amount of trade liabilities of society on 31st December, 1864 . . . . .	268,277

Whatever may be the prejudices of some of the propertied classes to a system of limited liability as directed to pur-

poses of production, even they can scarcely make an objection to the same principle directed to purposes of consumption and expenditure. We can see no end to the benefits of association for consumption ; of association for making the comforts of life accessible to the largest number by economical expenditure ; of association for placing the conveniences and even refinements of the rich within the reach of the poor ; of association for cultivating the understanding and elevating the taste ; of association for raising the whole moral and intellectual condition of all the people of the land. Take the single case of dwellings. It is in the power of a very large number of the receivers of wages to co-operate for the purpose of obtaining better houses than those in which they now dwell. Something is done by "Building Societies," but little in comparison with the exigencies of the population. The same may be said of the operations of various admirable societies in the metropolis. We believe that nothing effectually can be done till the receivers of wages set about this great duty themselves. A year or two of close economy, founded upon habitual self-restraint, would soon work a mighty change in the aspect of our great towns.

However earnest and thinking men may differ as to the degree in which improvement, moral, intellectual, and physical, has reached the masses of our population, it is a prayer in which all good men unite, that the condition of the working classes may be more and more improved,—that their outward circumstances may be made better and better. But those who labour the steadiest, and the most zealously, in the endeavour to realise this hope, feel that the day of this amelioration is far removed by perpetual contests between the employed and the employers, which impede production and diminish the funds for the support of labour. They know that every improvement in the arts of life improves also the condition of the humblest working man in the land ; and they also know that every successive improvement has a tendency to lessen the inequality in the

distribution of wealth. But if the condition of the working men of these kingdoms is to be permanently improved—if they are to obtain a full share of the blessings which science and industry confer upon mankind—they must win those blessings by their own moral elevation. They cannot snatch them by violence; they cannot accomplish them suddenly by clamour; they cannot overthrow a thousand opposing circumstances to a great and rapid rise of wages; they must win them by peaceful and steady exertion. When the working men of this country shall feel, as the larger portion of them already feel, that Knowledge is Power, they will next set about to see how that power shall be exercised. The first tyranny which that power must hold in check is the tyranny of evil habits—those habits which, looking only to the present hour, at one time plunge some into all the thoughtless extravagance which belongs to a state of high wages—at another, throw them prostrate before their employers, in all the misery and degradation which accompany a state of low wages, without a provision for that state. It is for them, and for them alone, to equalize the two conditions. The fluctuations of trade, in a highly commercial country like this, must be incessant. It is for the workmen themselves to put a “*governor*” on the commercial machine, as far as they are concerned; in a season of prosperity to accumulate the power of capital—in a season of adversity to use effectively, because temperately, that power which they have won for themselves.

But there are other duties to be performed in another direction—the duties of employers. That duty does not consist in making servants partners, if the employers have no inclination thereto. It does not consist in attempting any private benevolence, by raising the rate of wages paid by their own firms beyond the average rate, which attempt would be ruinous to both classes interested. But it does consist in exercising the means within their power to benefit the condition of all in their employ, by cultivating

every sympathy with them that may be the real expression of a community of interests. Such sympathy is manifested when large firms devote a considerable portion of their profits to the education of the young persons employed in their factories; when they cultivate the intelligent pleasures of their adult work-people; when, in a word, they make the factory system a beautiful instrument for raising the whole body of their labourers into a real equality, in all the moral and intellectual conditions of our nature with themselves, the captains of industry. When these duties are attended to, there may be common misfortunes; demand may fall off; the machinery, whether of steam or of mind, may be imperfectly in action; the usual supply of material may be suddenly stopped; the season of adversity may bring discomfort. But it will not bring animosity. There may be deep anxieties on one part, and severe privations on the other, but there will not be hatreds and jealousies,—the cold neglect, and the grim despair.

“We know the arduous strife, the eternal laws,  
To which the triumph of all good is given :  
High sacrifice, and labour without pause,  
Even to the death.”

---

#### QUESTIONS UPON CHAPTER XXVII.

1. What were the defects of the former law of partnership?
2. How is the relative position of capital and labour affected by the law of limited liability?
3. What is the nature of the co-operation which many earnest thinkers desire to establish in England?
4. Give an example of the benefits of co-operation for consumption.
5. What are the moral benefits of the Rochdale Pioneers' Society?
6. What testimony do such societies give as to the general habits of the artisan class?
7. What principally delays improvement in the condition of the working classes, and by what means must they themselves bring about that improvement?
8. By what means can employers best improve the condition of those in their employ?

## BELL AND DALDY'S CATALOGUE.

---

### Bell and Daldy's Pocket Volumes.

A Series of Select Works of Favourite Authors, adapted for general reading, moderate in price, compact and elegant in form, and executed in a style fitting them to be permanently preserved. Imperial 32mo.

#### *Now Ready.*

Burns's Poems. 2s. 6d.

— Songs. 2s. 6d.

Coleridge's Poems. 2s. 6d.

Sea Songs and Ballads. By Charles Dibdin and others. 2s. 6d.

The Midshipman.—Autobiographical Sketches of his own early Career, by Capt. Basil Hall, R.N. F.R.S. From his "Fragments of Voyages and Travels." 3s.

The Lieutenant and Commander. Ditto, ditto. 3s.

George Herbert's Poems. 2s.

— Remains. 1s. 6d.

— Works. 3s.

Washington Irving's Sketch Book. 3s.

Lamb's Tales from Shakspeare. 2s. 6d.

Longfellow's Poems. 2s. 6d.

Milton's Paradise Lost. 2s. 6d.

— Regained, and other Poems. 2s. 6d.

The Robin Hood Ballads. 2s. 6d.

Southey's Life of Nelson. 2s. 6d.

Walton's Complete Angler. *Portraits and Illustrations.* 2s. 6d.

— Lives of Donne, Wotton, Hooker, &c. 3s.

White's Natural History of Selborne. 3s.

In cloth, top edge gilt, at 6d. per volume extra; in half morocco, Roxburgh style, at 1s. extra; in antique or best plain morocco, at 4s. 6d. extra.

#### *Preparing.*

Goldsmith's Poems.

— Vicar of Wakefield.

Gray's Poems.

Henry Vaughan's Poems.

And others.

**Bell and Daldy's  
Elzevir Series of Standard Authors.**

Small fcap. 8vo.

Messrs. BELL and DALDY, having been favoured with many requests that their Pocket Volumes should be issued in a larger size, so as to be more suitable for Presents and School Prizes, have determined upon printing New Editions in accordance with these suggestions.

They will be issued under the general title of "ELZEVIR SERIES," to distinguish them from their other collections. This general title has been adopted to indicate the spirit in which they will be prepared; that is to say, with the greatest possible accuracy as regards text, and the highest degree of beauty that can be attained in the workmanship.

They will be printed at the Chiswick Press, on fine paper, with rich margins, and will be issued in tasteful binding at prices varying from 3s. 6d. to 6s.

Most of the Volumes already published in the "POCKET VOLUMES" will be issued in this Series, and others of a similar character will be added. Some will contain a highly-finished Portrait, or other Illustration.

*Ready.*

**Longfellow's Poems.** 4s. 6d.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Song of Hiawatha, and the Golden Legends.

(*Shortly.*)

**Longfellow's Spanish Student, and Later Poems.** (*Shortly.*)

**Burns's Poems.** 4s. 6d. } *This edition contains all the copyright*

\_\_\_\_\_  
Songs. 4s. 6d. } *pieces published in the Aldine Edition.*

**Coleridge's Poems.** 4s. 6d.

**Shakspeare's Plays.** Carefully edited by Thomas Keightley. In Six Volumes. 5s. each.

**Walton's Angler.** 4s. 6d.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Lives of Donne, Hooker, Herbert, &c. 5s.

**Irving's Sketch Book.** 5s.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Tales of a Traveller. 5s.

**Milton's Paradise Lost.** 5s.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Regained. 5s.

**The Library of English Worthies.**

A Series of reprints of the best Authors, carefully edited and collated with the Early Copies, and handsomely printed by Whittingham in Octavo.

**Bishop Butler's Analogy of Religion; with Analytical Index, by the Rev. Edward Steere, LL.D. 12s. Antique calf, 1l. 1s.**

"The present edition has been furnished with an Index of the Texts of Scripture quoted, and an Index of Words and Things considerably fuller than any hitherto published."—*Editor's Preface.*

**Gower's Confessio Amantis, with Life by Dr. Pauli, and a Glossary. 3 vols. 2l. 2s. Antique calf, 3l. 6s. Only a limited number of Copies printed.**

*This important work is so scarce that it can seldom be met with even in large libraries. It is wanting in nearly every collection of English Poetry.*

**Herbert's Poems and Remains; with S. T. Coleridge's Notes, and Life by Izaak Walton. Revised, with additional Notes, by Mr. J. Yeowell. 2 vols. 1l. 1s. Morocco, antique calf or morocco, 2l. 2s.**

**Spenser's Complete Works; with Life, Notes, and Glossary, by John Payne Collier, Esq. F.S.A. 5 vols. 3l. 15s. Antique calf, 6l. 6s.**

**Bishop Jeremy Taylor's Rule and Exercises of Holy Living and Dying. 2 vols. 1l. 1s. Morocco, antique calf or morocco, 2l. 2s.**

*Uniform with the above.*

**The Physical Theory of Another Life. By Isaac Taylor, Esq., Author of "Logic in Theology," "Ultimate Civilization," &c. New Edition. 10s. 6d. Antique calf, 21s.**

---

## **The Aldine Edition of the British Poets.**

**The Publishers have been induced, by the scarcity and increasing value of this admired Series of the Poets, to prepare a New Edition, very carefully corrected, and improved by such additions as recent literary research has placed within their reach. Fcp. 8vo.**

**Akenside's Poetical Works, with Memoir by the Rev. A. Dyce, and additional Letters, carefully revised. 5s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 10s. 6d.**

**Collins's Poems, with Memoir and Notes by W. Moy Thomas, Esq. 3s. 6d. Morocco, or antique morocco, 8s. 6d.**

**Cowper's Poetical Works, including his Translations. Edited, with Memoir, by John Bruce, Esq., F.S.A. 3 vols.**

*[In the Press.]*

- Dryden's Poetical Works, with Memoir by the Rev. R. Hooper, F.S.A. Carefully revised. 5 vols. 5s. each.
- Gray's Poetical Works, with Notes and Memoir by the Rev. John Mitford. 5s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 10s. 6d.
- Shakespeare's Poems, with Memoir by the Rev. A. Dyce. 5s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 10s. 6d.
- Thomson's Poems, with Memoir by Sir H. Nicolas, annotated by Peter Cunningham, Esq. F.S.A., and additional Poems, carefully revised. 2 vols. 10s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 1l. 1s.
- Thomson's Seasons, and Castle of Indolence, with Memoir. 6s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 11s. 6d.
- Kirke White's Poems, with Memoir by Sir H. Nicolas, and additional Notes. Carefully revised. 5s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 10s. 6d.
- Young's Poems, with Memoir by the Rev. John Mitford, and additional Poems. 2 vols. 10s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 1l. 1s.

*Books uniform with the Aldine Edition of the Poets.*

- The Thoughts of the Emperor M. Aurelius Antoninus. Translated by George Long. 6s.
- Bacon's Advancement of Learning. Edited, with short Notes, by the Rev. G. W. Kitchin, M.A., Christ Church, Oxford. 6s. Antique calf, 11s. 6d.
- Bacon's Essays; or, Counsels Civil and Moral, with the Wisdom of the Ancients. With References and Notes by S. W. Singer, F.S.A. 5s. Morocco, or antique calf, 10s. 6d.
- Bacon's Novum Organum. Newly Translated, with short Notes, by the Rev. Andrew Johnson, M.A. 6s. Antique calf, 11s. 6d.
- Bishop Butler's Analogy of Religion; with Analytical Introduction and copious Index, by the Rev. Dr. Steere. 6s. Antique calf, 11s. 6d.
- Bishop Butler's Complete Works; with Memoir by the Rev. Dr. Steere. 2 vols. 12s.
- Bishop Butler's Sermons and Remains; with Memoir by the Rev. E. Steere, LL.D. 6s.

\* \* This volume contains some additional remains, which are copyright, and render it the most complete edition extant.

The Works of Gray, edited by the Rev. John Mitford. With his Correspondence with Mr. Chute and others, Journal kept at Rome, Criticism on the Sculptures, &c. *New Edition.* 5 vols. 1l. 5s.

The Temple, and other Poems. By George Herbert, with Coleridge's Notes. *New Edition.* 5s. Morocco, antique calf or morocco, 10s. 6d.

Locke on the Conduct of the Human Understanding; edited by Bolton Corney, Esq. M.R.S.L. 3s. 6d. Antique calf, 8s. 6d.

"I cannot think any parent or instructor justified in neglecting to put this little treatise into the hands of a boy about the time when the reasoning faculties become developed."—*Hallam*.

The Schole Master. By Roger Ascham. Edited, with copious Notes, and a Glossary, by the Rev. J. E. B. Mayor, M.A. 6s.

Logic in Theology, and other Essays. By Isaac Taylor, Esq. 6s.

Ultimate Civilization. By Isaac Taylor, Esq. 6s.

Bishop Jeremy Taylor's Rule and Exercises of Holy Living and Holy Dying. 2 vols. 2s. 6d. each. Morocco, antique calf or morocco, 7s. 6d. each. In one volume, 5s. Morocco, antique calf or morocco, 10s. 6d.

Vaughan's Sacred Poems and Pious Ejaculations, with Memoir by the Rev. H. F. Lyte. *New Edition.* 5s. Antique calf or morocco, 10s. 6d. *Large Paper*, 7s. 6d. Antique calf, 14s. Antique morocco, 15s.

"Preserving all the piety of George Herbert, they have less of his quaint and fantastic turns, with a much larger infusion of poetic feeling and expression."—*Lyte*.

LONDON:

PRINTED BY W. CLOWES AND SONS, STAMFORD STREET  
AND CHARING CROSS.

*BOHN'S VARIOUS LIBRARIES.*

**Longfellow's Poetical Works**, complete, including *The Wayside Inn. Twenty-four page Engravings, by Birket Foster and others, and a new Portrait.*  
—; or, without the illustrations. 3s. ed.

— **Prose Works, complete. Sixteen page Engravings by Birket Foster and others.**

**Marryat's Masterman Ready; or, The Wreck of the Pacific.** 93 *Engravings.*

— **Mission; or, Scenes in Africa.** (Written for Young People.) *Illustrated by Gilbert and Dalsiel.*

— **Pirate and Three Cutters.** New Edition, with a Memoir of the Author. *With 20 Steel Engravings, from Drawings by Clarkson Stansfield, R.A.*

— **Privateer's-Man One Hundred Years Ago. Eight Engravings on Steel, after Stothard.**

— **Settlers in Canada.** New Edition. *Ten fine Engravings by Gilbert and Dalsiel.*

**Maxwell's Victories of Wellington and the British Armies.** *Illustrations on Steel.*

**Michael Angelo and Raphael, their Lives and Works.** By DUPPA and QUATREMER DE QUINCY. *With 13 highly-finished Engravings on Steel.*

**Miller's History of the Anglo-Saxons.** Written in a popular style, on the basis of Sharon Turner. *Portrait of Alfred, Map of Saxon Britain, and 12 elaborate Engravings on Steel.*

**Milton's Poetical Works.** With a Memoir by JAMES MONTGOMERY, TODD'S Verbal Index to all the Poems, and Explanatory Notes. *With 120 Engravings by Thompson and others, from Drawings by W. Harvey.* 2 vols.

Vol. 1. *Paradise Lost, complete, with Memoir, Notes, and Index.*

Vol. 2. *Paradise Regained, and other Poems, with Verbal Index to all the Poems.*

**Mudie's British Birds.** Revised by W. C. L. MARTIN. *Fifty-two Figures and 7 Plates of Eggs.* In 2 vols.

—; or, with the plates coloured. 7s. 6d. per vol.

**Naval and Military Heroes of Great Britain;** or, Calendar of Victory. Being a Record of British Valour and Conquest by Sea and Land, on every day in the year, from the time of William the Conqueror to the Battle of Inkermann. By Major JOHN, R.M., and Lieutenant P. H. NICOLAS, R.M. *Twenty-four Portraits.* 6s.

**Nicolini's History of the Jesuits:** their Origin, Progress, Doctrines, and Designs. *Fine Portraits of Loyola, Lainès, Xavier, Borgia, Acquaviva, Fère la Chaise, and Pope Ganganielli.*

**Norway and its Scenery.** Comprising Price's Journal, with large Additions, and a Road-Book. Edited by T. FORESTER. *Twenty-two Illustrations.*

**Paris and its Environs, including Versailles, St. Cloud, and Excursions into the Champagne Districts.** An illustrated Handbook for Travellers. Edited by T. FORESTER. *Twenty-eight beautiful Engravings.*

**Petrarch's Sonnets, and other Poems.** Translated into English Verse. By various hands. With a Life of the Poet, by THOMAS CAMPBELL. *With 16 Engravings.*

**Pickering's History of the Races of Man, with an Analytical Synopsis of the Natural History of Man.** By Dr. HALL. *Illustrated by numerous Portraits.*

—; or, with the plates coloured. 7s. 6d.

\* \* An excellent Edition of a work originally published at 3d. 3s. by the American Government.

**Pictorial Handbook of London.** Comprising its Antiquities, Architecture, Arts, Manufactures, Trade, Institutions, Exhibitions, Suburbs, &c. *Two hundred and five Engravings, and a large Map, by Lowry.*

This volume contains above 900 pages, and is undoubtedly the cheapest five-shilling volume ever produced.

**Pictorial Handbook of Modern Geography, on a Popular Plan.** 3s. 6d. *Illustrated by 150 Engravings and 51 Maps.* 6s.

—; or, with the maps coloured, 7s. 6d.

Two large Editions of this volume have been sold. The present New Edition is corrected and improved; and, besides introducing the recent Censuses of England and other countries, records the changes which have taken place in Italy and America.

**Pope's Poetical Works.** Edited by ROBERT CARRUTHERS. *Numerous Engravings.* 2 vols.

**Homer's Iliad.** With Introduction and Notes by J. S. WATSON, M.A. *Illustrated by the entire Series of Flaxman's Designs, beautifully engraved by Moses (in the full 8vo. size).*

**Homer's Odyssey, Hymns, &c.** by other translators, including Chapman, and Introduction and Notes by J. S. WATSON, M.A. *Flaxman's Designs, beautifully engraved by Moses.*

## A CATALOGUE OF

**Pope's Life.** Including many of his Letters. By ROBERT CARRUTHERS. New Edition, revised and enlarged. Illustrations.

The preceding 5 vols. make a complete and elegant edition of Pope's Poetical Works and Translations for 25s.

**Pottery and Porcelain, and other Objects of Vertu** (a Guide to the Knowledge of). To which is added an Engraved List of all the known Marks and Monograms. By HENRY G. BOHN. Numerous Engravings.

—; or, coloured. 10s. 6d.

**Prout's (Father) Reliques.** New Edition, revised and largely augmented. Twenty-one spirited Etchings by MacIise. Two volumes in one. 7s. 6d.

**Recreations in Shooting.** By "CRAVEN." 62 Engravings on Wood, after Harvey, and 9 Engravings on Steel, chiefly after A. Cooper, R.A.

**Redding's History and Descriptions of Wines, Ancient and Modern.** Twenty beautiful Woodcuts.

**Robinson Crusoe.** With Illustrations by STOOTHARD and HARVEY. Twelve beautiful Engravings on Steel, and 74 on Wood.

—; or, without the Steel illustrations, 3s. 6d.

The prettiest Edition extant.

**Rome in the Nineteenth Century.** New Edition. Revised by the Author. Illustrated by 34 fine Steel Engravings. 2 vols.

**Southey's Life of Nelson.** With Additional Notes. Illustrated with 64 Engravings.

**Starling's (Miss) Noble Deeds of Women;** or, Examples of Female Courage, Fortitude, and Virtue. Fourteen beautiful Illustrations.

**Stuart and Revett's Antiquities of Athens, and other Monuments of Greece.** Illustrated in 71 Steel Plates, and numerous Woodcuts.

**Tales of the Genii; or, the Delightful Lessons of Horam.** Numerous Woodcuts, and 8 Steel Engravings, after Stothard.

**Tasso's Jerusalem Delivered.** Translated into English Spenserian Verse, with a Life of the Author. By J. H. WIFFEN. Eight Engravings on Steel, and 24 on Wood, by Thurston.

**Walker's Manly Exercises.** Containing Skating, Riding, Driving, Hunting, Shooting, Sailing, Rowing, Swimming, &c. New Edition, revised by "CRAVEN." Forty-four Steel Plates, and numerous Woodcuts.

**Walton's Complete Angler.** Edited by EDWARD JESSE, Esq. To which is added an Account of Fishing Stations, &c., by H. G. BOHN. Upwards of 203 Engravings.

—; or, with 26 additional page Illustrations on Steel. 7s. 6d.

**Wellington, Life of.** By AN OLD SOLDIER, from the materials of Maxwell. Eighteen Engravings.

**White's Natural History of Selborne.** With Notes by Sir WILLIAM JARDINE and EDWARD JESSE, Esq. Illustrated by 40 highly-finished Engravings.

—; or, with the plates coloured. 7s. 6d.

**Young, The, Lady's Book.** A Manual of Elegant Recreations, Arts, Sciences, and Accomplishments; including Geology, Mineralogy, Conchology, Botany, Entomology, Ornithology, Costume, Embroidery, the Escritoire, Archery, Riding, Music (instrumental and vocal), Dancing, Exercises, Painting, Photography, &c. &c. Edited by distinguished Professors. Twelve Hundred Woodcut Illustrations, and several fine Engravings on Steel. 7s. 6d.

—; or, cloth gilt, gilt edges, 9s.

### XI.

#### Bohn's Classical Library.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY, AT 5s. PER VOLUME  
(EXCEPTING THOSE MARKED OTHERWISE).

**Eschylus.** Literally Translated into English Prose by an Oxonian. 3s. 6d.

—, Appendix to. Containing the New Readings given in Hermann's posthumous Edition of Eschylus. By GEORGE BURGESS, M.A. 3s. 6d.

10

**Ammianus Marcellinus.** History of Rome from Constantius to Valens. Translated by C. D. YONGE, B.A. Double volume, 7s. 6d.

\* This is a very circumstantial and amusing history. Gibbon expresses himself largely indebted to it.

**Apuleius, the Golden Ass ; Death of Socrates ; Florida ; and Discourse on Magic.** To which is added a Metrical Version of Cupid and Psyche ; and Mrs. Tighe's Psyche. *Frontispiece.*

**Aristophanes' Comedies.** Literally Translated, with Notes and Extracts from Frere's and other Metrical Versions, by W. J. HICKIE. 2 vols.

Vol. 1. Acharnians, Knights, Clouds, Wasps, Peace, and Birds.

Vol. 2. Lysistrata, Thesmophoriazusæ, Frogs, Ecclesiazusæ, and Plutus.

**Aristotle's Ethics.** Literally Translated by Archdeacon BROWNE, late Classical Professor of King's College.

**Politics and Economics.** Translated by E. WALFORD, M.A.

**Metaphysics.** Literally Translated, with Notes, Analysis, Examination Questions, and Index, by the Rev. JOHN H. M'MAHON, M.A., and Gold Medallist in Metaphysics, T.C.D.

**History of Animals.** In Ten Books. Translated, with Notes and Index, by RICHARD CRESSWELL, M.A.

**Organon ; or, Logical Treatises.** With Notes, &c. By O. F. OWEN, M.A. 2 vols., 3s. 6d. each.

**Rhetoric and Poetics.** Literally Translated, with Examination Questions and Notes, by an Oxonian.

**Athenaeus.** The Deipnosophists ; or, the Banquet of the Learned. Translated by C. D. YONGE, B.A. 3 vols.

**Cæsar.** Complete, with the Alexandrian, African, and Spanish Wars. Literally Translated, with Notes.

**Catullus, Tibullus, and the Vigil of Venus.** A Literal Prose Translation. To which are added Metrical Versions by LAMB, GRAINGER, and others. *Frontispiece.*

**Cicero's Orations.** Literally Translated by C. D. YONGE, B.A. In 4 vols.

Vol. 1. Contains the Orations against Verres, &c. *Portrait.*

Vol. 2. Catiline, Archias, Agrarian Law, Rabirius, Murena, Sylla, &c.

Vol. 3. Orations for his House, Plancius, Sextius, Cætlius, Milo, Ligarius, &c.

Vol. 4. Miscellaneous Orations, and Rhetorical Works ; with General Index to the four volumes.

**on Oratory and Orators.** By

J. S. WATSON, M.A.

**on the Nature of the Gods,**

Divination, Fate, Laws, a Republic, &c. Translated by C. D. YONGE, B.A., and F. BARHAM.

**Cicero's Academics, De Finibus, and Tusculan Questions.** By C. D. YONGE, B.A. With Sketch of the Greek Philosophy.

**Offices, Old Age, Friendship, Scipio's Dream, Paradoxes, &c.** Literally Translated, by R. EDMONDS. 3s. 6d.

**Demosthenes' Orations.** Translated, with Notes, by C. RANN KENNEDY. In 5 volumes.

Vol. 1. The Olynthiac, Philippic, and other Public Orations. 3s. 6d.

Vol. 2. On the Crown and on the Embassy.

Vol. 3. Against Leptines, Midias, Androtion, and Aristocrates.

Vol. 4. Private and other Orations.

Vol. 5. Miscellaneous Orations.

**Dictionary of Latin Quotations.** Including Proverbs, Maxims, Mottoes, Law Terms, and Phrases ; and a Collection of above 500 Greek Quotations. With all the quantities marked, & English Translations.

**, with Index Verborum.** 6s. Index Verborum only. 1s.

**Diogenes Laertius.** Lives and Opinions of the Ancient Philosophers. Translated, with Notes, by C. D. YONGE.

**Euripides.** Literally Translated. 2 vols.

Vol. 1. Hecuba, Orestes, Medea, Hippolytus, Alcestis, Bacchæ, Heracildæ, Iphigenia in Aulide, and Iphigenia in Tauris.

Vol. 2. Hercules Furens, Troades, Ion, Andromache, Suppliants, Helen, Electra, Cyclops, Rhesus.

**Greek Anthology.** Literally Translated. With Metrical Versions by various Authors.

**Greek Romances of Heliodorus, Longus, and Achilles Tatius.**

**Herodotus.** A New and Literal Translation, by HENRY CARY, M.A., of Worcester College, Oxford.

**Hesiod, Callimachus, and Theognis.** Literally Translated, with Notes, by J. BANKS, M.A.

**Homer's Iliad.** Literally Translated, by an OXONIAN.

**Odyssey, Hymns, &c.** Literally Translated, by an OXONIAN.

**Horace.** Literally Translated, by SMART. Carefully revised by an OXONIAN. 3s. 6d.

**Justin, Cornelius Nepos, and Eutropius.** Literally Translated, with Notes and Index, by J. S. WATSON, M.A.

**Juvenal, Persius, Sulpicia, and Lucilius.** By L. EVANS, M.A., with the Metrical Version by Gifford. *Frontispiece.*

## A CATALOGUE OF

**Livy.** A new and Literal Translation. By Dr. SPILLAN and others. In 4 vols. Vol. 1. Contains Books 1—8. Vol. 2. Books 9—26. Vol. 3. Books 27—36.

Vol. 4. Books 37 to the end; and Index.

**Lucan's Pharsalia.** Translated, with Notes, by H. T. RILEY.

**Lucretius.** Literally Translated, with Notes, by the Rev. J. S. WATSON, M.A. And the Metrical Version by J. M. GOOD.

**Martial's Epigrams, complete.** Literally Translated. Each accompanied by one or more Verse Translations selected from the Works of English Poets, and other sources. With a copious Index. Double volume (660 pages). 7s. 6d.

**Ovid's Works, complete.** Literally Translated. 3 vols.

Vol. 1. Fasti, Tristia, Epistles, &c.

Vol. 2. Metamorphoses.

Vol. 3. Heroines. Art of Love, &c.

**Pindar.** Literally Translated, by DAWSON W. TURNER, and the Metrical Version by ABRAHAM MOORE.

**Plato's Works.** Translated by the Rev. H. CARY and others. In 6 vols.

Vol. 1. The Apology of Socrates, Crito, Phædo, Gorgias, Protagoras, Phædrus, Theætetus, Euthyphron, Lysis.

Vol. 2. The Republic, Timæus & Critias.

Vol. 3. Meno, Euthydemus, The Sophist, Statesman, Cratylus, Parmenides, and the Banquet.

Vol. 4. Philebus, Charmides, Laches, The Two Alcibiades, and Ten other Dialogues.

Vol. 5. The Laws.

Vol. 6. The Doubtful Works. With General Index.

**Plautus's Comedies.** Literally Translated, with Notes, by H. T. RILEY, B.A. In 2 vols.

**Pliny's Natural History.** Translated, with Copious Notes, by the late JOHN BOSTOCK, M.D., F.R.S., and H. T. RILEY, B.A. In 6 vols.

**Propertius, Petronius, and Johannes Secundus.** Literally Translated, and accompanied by Poetical Versions, from various sources.

**Quintilian's Institutes of Oratory.** Literally Translated, with Notes, &c., by J. S. WATSON, M.A. In 2 vols.

**Sallust, Florus, and Velleius Paterculus.** With Copious Notes, Biographical Notices, and Index, by J. S. WATSON.

**Sophocles.** The Oxford Translation revised.

**Standard Library Atlas of Classical Geography.** Twenty-two large coloured Maps according to the latest authorities. With a complete Index (accentuated), giving the latitude and longitude of every place named in the Maps. Imp. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**Strabo's Geography.** Translated, with Copious Notes, by W. FALCONER, M.A., and H. C. HAMILTON, Esq. With Index, giving the Ancient and Modern Names. In 3 vols.

**Suetonius' Lives of the Twelve Caesars, and other Works.** Thomson's Translation, revised, with Notes, by T. FORESTER.

**Tacitus.** Literally Translated, with Notes. In 2 vols.

Vol. 1. The Annals.

Vol. 2. The History, Germania, Agricola, &c. With Index.

**Terence and Phædrus.** By H. T. RILEY, B.A.

**Theocritus, Bion, Moschus, and Tyrtæus.** By J. BANKS, M.A. With the Metrical Versions of Chapman.

**Thucydides.** Literally Translated by Rev. H. DALE. In 2 vols. 3s. 6d. each.

**Virgil.** Literally Translated by DAVIDSON. New Edition, carefully revised. 3s. 6d.

**Xenophon's Works.** In 3 Vols.

Vol. 1. The Anabasis and Memorabilia. Translated, with Notes, by J. S. WATSON, M.A. And a Geographical Commentary, by W. F. AINSWORTH, F.S.A., F.R.G.S., &c.

Vol. 2. Cyropædia and Hellenics. By J. S. WATSON, M.A., and the Rev. H. DALE.

Vol. 3. The Minor Works. By J. S. WATSON, M.A.

### XII.

## Bohn's Scientific Library.

UNIFORM WITH THE STANDARD LIBRARY, AT 5s. PER VOLUME

(EXCEPTING THOSE MARKED OTHERWISE).

**Agassiz and Gould's Comparative Physiology.** Enlarged by DR WRIGHT. Upwards of 400 Engravings.

**Bacon's Novum Organum and Advancement of Learning.** Complete, with Notes, by J. DRYVER, M.A.

**Blair's Chronological Tables, Revised and Enlarged.** Comprehending the Chronology and History of the World, from

the earliest times. By J. WILLOUGHBY ROSSE. Double Volume. 10s.; or, half-bound, 10s. 6d.

**Index of Dates.** Comprehending the principal Facts in the Chronology and History of the World, from the earliest to the present time, alphabetically arranged. By J. W. ROSSE. Double volume, 10s.; or, half-bound, 10s. 6d.

## BOHN'S VARIOUS LIBRARIES.

**Bolley's Manual of Technical Analysis.** A Guide for the Testing of Natural and Artificial Substances. By B. H. PAUL. 100 Wood Engravings.

### BRIDGEWATER TREATISES.—

— **Bell on the Hand.** Its Mechanism and Vital Endowments as evincing Design. *Seventh Edition Revised.*

— **Roget's Animal and Vegetable Physiology** considered with reference to Natural Theology. *Many Engravings.* [In preparation.]

— **Buckland's Geology and Mineralogy** considered with reference to Natural Theology. *Numerous Illustrations.* 2 vols. [In the press.]

— **Kirby on the History, Habits, and Instincts of Animals.** Edited, with Notes, by T. RYMER JONES. *Numerous Engravings, many of which are additional.* In 2 vols.

— **Kidd on the Adaptation of External Nature to the Physical Condition of Man.** 3s. 6d.

— **Whewell's Astronomy and General Physics,** considered with reference to Natural Theology. 3s. 6d.

— **Chalmers on the Adaptation of External Nature to the Moral and Intellectual Constitution of Man.** 5s.

— **Prout's Treatise on Chemistry, Meteorology, and Digestion.** Edited by Dr. J. W. GRIFFITH.

**Carpenter's (Dr. W. B.) Zoology.** A Systematic View of the Structure, Habits, Instincts, and Uses, of the principal Families of the Animal Kingdom, and of the chief forms of Fossil Remains. New edition, revised to the present time, under arrangement with the Author, by W. S. DALLAS, F.L.S. *Illustrated with many hundred fine Wood Engravings.* In 2 vols. 6s. each.

— **Mechanical Philosophy, Astronomy, and Horology.** A Popular Exposition. 183 Illustrations.

— **Vegetable Physiology and Systematic Botany.** A complete Introduction to the Knowledge of Plants. New Edition, revised, under arrangement with the Author, by E. LANKESTER, M.D., &c. *Several hundred Illustrations on Wood.* 6s.

— **Animal Physiology.** New Edition, thoroughly revised, and in part re-written by the Author. *Upwards of 300 capital Illustrations.* 6s.

**Chess Congress of 1862.** A Collection of the Games played, and a Selection of the Problems sent in for the Competition. Edited by J. LÖWENTHAL, Manager. With an Account of the Proceedings, and a Memoir of the British Chess Association, by J. W. MEDLEY, Hon. Sec. 7s.

**Chevreul on Colour.** Containing the

Principles of Harmony and Contrast of Colours, and their application to the Arts. Translated from the French by CHARLES MARTEL. Only complete Edition. *Several Plates.*

—; or, with an additional series of 16 Plates in Colours. 7s. 6d.

— **Clark's (Hugh) Introduction to Heraldry.** With nearly 1000 Illustrations. 18th Edition, Revised and enlarged by J. R. PLANCHÉ, Esq., Rouge Croix. Or, with all the Illustrations coloured, 15s.

[Just published.]

**Comte's Philosophy of the Sciences.** Edited by G. H. LEWES.

**Ennemoser's History of Magic.** Translated by WILLIAM HOWITT. With an Appendix of the most remarkable and best authenticated Stories of Apparitions, Dreams, Table-Turning, and Spirit-Rapping, &c. In 2 vols.

**Handbook of Domestic Medicine.** Popularly arranged. By Dr. HENRY DAVIES. 700 pages. With complete Index.

**Handbook of Games.** By various Amateurs and Professors. Comprising treatises on all the principal Games of chance, skill, and manual dexterity. In all, above 40 games (the Whist, Draughts, and Billiards being especially comprehensive). Edited by H. G. BOHN. *Illustrated by numerous Diagrams.*

**Hogg's (Jabez) Elements of Experimental and Natural Philosophy.** Containing Mechanics, Pneumatics, Hydrostatics, Hydraulics, Acoustics, Optics, Caloric, Electricity, Voltaism, and Magnetism. New Edition, enlarged. *Upwards of 400 Woodcuts.*

**Hind's Introduction to Astronomy.** With a Vocabulary, containing an Explanation of all the Terms in present use. New Edition, enlarged. *Numerous Engravings.* 3s. 6d.

**Humboldt's Cosmos; or Sketch of a Physical Description of the Universe.** Translated by E. C. ORR and W. S. DALLAS, F.L.S. *Fine Portrait.* In five vols. 3s. 6d. each; excepting Vol. V., 5s. \* In this edition the notes are placed beneath the text. Humboldt's analytical Summaries and the passages hitherto suppressed are included, and new and comprehensive Indices are added.

— **Travels in America.** In 3 vols.

— **Views of Nature; or, Contemplations of the Sublime Phenomena of Creation.** Translated by E. C. ORR and H. G. BOHN. A fac-simile letter from the Author to the Publisher; translations of the quotations, and a complete Index.

**Humphrey's Coin Collector's Manual.** A popular Introduction to the Study of Coins. *Highly finished Engravings.* In 2 vols.

## A CATALOGUE OF

Hunt's (Robert) *Poetry of Science*; or, *Studies of the Physical Phenomena of Nature*. By Professor HUNT. New Edition, enlarged.

**Index of Dates.** See Blair's Tables.

Joyce's *Scientific Dialogues*. Completed to the present state of Knowledge, by Dr. GRIFFITH. Numerous Woodcuts.

**Knight's (Chas.) Knowledge is Power.** A Popular Manual of Political Economy. [Immediately.

**Lectures on Painting.** By the Royal Academicians. With Introductory Essay, and Notes by R. WORANUM, Esq. *Portraits*.

**Mantell's (Dr.) Geological Excursions** through the Isle of Wight and Dorsetshire. New Edition, by T. RUPERT JONES, Esq. Numerous beautifully executed Woodcuts, and a Geological Map.

**Medals of Creation**; or, First Lessons in Geology and the Study of Organic Remains; including Geological Excursions. New Edition, revised. Coloured Plates, and several hundred beautiful Woodcuts. In 2 vols., 7s. 6d. each.

**Petrifications and their Teachings.** An Illustrated Handbook to the Organic Remains in the British Museum. Numerous Engravings. 6s.

**Wonders of Geology**; or, a Familiar Exposition of Geological Phenomena. New Edition, augmented by T. RUPERT JONES, F.G.S. Coloured Geological Map of England, Plates, and nearly 200 beautiful Woodcuts. In 2 vols., 7s. 6d. each.

**Morphy's Games of Chess.** Being the Matches and best Games played by the American Champion, with Explanatory and Analytical Notes, by J. LÖWENTHAL. *Portrait* and Memoir.

It contains by far the largest collection of games played by Mr. Morphy extant in any form, and has received his endorsement and co-operation.

Oersted's *Soul in Nature, &c.* *Portrait*.

Rennie's *Insect Architecture*. New Edition. Enlarged by the Rev. J. G. WOOD, M.A. Shortly.

Richardson's *Geology*, including Mineralogy and Paleontology. Revised and enlarged, by Dr. T. WRIGHT. Upwards of 400 Illustrations.

Schouw's *Earth, Plants, and Man*; and Kobell's Sketches from the Mineral Kingdom. Translated by A. HENFREY, F.R.S. *Coloured Map of the Geography of Plants*.

Smith's (Pye) *Geology and Scripture*; or, The Relation between the Holy Scriptures and Geological Science.

Stanley's *Classified Synopsis of the Principal Painters of the Dutch and Flemish Schools*.

Staunton's *Chess-player's Handbook*. Numerous Diagrams.

— **Chess Praxis.** A Supplement to the *Chess-player's Handbook*. Containing all the most important modern improvements in the Openings, illustrated by actual Games; a revised Code of Chess Laws; and a Selection of Mr. Morphy's Games in England and France. 6s.

— **Chess-player's Companion.** Comprising a new Treatise on Odds, Collection of Match Games, and a Selection of Original Problems.

— **Chess Tournament of 1851.** Numerous Illustrations.

Stockhardt's *Principles of Chemistry*, exemplified in series of simple experiments. Upwards of 210 Illustrations.

— **Agricultural Chemistry**; or, Chemical Field Lectures. Addressed to Farmers. Translated, with Notes, by Professor HENFREY, F.R.S. To which is added, a Paper on Liquid Manure, by J. J. MICHET, Esq.

Ure's (Dr. A.) *Cotton Manufacture* of Great Britain, systematically investigated; with an introductory view of its comparative state in Foreign Countries. New Edition, revised and completed to the present time, by P. L. SIMMONDS. One hundred and fifty Illustrations. In 2 vols.

— **Philosophy of Manufactures**; or, An Exposition of the Factory System of Great Britain. New Ed., continued to the present time, by P. L. SIMMONDS. 7s. 6d.

### XIII.

### Bohn's Cheap Series.

Berber, The; or, *The Mountaineer of the Atlas*. A Tale of Morocco, by W. S. MAYO, M.D. 1s. 6d.

Boswell's *Life of Johnson*. Including his Tour to the Hebrides, Tour in Wales, &c. Edited, with large additions and Notes, by the Right Hon. JOHN WILSON CROKER. The second and most complete Copyright Edition, re-arranged and revised according to the suggestions of Lord Macaulay, by the late JOHN WRIGHT, Esq., with further additions by

Mr. CROKER. Upwards of 40 fine Engravings on Steel. In 4 vols. cloth, 4s. each, or 8 parts 2s. each.

\* \* The public has now for 16s. what was formerly published at 2l.

Boswell's *Johnsoniana*. A Collection of Miscellaneous Anecdotes and Sayings of Dr. Samuel Johnson, gathered from nearly a hundred publications. *A Sequel to the preceding, of which it forms vol. 5, or parts 9 and 10.* Engravings on Steel. In 1 vol. cloth, 4s., or in 2 parts, 2s. each.

B

This book should be returned to  
the Library on or before the last date  
stamped below.

A fine of five cents a day is incurred  
by retaining it beyond the specified  
time.

Please return promptly.

400 7251  
JAN 272 H  
Consec

- pe and the Kaffir  
Five Years' Residence  
of Advice to Emigrants  
rpenter's (Dr. W.  
Temperance and To  
he Effects of Alcohol  
in fine paper, cloth, 2s.  
sq.-Mars; or a Ce  
Louis XIII. An Hist  
Count Alfred de Vign  
W. HAZLITT. 2s.  
bdin's Sea Songs  
(ion). Illustrations  
1s. 6d.
- erson's Orations a  
— Representati  
plete. 1s.
- anklin's (Benjam  
obiography. From a  
cript. By JARED SPA  
rvinus's Introduct  
ory of the 19th Ce  
erman. 1s.
- izot's Life of Mon  
— Monk's Conta  
lies on the English I  
Portrait of Clarendon  
wthorne's (Natha  
Tales. 1s.
- the Same.
- Snow Image
- Scarlet Lette
- House with t  
Romance. 1s.
- ring's (Washingt  
named. Portrait.  
Successors
- ed.
- Life of Gold  
Sketch Book.
- Tales of a Tra
- Tour on the I
- Conquests of Granada and  
Spain. 2 vols. 1s. 6d. each.
- Life of Columbus. 2 vols.  
1s. 6d. each.
- Companions of Columbus.  
1s. 6d.
- Adventures of Captain Bon  
neville. 1s. 6d.
- Knickerbocker's New York.  
1s. 6d.
- Tales of the Alhambra. 1s. 6d.
- Conquest of Florida. 1s. 6d.

- Taylor's El Dorado; or, Pictures of  
the Gold Region. 2 vols. 1s. each.
- Willis's (N. Parker) People I have  
Met; or, Pictures of Society, and People  
of Mark. 1s. 6d.
- Convalescent; or, Rambles  
and Adventures. 1s. 6d.
- Life Here and There; or,  
Sketches of Society and Adventure. 1s. 6d.
- Hurry-graphs; or, Sketches  
of Scenery, Celebrities, and Society. 1s. 6d.
- Pencilings by the Way.  
Four fine plates. 2s. 6d.

